



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 06

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501: The Tribal Axis Plan

Zhang Tie was not bragging. He indeed didn't need the huge bear tribe and Eschyle City to spend even a cent in building the tribal axis.

The greatest ability that Zhang Tie mastered in Donder's grocery store in the past years was that he understood customers' mentality and could sell the items in the counter to the customers in their favorite ways.

Zhang Tie thought he was a small figure as he grew up with small figures. Therefore, he knew how did small figures think.

The core of the Tribal Axis Plan that really aroused the attention of small figures was not the railway, the tribe or its prospect but Ice and Snow Wilderness.

In the eyes of many big figures and rich men, Ice and Snow Wilderness was nothing attractive at all. They ignored such a place. Even if they felt Ice and Snow Wilderness was attractive, it must be because of some chances here that could bring money or reputation to them, instead of Ice and Snow Wilderness itself. Additionally, this place was barren and full of savage Slav aboriginals. There was only one city across Ice and Snow Wilderness. When it was winter, people could even be frozen to death. Nothing else was attractive!

From the perspective of small figures, Zhang Tie saw the potential value of Ice and Snow Wilderness. When the 3rd holy war between humans and demons broke out, if demon troops were irresistible, Ice and Snow Wilderness would be the last place across Blackson Humans Corridor that demons could break in.

Before occupying all the continental countries, demons would not be able to start a expedition towards Ice and Snow Wilderness by sea. This implied the great value of Ice and Snow Wilderness. This would be the last fortress of Blackson Humans Corridor. The

sea, the Ice-Capped Continent and the wuthering demon north wind belt formed the best natural chasms for demons.

When demons arrived, big figures and rich men would escape to foreign countries and Western Continent, even Eastern Continent by airship. How about small figures? Do they have the condition, the ability and the capital to escape away like this? Impossible! This is the real portrayal before each catastrophe. All the big figures would escape away, leaving small figures to taste the bitterness of the catastrophe with tears and blood.

Zhang Tie planned to provide an opportunity for those small figures of Blackson Humans Corridor using the Tribal Axis Plan within their ability.

The Tribal Axis Plan was a financing plan towards these big figures. Zhang Tie decided to organize a railway corporation for the Tribal Axis Plan. The railway corporation would deliver 3 million shares, subscription amount of each share was 40 gold coins. These shares would be sold to the commoners in those countries across Blackson Humans Corridor, instead of in Ice and Snow Wilderness. With each share of the Tribal Axis, one could not only enjoy the bonus of the railway corporation but also have a right to take another two people to Ice and Snow Wilderness; additionally, he or she would be entitled to settle down and live within 50 km of the new railway.

This was not only the shares of the railway corporation, the certificate of the shareholders and bonus but also the right to migrate and settle down in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"If I was still that small figure in Blackhot City, if my parents don't have Huaiyuan Palace on their back, if there's a place that has been confirmed as the last shelter of humans in the coming holy war between humans and demons and it only takes you 40 gold coins to enter it, what would my parents do?"

Zhang Tie was sure that his parents would buy one ticket no

matter how difficult it was so as to keep him and his elder brother alive till the end.

"Not only me, if there's truly such a ticket, even average families like that of Bagdad, Leit, Hista would try their best to buy one ticket for their kids. As Barley's home is rich, if they have to escape, his dad might transfer him to a safer place; however, if his dad could prepare one more safer place for Barley only at cost of 40 gold coins, I'm afraid that he would immediately spend 40 gold coins without a frown."

The bonus of the shares could eliminate the last concern of most average families. Even if they could not find a job in a few days and had no income, they could also have one more guarantee through the bonus of the railway corporation. Additionally, railway, a product of industrial civilization, would also reduce their strangeness and fright about Ice and Snow Wilderness.

This was the biggest desire of most of commoners before the arrival of the catastrophe—to have a shelter and survive there.

The shares could rightly meet the demand of commoners. Zhang Tie considered the very details of commoners' mentality.

40 gold coins could be afforded by most of the medium-class families across Blackson Humans Corridor. It was neither too much nor too little. It could allow commoners to find the last shelter on Blackson Humans Corridor.

When the 3rd holy war arrived, compared to the miserable loss caused by demons, the poor living standard in Ice and Snow Wilderness was acceptable. After experiencing the cruelty of war and witnessing the catastrophe in Heavens Cold City and Eschyle City, Zhang Tie was sure that as long as there was no flame of war, it would be the paradise.

Among 900 million population across Blackson Humans Corridor, even if 1/100 of them wanted to hide in Ice and Snow Wilderness, it indicated 9 million people. Therefore, it would be no

problem to deliver the shares of the Tribal Axis Plan.

Of course, Eschyle City and the huge bear tribe had no ability and channels to deliver such shares; however, Golden Roc Bank had.

...

In the evening, Zhang Tie was interpreting his Tribal Axis Plan to O'Laura calmly while lying in a hot spring pool in a hidden yard of this manor...

This yard was surrounded by rockeries and white pines. It looked very serene. Well-designed crystal fluorite lamps were inlaid below the roadside parterre of pebbles, revealing a pale green light and making this place dimmer and serener.

The hot spring was steaming. The temperature was proper. However, it was snowing heavily. Zhang Tie was lying on a smooth stone, only exposing his head and shoulders. O'Laura in a gauze skirt was making physical rehabilitation massage carefully for Zhang Tie on his back.

After using a vial of senior recovery medicament, plus Zhang Tie's abnormal preliminary recovery ability, Zhang Tie had almost recovered only after 4-5 days. Many smaller wounds of the total 100-odd wounds had disappeared exposing light red skin on some bigger wounds.

O'Laura kept massaging the muscle tissues around his wounds and the joints tenderly with her slim fingers. As a LV 10 strong fighter, O'Laura, who was very familiar with human body, knew how to help a fighter recover his wounds as soon as possible better than commoners.

At this moment, in this scene, when enjoying the delicate and tender massage of a cold and brilliant beauty, Zhang Tie felt being in the paradise.

After hearing that Zhang Tie prepared to entrust Golden Roc Bank to deliver 3 million shares for him, O'Laura behind him

stopped her movement. 3 million multiplied by 40 was an astronomical figure, which had been out of O'Laura's comprehension.

"How much it that?"

"120 million gold coins in total. After deducting a part of the distribution fee, we can still raise about 110 million gold coins!" Zhang Tie signed satisfactorily. Until then did he truly understand what Donder meant by a person's ability to accomplish the most important integration and utilization of resources at a certain position. This Tribal Axis Plan was an integration of resources by hand. In this plan, he integrated Eschyle City, Spencer clan, the huge bear tribe, his current status, even the changing situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness and continents.

If someone told him that he could fulfill an investment plan of above 100 million gold coins a year ago or even months ago, Zhang Tie would never believe in it. That amount of money could kill him for one hundred times. However, this time, Zhang Tie had a strong sense of pride. He didn't disguise as a scum father using the functions of Castle of Black Iron and Heller's help or made a success with the help of others, clan or reliance; instead, he integrated and utilized his resources by hand using his own intelligence and ability.

He knew what commoners and small figures thought about. Therefore, he provided a satisfactory commodity and service for commoners and small figures. This was a multi-win plan which would benefit himself, the huge bear tribe, Eschyle City, even numerous commoners.

For Zhang Tie, this plan was more important than jumping into the ruins of Iron Bear Castle from airship. He felt that he could realize a sublimation in this plan.

"Can you further implement this plan if the other bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness also entrust Golden Roc Bank to deliver

such a stock?" O'Laura asked.

"When entrusting Golden Roc Bank to do this, I will let them fulfill exclusive commercial codes. That is to say, nobody else is allowed to do the same thing in my mode in Ice and Snow Wilderness without my consent!"

"Whom will the railway belong to in the future, those shareholders?" O'Laura asked as she was unfamiliar with this sophisticated commercial mode.

"Nominally, it belongs to them. They occupy most of shares of railway corporation; however, they only have the right to share the bonus; they have no right to make operating decisions. Therefore, the railway corporation is actually my individual property being independent of the huge bear tribe and Eschyle City!"

"How come that be? You've not paid for that!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he turned over his body, "As the initiator, I am investing in my invisible assets such as my intelligence, ability, human relationship and my integrated resources. I don't have to pay for it. Therefore, I could have the majority ownership of the railway corporation by having a great proportion of shares as an initiator. It would be no problem as long as I'm not too excessive!"

"This is not snatching a white wolf with empty hands. This is a normal commercial game rule in the outside!" Zhang Tie stared at the plump "white rabbits" behind the gauze and the looming area below her lower abdomen as he felt thirsty and silently swallowed his saliva, "Come on, I've not recovered here, please massage here in another way!"

"How!" O'Laura asked seriously as she didn't recognize Zhang Tie's trick.

"Like this..." Zhang Tie pulled over O'Laura immediately.

"Argh..." O'Laura exclaimed...

...

Two hours later, six Spencer women appeared beside the foggy hot spring pool in semi-transparent gauze. Seeing the rhythm ripples, the six women's faces turned red. Finally, they walked in the pool slowly and elegantly while gritting their teeth...

Chapter 502: Leaving the Ice and Snow Wilderness

On November 18th, all the representatives of the bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness converged in Eschyle City. They signed the Eschyle Declaration, which symbolized the arrival of a truly peaceful time among Slavic tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness before the third holy war between humans and demons.

Since the signing day of the Eschyle Declaration, all wars between Slavic tribes were forbidden in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Any military action involving over 50 participants targeted at another tribe, ranging from the minimal rat tribes to the most powerful bear tribes, would be severely punished by bear tribes who had already signed the Eschyle Declaration.

Although the Eschyle Declaration could not eradicate all the conflicts in Ice and Snow Wilderness, it could minimize the destruction caused by those conflicts. As long as bear tribes could remain in peace, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness would not break out in huge turmoil. Additionally, the conflicts between small tribes could remain on a very small scale.

As he knew what other bear tribes within Ice and Snow Wilderness were concerned about, Zhang Tie posed such a plan which could make everyone feel reassured. Thus, all the representatives of fire bear tribe, wild bear tribe, mountain bear tribe, sea bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe, who'd come from afar, signed the Eschyle Declaration at once. For those tribes, as long as the huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe didn't plan on unifying the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and all the Slavs, they would let out a sigh of relief.

The representatives and teams of the six tribes entered Eschyle City on November 17th. In a sense, this was like an alliance. Before

arriving at Eschyle City, the representatives of these tribes had already heard of Zhang Tie's speech at the Eschyle Victim Cemetery and became much more reassured. After signing this Eschyle Declaration, they became completely relaxed.

Although some fierce and powerful people tended to always treat a signed agreement as a piece of waste paper, now that Zhang Tie had made such a public declaration and had signed such a solemn agreement, unless he wanted to have his credit declined across Ice and Snow Wilderness, the effect of this declaration would be guaranteed.

Additionally, after witnessing the casualties of over one million people, even the most radical Calvinism Slavs in huge bear tribe had become quiet. They knew that the biggest crisis facing the Slavs was not the tensions between tribes, but the coming holy war between humans and demons.

After the signing of the Eschyle Declaration and the news about the first railway in Ice and Snow Wilderness was exposed to the public, Zhang Tie's reputation rose to a new height. Although many people were still doubtful that Zhang Tie had the capital and ability to build such a railway in Ice and Snow Wilderness, now that the news was exposed they were always inspired.

Everyone was clear about the benefits of a railway, especially a railway that could penetrate through the north and south of the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness. If this railway was truly built, it would have an immeasurable effect in aiding Eschyle City's foreign trade.

In a few days, although the distress caused by the catastrophe in Eschyle City had not completely faded away, the Eschyle Declaration and the Tribal Axis Plan posed by Zhang Tie had brought a wisp of brilliance and hope back to the people. Therefore, the whole city gradually recovered its vitality.

The destroyed buildings and blocks started to be cleaned.

The schools, especially polytechnics in Eschyle City, started to expand and recruit students who were not talented as fighters.

Police stations and city guards of Eschyle City started to recruit freshmen and carry out rehabilitation training.

Although the capital for the railway was not in place yet, at Zhang Tie's order the engineers for early prospecting and preliminary designing of the railway, recruited by the foreign agency of Spencer clan, had already boarded on ships headed for Ice and Snow Wilderness.

The large-scale expansion plan of Eschyle Steel Plant and its supporting programs and facilities had started.

The blueprint plan of the entire Spias Gulf Industrial Area made every industrial worker in Eschyle City spirited as the area of Spias Gulf might reach above 100 square kilometers in the future.

...

On November 18th, after confirming that Zhang Tie had fully recovered, O'Laura left Eschyle City and returned to grey eagle tribe. As the clan elder, she had to shoulder many responsibilities for the rise or fall of grey eagle tribe.

O'Laura was both proud and independent. She'd come to Eschyle City for Zhang Tie, and she'd left Eschyle City also because of Zhang Tie. She didn't yield to Zhang Tie too much because of Zhang Tie's changing status. She even disdained to use Zhang Tie's money.

When O'Laura left, Zhang Tie went with her over 50 kilometers away from Eschyle City by xiphodon. Additionally, Zhang Tie gifted her two xiphodons, one for her and one for Setton, and two bags of seeds, one of buckthorn seeds and one of potatoes.

Several days ago, the potatoes that Zhang Tie had planted in Castle of Black Iron finally completed their first mutation and evolution. The new potatoes not only produced a greater harvest,

but also had a greater ability to resist drought and cold. Zhang Tie had Heller accelerate the ripening of some of these new kinds of potatoes in Castle of Black Iron and gave them to O'Laura.

After kissing Zhang Tie, O'Laura left.

...

On the second day after the Eschyle Declaration was issued, Zhang Tie finished negotiating the stock financing issuing program of the Tribal Axis Plan with Xu Tao, the manager of Golden Roc Bank, in a parlor of the Rose Manor by signing an official cooperation document.

The issuing fee of Golden Roc Bank was five percent, which meant they would ask for two gold coins for each share as payment. Therefore, the issuing cost of the shares of Tribal Axis Plan would reach 6 million gold coins. However, Zhang Tie had gained much more than that. If all the shares were sold, Zhang Tie would raise 14 million gold coins, which was an astronomical figure wherever in the world you were from.

Besides, the document included exclusive items, which meant that Golden Roc Bank would not undertake a similar business in Ice and Snow Wilderness without Zhang Tie's consent. That was to say, this business was Zhang Tie's patent.

As Zhang Tie's partner, Golden Roc Bank had another condition in the business of stock issuing—to ensure the reputation of Golden Roc Bank. Golden Roc Bank would dispatch its professional accountants to supervise the use of the raised funds so as to ensure that all the funds were applied in the Tribal Axis Plan in Ice and Snow Wilderness instead of being squandered. Of course, Zhang Tie agreed with this delightedly. Additionally, he even employed Golden Roc Bank as the financial counsellor of the Tribal Axis Plan.

Previously Zhang Tie didn't plan to use the raised funds in other places. Although it was an unimaginably huge amount of money, it

garnered too many people's hopes and was going to be used to prepare for defending demons in the coming holy war. If this amount of money was squandered in other places, Zhang Tie felt that he had already surpassed his bottom line.

Each person had his or her own desires and ambitions. Gangsters wanted to occupy more streets; beggars wanted to occupy more rubbish dumps. Even Zhang Tie had his desires and ambitions. However, Zhang Tie's desires and ambitions were not that extreme. The great achievement brought by Ice and Snow Wilderness stimulated Zhang Tie's ambition too much. Therefore, Zhang Tie was very satisfied. If he needed money, Zhang Tie felt it would be more reassuring to use the money brought by his all-purpose medicament. As to the money from Spencer clan, Zhang Tie felt uncomfortable spending it.

Zhang Tie had once mocked himself, for it was a common disease among small figures like him to only dream about a well-off life. However, they only dreamed about being the richest one in the country.

If they had to do bad things for money, most of them would struggle inside.

"Lord, whether in the relics or Eschyle City, underground or above ground, your popularity and deeds win my sincere respect. It's the pleasure of Golden Roc Bank to serve you. After signing this document, you will be promoted to a top-end, golden star guest of our bank in Blackson Humans Corridor. You will be able to enjoy more private services!" Manager Xu expressed this sincerely as he shook hands with Zhang Tie after signing two agreements.

"Thanks for your appreciation. Actually, I'm just doing what I should do. I know what I can do and what I cannot do," Zhang Tie said modestly. This Chinese Golden Roc Bank was still very mysterious, as if it was covered with a veil in Zhang Tie's eyes. Meanwhile, the more he contacted this bank, the more unpredictable he would feel this bank was.

Even a manager of Golden Roc Bank in Eschyle City could be so calm, which really startled Zhang Tie.

"Thanks to you, our prospecting team survived the ruins and left safe and sound. We've not extended our thanks to you for that. We know that everything that you do in Eschyle City was to defend against the demons. Therefore, I want to present you with a gift!" Saying this, Manager Xu Tao glanced at a man by his side. That man then moved forward. He put one black suitcase on the table in front of Zhang Tie before moving several steps back politely.

"What's this?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity as he watched the suitcase.

"It contains the formulas and processing procedures of some high-performance alloys. Based on the capabilities of Eschyle Steel Plant, after some technical transformations, it will be able to produce these high-performance alloys. With such alloys, sabers and swords would be sharper, armor would be firmer, and machines and fleets would perform better."

Zhang Tie let out a slight sigh. He knew the formulas of alloys were very expensive wherever they were. In this age, such things were kept as A-class secrets of a country or a clan, and would never be exposed. Some big clans in Blackhot City had developed by mastering the formulas and processing procedures of some high-performance alloys at the beginning. As the Steel Plant in Eschyle City was weak in technical power, having these things would be able to make up for their shortcomings.

"Thank you so much. Ice and Snow Wilderness need these things urgently!" Zhang Tie shook Manager Xu's hands.

"If you need, we can freely provide you with the whole set of design maps for high-performance tanks, steam armored vehicles and over 100 large-scale military ships, which are suitable to the environment and territory of Ice and Snow Wilderness, as well as some experts and engineers in the relevant fields. These maps

would weigh dozens of tons in total. Those military experts and engineers could teach you how to turn these maps into real objects."

"Yes, we need them, we need them too urgently!" Zhang Tie revealed a big smile. 'This is nothing other than being gifted with a pillow when one wants to go to bed. The steel of Eschyle Steel Plant is not useful unless it is turned into these objects!' Zhang Tie asked, "Can you tell me why you'd want to help me?"

"First, we extend our sincere thanks to you. Second, as a member of the human race, before the arrival of the holy war, we'd like to do our best to help you defend against the demons. Golden Roc Bank is not only an organization that focuses on money. Third, we believe that you can use these things reasonably!"

'Is this the legendary popularity bonus?' Zhang Tie was almost moved by himself.

...

Zhang Tie saw off Manager Xu Tao outside the door. After that, he returned to the parlor. Sitting on the sofa, he became stunned while gazing at that black leather suitcase.

After being moved by his own popularity for less than one second, Zhang Tie started to think about the motives behind why Golden Roc Bank would be doing this. This decision could never be made by a manager of Golden Roc Bank. This decision must have been done by higher management.

Gradually, Zhang Tie started to feel chilly. Golden Roc Bank had a good intention for doing this. What made Zhang Tie feel cold on the inside, though, was Golden Roc Bank's precise judgment about the overall situation of the continents. Only when Golden Roc Bank knew that all the countries on all the continents on the other side of the sea were going to be completely destroyed by demons would they decide it was meaningful to help him at such a high cost.

Although the six Spencer clan women had brought Zhang Tie a new understanding about dissolution these days, they helped Zhang Tie manage everything well in Eschyle City. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt a new recognition for the talent and abilities of Spencer women. However, Zhang Tie knew that he had to go back to Blackhot City as soon as possible. Otherwise it would be difficult to find his friends when the western continent became chaotic.

...

On November 21st, after arranging affairs in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie set out by sea. At Zhang Tie's request, two elders of Spencer clan and three elders of huge bear tribe followed him onto the 10,000-ton luxurious private cruise ship of Spencer clan.

The north wind howled on the sea, whipping up incessant huge waves. However, it did not feel bumpy on the cruise at all.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the elders gazed at the trivial buckthorn seeds and fresh potatoes on the two big plates in front of them. After Zhang Tie finished his words, the elders exchanged glances with each other silently.

"In short, I have to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness alone. When I solve my affair, I will come back. These are seeds. Don't ask me where I got them from. These seeds will be useful to Ice and Snow Wilderness. You will find out after planting them!"

"You are going to leave? We can arrange for a team of powerful fighters to accompany you!" Elder Toles said, "I can also accompany you!"

"No need. This is my personal affair. I will manage it myself!"

"Are you going to leave now?" Elder Rodolfo asked out of curiosity.

"That's right!"

"Do you want to go to Saint Herner Island on this ship?"

"No, I will swim to the continent and I won't stay on Saint Herner Island!"

'Swim? Can a man swim across Oro Strait and Demon North Wind Belt towards the continent tens of thousands of miles away?' Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, all the elders had odd expressions, like they'd just heard Zhang Tie was going to fly over there himself. If not for Zhang Tie's majesty and his extremely normal behaviour today, the elders would have really wanted to check whether Zhang Tie was getting a fever or not by touch his forehead.

"Well, I have to go now. I will come back when I have to!"

After these final words, Zhang Tie left at once.

Under the gazes of the elders, Zhang Tie jumped off the ship and disappeared in the vacant sea...

...

Chapter 503: Returning to Kalur

In Kalur, the city of machines, the first snow arrived several days later than in previous years. Nevertheless, after snowing for two days, the whole city was covered with a ten centimetre thick layer of snow.

The snow even impeded the normal operations of the railway leading to Kalur. Many factories in Kalur were also influenced as they failed to deliver their goods or receive their raw materials. Therefore, a great number of people started to clean snow in the streets and railway lines.

Only the large-scale airship center was uninfluenced as it was an airborne hub across Kalur. Even though it had heavily snowed at night, the ground crew still cleared the airship center with snow cleaners once every few hours. Therefore, while the roads and railway lines were severely impeded in winter, the airship center in Kalur became especially busy.

On December 25th, a medium-sized airship landed on runway number B06 in Kalur airship center. This airship was available for both passengers and freight, so it wasn't very comfortable. Goods were in the lower cabin while many common travellers were crowded in the upper cabin.

Noble travellers would always choose to ride dedicated passenger airships between Carol Federation and Kalur City, on which they could enjoy a high degree of comfort and the quality service of stewardesses. Those who took such airships could always engage in lots of love affairs. Therefore, few rich people would prefer to travel by an airship which was both available to passengers and freight. Instead, they all chose this professional passenger airship.

Most of the taxi drivers outside the airship center had sharp eyes. After seeing which airship had landed on runway B06, the taxi drivers just ignored the passengers. In their previous experiences,

most of those who took the airship for both passengers and freight were as mean as [Grandet](#). These kinds of people would simply ignore the taxis, the starting rate of which was two silver coins. Even if one or two of them wanted to take a taxi, they would bargain sharply with the drivers for a few copper coins. This always made drivers doubt whether they had a decent job. Otherwise, how could they bargain with others for half an hour over a few copper coins?

In the indifferent eyes of a bunch of taxi drivers, Zhang Tie finally walked out of the hatch door of the cabin where he had been crowded in with so many people on chairs for the last few days.

Zhang Tie had already gone back to his original appearance at this moment.

After leaving Eschyle City, Zhang Tie stayed on an uninhabited island in the Ewentra Archipelago for a few days. During this period, he had digested nine huge wolf seven-strength fruits in Castle of Black Iron, he lit 21 surging points and officially became a LV 8 fighter. After that, he came to the continent. After seriously making a plan while on his travels, he hunted a kingsnake in an underground space of a small country called Bastille for two days. After gathering the soul fire of the LV 8 kingsnake, Zhang Tie finally completed his advancement.

After leaving Bastille, Zhang Tie moved westward and had arrived at Carol Federation a couple of days ago. After that, he came to Kalur City on the earliest airship.

Zhang Tie was wearing a set of common cotton linen clothes, which had wrinkled after sitting on the seats for a few days. Underneath that his upper garment was a shirt. He was lifting a common canvas backpack. This set of clothes didn't look so shabby previously. However, since it was winter and he didn't wear an overcoat or fur coat, he looked shabby.

After taking in a deep breath of chilly air, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. After that, he walked towards those taxis.

Amazingly, although he waved towards those taxis, he found he was ignored. After glancing at the passengers beside him who were surrounded by so many taxi drivers, Zhang Tie then glanced over his own clothes and the pair of slightly worn leather shoes. After that, he rubbed his nose, forcing a bitter smile and walked in front of the nearest taxi.

"Pah...Pah..." Zhang Tie slightly tapped on the glass of the mini bus. The driver, who was staying in the warm car, rolled down the window reluctantly and looked at Zhang Tie with a pair of unwilling eyes.

"The starting price is three silver coins!" The driver asked for one more silver coin from Zhang Tie in order to scare him away as soon as possible.

"No problem!" Zhang Tie smiled, "I will go to Blapei, is that okay?"

The driver became a bit hesitant. Meanwhile, his unwilling look disappeared. He replied with a slightly better attitude, "Blapei is over 100 kilometers away from here. It will take us more than 3 hours from here to Blapei. Additionally, I cannot get a guest on my way back from there. Therefore, the fee is very expensive. It will cost you at least...15 silver coins. No bargaining!"

"Fine, let's go!" saying this, Zhang Tie pulled open the rear door and threw himself in the back seat.

The driver turned around and watched Zhang Tie, "Erm...you need to pay me first!"

Zhang Tie then fumbled in his pocket for a short while before taking out a gold coin. He then flicked the gold coin to the driver. Catching it right away, the driver found it was the locomotive gold coin issued by Andaman Alliance. At the sight of this gold coin, the

driver instantly became relaxed as he started the car.

Watching the strange city outside the window, Zhang Tie sighed inside slightly as he didn't know whether this city could be preserved in the coming holy war. Because he knew no one in this city, he headed directly for Blapei, from where he planned to set out for Blackhot City by train.

"Have you been here before? Andaman Alliance's gold coin is rarely seen here..." the driver started the conversation.

"I lived in Blackhot city before!"

"Alas, Blackhot City is a LV 4 city under the affiliation of Brunswick Province, Norman Empire. Our Andaman Alliance has been cancelled. All the cities have been separated except for Kalur!" The driver sighed with a nostalgic tone. After discovering that Zhang Tie was a resident within the Andaman Alliance, the driver's voice had become tenderer.

"We have to show our appreciation for that powerful alchemist of the Iron Gate Clan. The other cities are not that lucky!"

"Yup!"

"How's Kalur now?"

"It's more boisterous than before. A great number of orders from Sun Dynasty and Norman Empire satisfy those mill owners so much!"

Through the talk with the taxi driver, Zhang Tie learned of many things that had happened in Kalur over the past year. Brilliance Feathers and Iron Horn Corps had retreated from the surroundings of Kalur city at the beginning of this year. Therefore, the tense situation facing this region had been eliminated. However, skirmishes still always happened on the borders between two armies. But this was all gossip in Kalur, which had not been confirmed through any official channel.

Norman Empire already revoked their division and

establishment that had been in Kalur theater. However, a part of Iron Horn Army Corps was still stationed there.

After hearing that this region was still in the control of Iron Horn Corps, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh inside. He knew that what he would do in Blackhot City was a bit against the laws of the Norman Empire. If this region was under the control of other forces, it would be difficult for him to move so many people away. But if it was still in the control of Iron Horn Corps, many things would be easily solved.

As they chatted, the taxi left the territory of Kalur City after a short while. Seeing that so many sentry posts on the road in the front and so many vehicles leaving Kalur City were queuing up in front of the sentry posts, the driver slowed down the vehicle and joined the queue after a truck.

"After passing that sentry post, we will enter the territory of Norman Empire. The sentry post will not check goods entering Norman Empire too strictly. However, they do check people entering it very seriously. You cannot enter Norman Empire without a legal identification certificate admitted by Norman Empire. Norman Empire doesn't admit people with the identification certificates of some countries and regions. If you're not allowed to enter, I will just take four of your fifteen silver coins. Additionally, I will send you back to Kalur City," the driver reminded Zhang Tie kindly.

Zhang Tie smiled, "My ID card should work!"

Two soldiers in dark red military uniforms of the Norman Empire climbed into the carriage of the truck and glanced inside quickly before jumping off. After that, they raised the road bar to let the truck go. Then a soldier standing in front of the sentry post made a hand gesture towards the taxi. Seeing the hand gesture, the taxi driver hurriedly drove his car forward meticulously.

At the same time, two tough men with long swords walked over.

Before the soldiers had even knocked at the window, the taxi driver had hurriedly handed over his certificate. After checking his certificate, the soldier gave it back to the driver. Meanwhile, he asked the driver to open the trunk.

"Please show me your identification certificate," said another soldier icily as he stood outside the door of Zhang Tie's car and slightly lowered his head to look at Zhang Tie with solemn eyes. Single male youths, like Zhang Tie, were the key targets of this sentry post.

Zhang Tie passed his ID card to the soldier. After glimpsing Zhang Tie's identification certificate from the rear view mirror, the taxi driver quivered all over for a second.

In the middle of the dark green booklet was a shiny, delicate, yet ferocious looking silver-plated dragon relief, below which were a pair of crossed long swords and tree-leaf like grains. Given this identification certificate, this passenger must be a military officer of the Norman Empire...

Eugene Grandet, the mean MC in the novel written by Balzac.

Chapter 504: A Dramatic Encounter

Even though Zhang Tie was wanted by the secret police of Norman Empire, his qualification as a military officer wasn't cancelled by Iron Horn Corps. The military party of Norman Empire didn't admit that Zhang Tie was wanted by their secret police. Even if Zhang Tie left the Norman Empire, he was still a military officer of Iron Horn Corps.

Franca's chase revealed a deep conflict between the North Border Military Region of Norman Empire and the North Border Order Review Committee of Norman Empire. Secret police had chased Zhang Tie while the military party of Norman Empire chased Major Franca. When the conflict broke out between the two parties, Zhang Tie and Major Franca became attractive chess pieces. As a result, few people paid attention to the truth behind the conflict between him and Major Franca.

'However, the event reversed itself in the end. When Huaiyuan Palace appeared suddenly, the secret police disappeared right away. Although the secret police have not revoked their order to have me captured, as long as I don't surrender myself to the headquarters of the secret police, I will be ignored by them.'

It was much safer for Zhang Tie on the side of the North Border Military Region of Norman Empire. If Iron Horn Corps admitted that Zhang Tie was a criminal, it was no different to slapping their own face, as it meant that they admitted they were beaten by the Order Review Committee. This event was related to the reputation of the military of Norman Empire.

Therefore, nobody would give Zhang Tie any trouble as long as he was a bit low-key. He didn't even need to hide himself or change his name.

The moment the soldier saw Zhang Tie's military officer certificate, he instantly turned solemn as he took it with his hands

hurriedly. He skimmed it over before forcefully swallowing his saliva. Written on the certificate were Zhang Tie's job positions and rewards—

Second lieutenant of Iron-Blood Camp, division number 39...

Iron-Blood medal winner of Norman Empire...

Promoted to first lieutenant due to military exploits, dispatched to the number 9 Equipment Center at the same time, Comprehensive Logistics Relief Division of the Logistics Department, Iron Horn Corps director due to heavy wounds.

This was a military officer who had retired from the frontlines due to heavy wounds, and who had made great military exploits in Kalur theater.

Zhang Tie's military officer certificate was too heavy for the soldier. However, Zhang Tie's age seemed dubious. This common soldier had never had the chance to touch a true military officer certificate since entering the army and could not identify whether it was real or not. Therefore, he could only look at a second lieutenant stationed near a sentry post a few meters away and made a hand gesture silently towards him.

The second lieutenant noticed the situation unfolding and he came over with another two soldiers. The common soldier then passed Zhang Tie's military officer certificate to the second lieutenant.

After checking it for a few seconds, the second lieutenant confirmed that it was true. Closely after that, he stood at attention and gave a military salute towards Zhang Tie which made a "Pah" sound.

"Welcome back, sire. Are you going to Blapei? Do you need us to escort you there?" As the second lieutenant said this, he passed the military officer certificate back to Zhang Tie through the window in a very respectful way. In the army of Norman Empire, anyone

who had been awarded with an iron-blood medal due to his military exploits on the battle field could enjoy some special treatment wherever they were in the country. If the rank of first lieutenant was not too eye-catching, the iron-blood medal made him utterly outstanding.

"No need, I will go back by taxi!"

"Fine, bon voyage!"

Seeing the military officer making a military salute towards the passenger, the other soldiers hurriedly raised the road bar, letting Zhang Tie's car pass through.

...

The second lieutenant, who was on duty at the sentry post, had just been dispatched to Iron Horn Corps after graduating from North Border Military Command College of Norman Empire at the beginning of this year. As the war between Iron Horn Corps and Brilliance Feathers had just come to an end, he didn't know Zhang Tie. Seeing the taxi disappearing in the distance, this second lieutenant frowned slightly.

He remembered that someone had mentioned the name "Zhang Tie" to him before. However, he could not connect the name with Zhang Tie's image. 'Such a young first lieutenant who had obtained an Iron-Blood Medal would be recognisable within the Iron Horn Corps. How come I can't recall him?

The young second lieutenant felt fretful. It wasn't until 20 minutes after Until Zhang Tie had left that the second lieutenant glanced at that wanted circular poster at the sentry post. He then quivered all over as he remembered where he'd heard this name.

'That was the most famous young military officer, who killed dozens of secret policemen and caused a mighty uproar and is wanted by the secret police? He's back?'

The second lieutenant forcefully smacked his head. Closely after

that, he confided something to his assistant before jumping into a car which had already been started up beside the sentry post and sped up towards Blapei.

...

Although it was not hot in the car, the taxi driver still kept dripping with sweat. After discovering Zhang Tie's status, the driver remembered his conversation with Zhang Tie just now. Thinking especially how he'd sworn at Norman Empire army as "red-hide dogs" and "devils", his face turned blue with extreme fear.

'I'm done for.' Imagining the brutality of the Norman Empire army in the legend, the taxi driver felt like dropping into hell right away.

It grew gloomier inside the car. Realizing that the taxi driver was extremely frightened and closing his mouth tightly, Zhang Tie also kept silent. Leaning against the back seat, he kept his eyes closed and pretended to take a nap.

As it was snowing heavily, the vehicle drove at a slow speed. Although some roads had been cleaned, their accessibility had sharply declined. It took the driver over two hours to arrive at Blapei after a 100 kilometers of travel. They arrived at Blapei at six in the evening, when dusk had already fallen.

The taxi parked in a street. Before Zhang Tie opened the door, the driver had hurriedly gotten out of the vehicle and opened the door for Zhang Tie.

"Sir, it's my...my great honor to serve you. You don't need to pay me. Please take...take your money back!"

Seeing the driver taking out that gold coin with a tense look, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. "I have poor hearing. I couldn't hear clearly what you said in the car. Therefore, you don't have to worry about that. Keep the tip. It's late. Your family members are

still waiting for you at home. Blapei's bear and sausage are great. You can buy some for them. Drive slowly on the way home. See you..."

Zhang Tie waved his hand before leaving with his canvas backpack.

Watching Zhang Tie's shadow walk off, the driver stood still for quite a while with mixed feelings. Finally he decided he was sure that he'd met a good person just now and would not face any trouble. He then squeezed into his car. After that, he truly went and bought some beer and sausages before returning to Kalur...

...

There was also some snow piled up in the streets of Blapei. It was a bit slippery. Due to the cold weather, many roadside stores had already closed. Only a couple of people could be seen in streets wearing thick coats. Zhang Tie decided to find a place to take a rest.

He then turned into a street in downtown Blapei. When he caught sight of a female costume store, Zhang Tie became stunned at once as he remembered that he had been here before.

Compared to what he saw there last time, the clothes in the showcases facing the street had already become thick female clothes. The necks of the models in the showcases were circled with some furry scarfs. Additionally, there were high-heeled shoes, beautiful boots and shiny ornaments.

Under the light of the fluorescent lamps, the showcase was filled with a strong feminine quality and emotional appeal. Beside the door was a pile of snow which had been moved there by spade. In contrast, the lamplight in the store felt warm.

After rubbing his face and revealing a smile, Zhang Tie pushed open the door and entered.

"Ding..."

After a crispy and sweet sounding bell ring, the man who was saying something over at the cashier desk turned around and caught sight of Zhang Tie. The three people were shocked at the same time. Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could encounter the same people in the same place and almost at the same time as before. The whole thing was like something from a drama.

"What a coincidence, Mr. Perth!" Zhang Tie grinned while revealing his white teeth.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Perth's face turned pale as he quivered all over. In Perth's eyes, Zhang Tie's white teeth were as ferocious as an evil dragon when it was going to eat people. "Erm...erm...I just... was just passing by here...and buy something for my wife...this is the first time...really...I promise..."

"Have you bought your things?"

"Yes, I have...I have...you continue, you continue..." Saying this, Mr. Perth hurriedly left with a paper bag without daring to glance at Zhang Tie again. When he passed by Zhang Tie, he even moved inch by inch along the wall while holding his breath. The moment Mr. Perth rushed out of the door, he had thrown himself onto the ground, face down. After climbing up, he instantly rolled away as he dared not even look back.

Then, there were only two people left in the store.

Zhang Tie exchanged glances with the female boss behind the cashier desk, who had beautiful, wavy hair. They smiled at each other at the same time...

Chapter 505: Gain and Loss

Suppose O'Laura was an ice cube, Zhang Tie preferred her to melt into water. By contrast, Linda was water; therefore, she could only become a tender and muddy swamp and wrap to Zhang Tie. After that, Zhang Tie would indulge in her softest place under her depressing groans.

This was a gentle and mature woman who was excellent, womanly and beautiful. When she was pressed under Zhang Tie's body, she still looked embarrassed as she closed her eyes and inclined her head.

On the same Greens' building. After Zhang Tie moved away, Linda had moved from the 3rd floor to the 4th floor. It was the room where Zhang Tie lived. Like how Zhang Tie sent Linda back last time, after drinking a bit, Zhang Tie sent her back again. After that, it happened naturally.

Well, Zhang Tie had to admit that he didn't stand it first.

On the dark stairs, Linda was walking ahead of Zhang Tie. Watching her twisting, plump butts under the tight purple kilt and the pair of beautiful snowwhite legs in high-heeled shoes and smelling the alluring fragrance of this mature woman, Zhang Tie couldn't stand to touch her butts on the 3rd floor.

Linda remained silent. She just turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie in a slightly embarrassed way. For Zhang Tie, this was an encouragement.

Walking in the dark passageway, Linda had some premonition as she started to hold her breath.

When they walked in the dark passageway outside the room on the 4th floor, Zhang Tie hugged her. They then started to kiss each other.

Being extremely stimulated in the dark, Zhang Tie forcefully

pushed the gentle and beautiful female boss to the corner. Meanwhile, he lifted her snowwhite leg and started to fumble, push and rub his thing on her leg; he finally pricked into the swamp-like wet and soft place through the narrow crack on the side of her lace.

Zhang Tie still remembered that Linda was like a fire while her tongue was icy.

...

On the next day, Zhang Tie woke up on time by his biological clock. When he opened his eyes, he found Linda was crouching at his chest like a kitty. The woman's hair was spreading over Zhang Tie's neck and shoulders in a disordered way. Her plump '[white rabbits](#)' were pushing closely beside Zhang Tie's ribs and chest. The moment Zhang Tie moved, he felt itchy over his neck.

Zhang Tie then looked outside through the chink of the curtain. It was snowing. It was still dark outside although this small bedroom looked very warm.

Linda's fair face remained a wisp of blush and luster after the romantic affair with Zhang Tie. She looked very charming. Their clothes spread over the carpet, making it a bit disordered. The door of the bedroom was open. Right on the handle of the door was Linda's black 36E bra. There were even Zhang Tie's milky body fluid on the bra which had already dried.

Linda was a mature and charming woman. Once being conquered by a man, she would become very obedient on the bed like how a fair lady served her man at her age. As a result, Zhang Tie's desire for conquest and gratification was greatly met. By conquering such a woman, a man would feel satisfied both physically and mentally.

Watching her sweet sleeping look, Zhang Tie could barely imagine how poor this woman was on the same time last year when she did not encounter him. The God seemingly always brought more troubles to these kind yet beautiful women, making

them suffer from men's betrayal and greed.

After slightly kissing her face, Zhang Tie carefully moved away her arm from his neck before getting off the bed silently. After that, he pulled a quilt over her body.

Zhang Tie walked to the window side and revealed a narrow aperture. After that, he glanced downwards and found two people were standing outside the Greens' house and slightly stomped their feet as they looked at the house before daybreak.

They were wearing dark red military uniforms of Norman Empire. Being not far from the two people, two black sedans parked on the roadside. From Zhang Tie's side, he could rightly catch the white license plates.

Zhang Tie revealed a wisp of smile over his mouth corner. "The military reacted so fast. They've already found me over one night." If not being so efficient, Zhang Tie would doubt Iron Horn Corps' ability to control Blapei.

After putting down the curtain, Zhang Tie took a cold bath in the bathroom using the water in the water tank. After that, he returned to his bedroom, picking up his clothes and put them on.

Linda was still sleeping. After a glance at her, Zhang Tie silently left the room.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Linda opened her eyes the moment he closed the door of the bedroom...

...

As it was still early, Greens and their other guests had not gotten up yet. Therefore, Zhang Tie left the Green's building and walked towards the two soldiers who were standing at the cross of the lane.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking out of building, the two soldiers became spirited. However, before they uttered, Zhang Tie had already opened his mouth.

"Thanks. Take me to your officer!"

After glancing at each other, the two soldiers nodded before leading Zhang Tie to the vehicle outside the lane. After opening the door, they invited Zhang Tie in; after that, they entered the vehicle in the front.

A military officer with the rank of lieutenant colonel of Norman Empire was sitting in the car with a solemn look and was waiting for Zhang Tie's arrival.

"Hi, First Lieutenant Zhang Tie. I've really not imagined that I can see you again in Blapei. I'm Labelli, a lieutenant colonel of the Ministry of Supervision of Iron Horn Corps!"

After shaking hands in the car, Zhang Tie sat on the opposite chair of lieutenant colonel.

"Hello, lieutenant colonel. I'm sorry for bringing trouble to the brothers in Ministry of Supervision in such a weather!"

After hearing the words "brothers in Ministry of Supervision", Lieutenant Colonel Labelli looked a bit mild, "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, although I hate those red gloves too; individually, I admire what you've done in Blapei very much; no matter what, you're still wanted by the secret police. The relationship between the whole Corps and North Border military region and Order Review Committee of Norman Empire was strained because of you. You should know that you're a sensitive person. If you appear in the public, you might arise some problems. May I know your purpose back?"

"I have some friends in Blackhot City and Blapei. I'm back to visit them. If not, I'm afraid that I might not see them in the future." Zhang Tie put it straightforward.

Narrowing his eyes, lieutenant colonel Labelli asked, "What do you mean by you're afraid that you might not see them in the future?"

"I witnessed the event in Heavens Cold City. The military of Norman Empire must have predicted some key information about Heavens Cold City through analysis. I think that some major information should have been delivered to field officers confidentially from Iron Horn Army. If it's delivered a bit later, it would be too abrupt. Am I clear!" Zhang Tie explained calmly.

Those lieutenant colonels in Iron Horn Corps were at least smarter than commoners. Therefore, after thinking for a second, Lieutenant Colonel had already gotten Zhang Tie's meaning.

If this was told by a common first lieutenant of Iron Horn Army, Lieutenant Colonel Labelli would instantly arrest the first lieutenant and had investigated where did he get the message. However, the event in Heavens Cold City was predominated by Huaiyuan Palace. Norman Empire could not gain the key information and evidences without the consent of Huaiyuan Palace. Now that Zhang Tie was a member of Huaiyuan Palace and was a participant of the event, he must know some information.

Lieutenant Colonel Labelli nodded.

"In order to maintain normal social order, the Norman Empire have not delivered some messages officially. You should know what big problems would be arisen if those messages were revealed. As you are still a soldier of Norman Empire, I hope you can stick to the codes as a soldier of Norman Empire. Remember to not do anything excessive!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "Of course. I'm going to see some old friends in Blackhot City. As Huaiyuan Prefecture of Jinyun Country is adjacent to the sea, it's very beautiful over there. My friends have not seen sea ever since they were born. Therefore, I want to take them to watch the sea if they like!"

"How many friends do you have there?"

"Plus their family members, I'm afraid that an airship would be required to carry them!"

"Norman Empire is implementing a very strict control on population migration. If you want to take your friends out, each of them need a migration certificate. This might be a bit difficult!"

"No problem. I will manage it for them like how those riches of big clans do. I will not cause any trouble to others!"

"How long will you stay in Blapei?"

"It depends. I have to leave tomorrow. I will go to Blackhot City by train!"

"Where else are you going to except for Blackhot City?"

"Blackhot City is my destination. As long as I manage it, I will leave with my friends!"

...

After talking with Lieutenant Colonel Labelli for over 20 minutes, Zhang Tie got off the car, putting a special pass of Iron Horn Corps into his pocket.

"First Lieutenant Zhang Tie. I have to say, it's very lucky to be your friend. Wish you a pleasant trip with your friends!" Lieutenant Colonel Labelli told Zhang Tie through the window.

"Thanks!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile...

After a slight quiver, the two vehicles left.

Zhang Tie saw off the vehicles before revealing a smile and returning to Greens' building.

When he was back to the 4th floor, he knocked at the door as he had no key.

Linda opened the door with a slight amazement and surprise.

"What?" Zhang Tie asked with an amazed look.

"I thought...though you've already gone!" Linda said in a embarrassed way.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile before entering the room and closing

the door.

"Have you eaten breakfast? If not, I will make breakfast for you."

Under Zhang Tie's gleaming eyes, Linda looked a bit embarrassed as she hurriedly turned around and walked towards the kitchen. At this moment, Zhang Tie pulled her hands as he sat on sofa. After that, he patted his legs, "Come on, sit here!"

Biting her lips, Linda sat on Zhang Tie's one thigh in a shameful way.

"Not like this, you need to split open your legs..." Zhang Tie 'ordered' while his arms around Linda's waist...

Sitting on Zhang Tie's thigh in an intimate gesture, Linda's skirt was raised up, revealing a snowwhite thigh root. The 30-odd female boss then blushed.

"Is...is that like this?" Linda asked Zhang Tie in a low voice as she thought that Zhang Tie wanted her to do some weird things.

"Look at my eyes!" Zhang Tie said while holding his arms around her waist.

Turning around her head, Linda looked at Zhang Tie in a coy pattern.

Seeing such a mature woman, especially her coy look after sleeping with her, Zhang Tie almost lost his control again. In Zhang Tie's eyes, such a woman was really marvelous. He couldn't understand how her former fiancée thought. How could he drop such a good woman only for a few gold coins. What an idiot! By comparison, even Perth was a bit more discerning.

Zhang Tie couldn't stand to take a deep breath of the alluring fragrance of the woman. He knew that he was not the God and could not save all the people; however, he could keep this woman here. It would be too cruel for her if she suffered another catastrophe in her life.

"Linda, do you have relatives in this city?"

Hearing this question, she shook her head after a wisp of gloomy look.

"If so, do you want to live in other places?"

"Where can I go? I have a job here so I have to live here. If I'm in a strange place, I don't know what else I can do." The woman shook her head in a confused look.

"Even if you're in other places, you can still do whatever you like. You can continue if you like to open a store and sell female clothes and ornaments. Nobody would force you to do what you dislike!"

"Do you want to take me away from here?"

"Yes, I'm back to take some people out of Norman Empire, because this place might be in danger; I don't want to restrict you as my goods, neither would I abandon you at the critical moment. When you leave here, you're still free. You can do whatever you want and live your life. Do you believe in me?" Zhang Tie watched this woman sincerely.

Linda also watched Zhang Tie with mixed moods. After being silent for a few seconds, she suddenly covered her mouth with a hand and burst out tears at once as she nodded forcefully...

...

It took Zhang Tie a little time to realize why Linda cried and became so thrilled at this moment. After the death of her father and the betrayal of her fiancée, Blapei became a sad place for Linda. She always dreamed that one day she could meet a man who could take her away and wouldn't abandon her at the critical moment.

Zhang Tie became the very man...

...

In the afternoon, Zhang Tie came to Chevli Village on the thick

snow, where he got a message that he wanted to know without having to ask others.

One month ago, Hanna got married. The one who married the most brilliant Beer Queen of Blapei was a young master of a big business group in Nordinburgh—a tall, rich and handsome first lieutenant of the Logistics Department of Iron Horn Corps. Hanna's family and the recipe of beer followed Hanna to Nordinburgh.

Hanna became the golden phoenix that flew out of Chevli Village. All the villagers in Chevli Village sighed as they could barely drink a cup of that delicious beer anymore from then on.

Because of this unexpected message, Zhang Tie stayed in the snowfield for quite a while. Each one had their own life. Nobody was the center of the whole world, even Zhang Tie himself. If he missed something, he would miss it forever. Zhang Tie could only bless Hanna sincerely.

On the next morning, Zhang Tie asked Linda to sell his store in Blapei and made preparations to leave out of here. After that, he got on the train from Blapei to Blackhot City.

"Are you all right, my brothers...?"

"white rabbits" refer to her plump breasts.

Chapter 506: I'm Back

On December 29th, Blackhot city was filled with an atmosphere of new year. The showcases and the doorways of stores on both sides of the fascinating Avenue Bright were newly decorated with colorful lamps. Many firms and hotels were discounting so as to make a fortune in the new year. When it was the same time in previous years, the most average people in Blackhot City, who rarely came out for shopping would come here to feel the wonderful life of wealthy people in Avenue Bright.

Perhaps only those scrupulous people could find that although Avenue Bright was still boisterous this year, much fewer members of the former 7 ruling clans of the Federation of Coal, Steel and Iron could be seen in some top entertainment venues in Avenue Bright.

Since the beginning of this year, the 7 ruling clans of Blackhot City had gradually faded out of the vision of commoners here. Although many industries and businesses of the 7 ruling clans were still running well in Blackhot City, the number of the influential figures of the 7 ruling clans gradually decreased. According to the gossips, many people of the 7 ruling clans, especially young men had left Blackhot City and headed for other countries.

Captain Kerlin finally bought a house of 140 square meters. This was not because that he had accumulated enough money, but because the house price in Blackhot City declined, allowing this cyclops to have his own "love nestle". However, he still didn't have a girlfriend.

A few days ago, Captain Kerlin plucked up his courage and expressed his true feelings to Miss Daina, only to get an answer, "Thanks, but we don't fit each other!" This shocked Captain Kerlin very much. Because of this, he even became frustrated for quite a long time.

When it was close to the new year, watching the room filled with empty glasses, Captain Kerlin wondered that he would be driven mad if he continued to stay here like this.

Thus, Captain Kerlin put on his coat and stood in front of a mirror of a washroom. After washing his face with cold water in a rusty way, he casually combed his disordered mane with some water. After that, he left the apartment with red eyes.

His apartment was not far from the Iron Thorns Fighting Club. After being depressed for a few days, Captain Kerlin planned to have a fight in the fighting club so as to recover his morale. If he was lucky, he could even rip off that Fat in the fighting club.

These days, Captain Kerlin spent a lot on beer which made him poorer. Pinching the remaining silver coins and copper coins in the pocket of his coat, Captain Kerlin swore inside the cunning businessman who rose the price of beer by two times compared to that last year before leaving.

Out of the apartment was the Avenue Bright. It was evening, when the whole avenue was brightly lit and filled with visitors.

Watching those slim toyboys in fine clothes who were holding their women's hand, Cyclops raised his firm chest as he felt his confidence once again.

If it was indeed in a chaotic world, Daina would know that the man who could really protect her and give her a reliance and a sense of safety was only him, instead of those toyboys who only knew how to tease women. Only strong men's punches were the best reliance for women in a chaotic world, Daina would understand it very soon.

"Zerom even wants me to be a mercenary. Humph, didn't he know that this was the right moment for me to shine in front of Daina? Even men would change themselves in a different environment, not to mention women. I will not give up. I believe that Daina would think it through one day for sure."

As Captain Kerlin walked, he plucked up his courage. He confirmed his decision to pursue for Miss Daina once again.

I have a house now. Perhaps, I can buy some fine clothes like those toyboys and have a haircut in the barber shop...

Cyclops won many aspirations from the boisterous stores on both sides of the Avenue Bright. As a result, cyclops became spirited once again. Raising his head and chest, he strode forward in the crowd.

"Hmm, if I want to do this, I have to make some money."

Remembering that Fat in the Iron Thorn Fighting Club, Captain Kerlin revealed a wisp of smile as he paced up.

As he thought about that Fat, he saw a fat in front of him. However, this fat looked more wretched.

Therefore, Captain Kerlin sped up and patted onto the shoulder of the fat in front of him heavily.

Barley, with some acne on his face he turned around and caught sight of Cyclops who covered a half of his puberty with a shadow. Sharwin who was walking with Barley was also frightened at the sight of Captain Kerlin.

Numerous former graduates of the No. 7 National Middle School reached a conclusion at the cost of fresh blood——unless you could beat Cyclops, you'd better show enough respect to him even if you have graduated from school. As for a person who dared to beat his superior in the troop, he would never see whether it was proper if he wanted to beat a former student.

"Ah, Captain Kerlin, are you also here for shopping?" at the sight of Captain Kerlin, Barley, the Fat had already smiled like a dog that had just picked so many rotten meat. He almost stuck out his tongue.

Sharwin hurriedly greeted Captain Kerlin.

Slightly frowning his forehead, Cyclops watched this obscene fat. Barley's exquisite woolen suit and silk shirt made him a bit uncomfortable. "Why Barley, a fat rascal who was not even qualified to be a soldier a year ago could live so well; however, I always lack money although being frugal. How unfair was the God! Toyboys always attract women's attention, cunning and obscene guys could make money; however, I always lack both."

"Where are you going?" Cyclops asked with a solemn look.

"We are just taking a walk here; and planning to buy some gifts for our family members by the way." Barley replied with a smile, "We heard Captain Kerlin bought a house near here. It's really admirable. The house here is the most expensive in Blackhot City. So many women want to marry a man who has a house here. We wish Captain Kerlin to marry a beautiful hostess for his mansion!"

Barley was really good at observing people's expressions. The moment his upper lip touched his lower lip had Captain Kerlin's face relieved.

"Hmm. Don't be too late outside..." after glancing over Barley and Sharwin, Captain Kerlin really couldn't find a place to lose his temper; therefore, he just strode forward.

Seeing Captain Kerlin leaving, Barley and Sharwin exchanged glances with each other before letting out a sigh. Cyclops almost hung his bad mood on his face completely today; if it was before, seeing him standing outside the school gate in such an expression, all the passers' legs would have become weak. Thankfully, he left. Right one minute ago, they were still talking about Miss Daina. If Cyclops heard what they talked just now a minute earlier, he might have crippled them.

"How risky..." Sharwin said as he patted his chest.

"Judging from his look, it seems that he had not made any progress in pursuing for Miss Daina!" Rubbing his jaw, Barley watched Captain Kerlin disappearing in the crowd.

"No crap. Do you really want to see Miss Daina being pressed down by this beast? To be honest, I would barely accept any man Miss Daina would stay with..."

Barley shook his head as he sniffled, "Come on, we'd better mind our own business!"

Sharwin nodded.

Of course, the two people were not here for shopping. Several minutes later, they appeared in a chartered room of a high-end restaurant in Avenue Bright. After about 10 minutes, First Lieutenant Clarke of the Logistics Department of the No. 19 Division of Iron Horn Corps in informal dress appeared in the same chartered room.

After enjoying the expensive, yummy food and drinks, Barley instantly took out a purse from his pocket and pushed it in front of First Lieutenant slightly.

Taking over the purse, First Lieutenant Clarke casually weighed it by hand before revealing a smile. He then raised his cup, "Cheers, for our cooperation in the next year, cheers!"

"Cheers!"

Three cups then collided with each other...

...

After dinner, a waiter entered to chartered room to settle accounts for them.

"96 silver coins and 86 copper coins in total. Which one of you will pay the bill?"

"I will!" saying this, Barley instantly took out of a gold coin and flicked it towards him, "Keep the change!"

"Thanks!" the waiter bowed and left.

After chatting with Barley and Sharwin for a short while, Clarke left first. After that, Sharwin drew a cold breath in the room, "Alas,

it's too luxurious. I've not imagined that it could cost us about one gold coin for one dinner. I'm not even full!"

"This is face!" Barley said in an experienced way, "If not such a high-end restaurant, Clarke might not even come at all!"

"Why not? We're presenting him gold coins. When you gave him the 60-odd gold coins just now, I felt really pitiful. We only made over 100 gold coins in one year; however, he took away half of them..." Sharwin sighed.

"Don't worry. Do not always focus on that bit of money. As long as we keep a good relationship with Clarke, we could make twice the amount tomorrow from him. This starts from establishing our mutual trust." Barley gritted his teeth, "Let's go, go catch that waiter..."

"What?" Sharwin became stunned.

"Ask our money back. Damn it! That's 3 silver coins and 14 copper coins. Mrs Anna has a bad business recently. With this amount of money, we can visit her twice."

Sharwin and Barley then instantly rushed out of the chartered room.

...

"Sir, you...you've told me to keep the change." the waiter stared at Barley with an amazing look.

"There must be a mistake. I meant that you keep the 4 copper coins, but you have to give us the 3 silver coins and 10 copper coins right now. Quick, we're in a hurry!" Barley said with a shameless look.

Finally, the waiter put the 3 silver coins and 14 copper coins on Barley's hands.

...

After leaving the restaurant, Barley and Sharwin put on their

original average clothes and packed the clothes, each of which was worth more than 2 gold coins before hurriedly rushing into a high-end garment store to return them.

"Sir, is there any problem with my clothes?" the clerk watched Barley and Sharwin with a depressed look.

"No problem, but we don't want them all of a sudden. According to your regulations, as long as the clothes are well-preserved with a label in 7 days, we can return them without any reason. We bought these clothes yesterday, can we return them?" Barley explained with a serious look.

After checking the two clothes carefully, the clerk found that they were well preserved, including their labels. Therefore, he returned it back to Barley in a frustrated way.

...

After walking out of the garment store, Barley and Sharwin exchanged glances with each other before bursting out into laughter's.

After that, Barley put his hand onto Sharwin's shoulder, "Brother, trust me, we will not pick up clothes from this store one day!"

"Where else will we pick if not here?"

"We will have our own tailor, the best ones, like those big figures of the Federation of Coal, Steel and Iron in Blackhot City..." Barley said with a hopeful look.

Sharwin smiled pleasantly, "Of course, I believe in you!"

"Let's go. We will go back early today. We have to buy some Spring Festival goods to gift to the homes of Doug, Bagdad, Leit and Hista. I'm afraid that they would not have a vacation until the end of the year!"

"It's said that Bagda would soon become a LV 3 soldier..."

"This guy truly is indeed progressing very fast. He has already lit 3 surging points in less than 2 years since graduation!"

"I miss Bighead. He might be sharper!"

"He might have been LV 6!"

Speaking of Zhang Tie, Barley and Sharwin both revealed a special look. That's their good brother, who made them proud of.

...

Barley and Sharwin then departed and returned to their own home at a late time.

Barley was living in a nice residential area of Blackhot City. When he came back home, it was already midnight. Nobody could be seen in the residential area anymore. Besides faint barks from afar, it was tranquil over here.

Several days ago, a guy committed suicide by jumping off the building. He looked pretty miserable when he died. His brain had splattered over ten meters away. After a cold breeze, seeing the shadows on both sides of the roads under the reflection of the roadside lamps, Barley passed by the place where that guy had committed suicide; gradually, he felt goosebumps over his neck as he paced up.

At this moment, a hand reached out of the darkness and fell on Barley's shoulder.

In a split second, Barley felt his head full of blood. Feeling soft at foot, the moment he uttered half a word, his mouth had been covered.

"It's me!" a voice sounded at Barley's ears. Barley turned around and caught sight of Zhang Tie's faint and familiar face.

Zhang Tie was still smiling like before. Seeing Barley's widely opened eyes, he knew that Barley had already recognized him. Therefore, he moved his hand away from Barley's mouth, "It's only

a bit longer than 1 year. How did you become so timid?"

"Bighead?" Barely muttered as he was shocked. At this moment, even if that guy who had jumped off the building stood in front of him, he would not be as shocked as he was seeing Zhang Tie.

"Such a nickname has not been called for a long time!" Zhang Tie rubbed his face,

"Is that you?"

"Yes, it's me..."

Chapter 507: The Current Situation

The special pass that Lieutenant Colonel Labelli gave Zhang Tie was a certificate used by the military officers of the Ministry of Supervision of Iron Horn Corps in special tasks. It contained Zhang Tie's photo, the duration of the certificate, military rank and code, except for a name. With this pass, Zhang Tie could be low-key in this city. Very few people would pay attention to him in case of troubles and embarrassment.

After leaving Barley's residential area and reaching an appointment with Barley about the next meeting time, Zhang Tie went to Grandma Teresa's Orphanage.

Walking in the familiar street of Blackhot city in the cold and silent evening, Zhang Tie had mixed moods inside.

Over the past one year, the Blackhot city seemingly had changed a lot; however, it didn't change actually.

Bagdad joined the army and became a soldier of No. 39 Division. Barley and Sharwin, who had not passed the physical examination, opened a small firm in Blackhot City, the shareholders of which were the seven members of the brotherhood.

Barley reached an agreement with First Lieutenant Clarke of Logistics Department of No. 39 Division whom he had met once before and started to do business on the treatment of junks of the Logistics Department of No.39 Division.

Zhang Tie, who had stayed in the Logistics Department of the Iron Horn Corps for a period, knew it clearly that many items that were overdue or couldn't meet the requirements of the army should be treated like junks in the strict military supply system of Norman Empire. Some of these junks were useless; some of them were still very useful in the folklore after processing.

First Lieutenant Clarke had the disposal right of some wasted

weapons, which should be sold in the price of scrap iron according to the regulation of Norman Empire. However, actually, they were very profitable.

Take a standard 1.57 m-long single hand long sword used by the army of Norman Empire as an instance. If the tip of the blade was broken or a part of the blade was severely damaged, this sword would be discarded as useless. Barley's team took over this kind of sword from Clarke. After polishing it into a 1 m-long common sword, even a short sword or a dagger, they could still make a profit. As commoners had less requirements on weapons than military, neither did they have so many standards. Their only requirement was that this weapon was available. However, the military products of Norman Empire were always very high. Even though it was thinner than before, as long as it was available, it would have a high demand.

Barley and Sharwin were running a mini workshop. Besides some sets of grinding machines and metal processing tables, they also invited some assistants. They processed the discarded military products here. After that, they sold the new ones. Last year, excluding expenditures, they even made over 100 gold coins.

As Barley and Sharwin have just had a meal with Clarke in Avenue Bright and bribed him, Barley estimated that they could make twice the amount of money in the next year.

"Before leaving Blackhot City, I gave some money and resources to Barley and the other friends; they didn't input all the money in this business; in Barley's words, the secret of making money is not to always expand your business but to be familiar with your business. Without a solid foundation, one might suffer a loss no matter how much you spent."

Speaking of business, Zhang Tie had to admit that the fat was born to be a businessman. "This guy is much sharper than me on doing business."

"If I don't come back, Barley might continue to do his business here; however, Barley had to consider whether to stay in Blackhot City or not given the current critical situation."

Zhang Tie had already told Barley about the reason that he came back. Blackhot City was not a place to stay for long. Once the 3rd holy war broke out, Blackhot City, which was on the border of Blackson Humans Corridor, would become the frontier of the war or be destroyed in a wink. Otherwise, as long as other places were involved in the war, they would not be able to retreat from Blackhot City. The long and narrow terrain of Blackson Humans Corridor determined the fate of Blackhot City in the coming holy war.

After leaving from here, they might have to say goodbye to Blackhot City forever. Although Barley believed in Zhang Tie but he had to negotiate with his family members solemnly about that.

Any family would be very serious on making a decision which was involved with the fate of the whole family.

Zhang Tie told Barley that as long as his family wanted to leave out of here, he would be responsible for their migration certificates. Barley would go for Sharwin tomorrow. As to other brothers, he could only notice them when they would come out of the barracks in a few days.

Zhang Tie had about one month to manage things here from now to the next February.

After coming to the orphanage of Grandma Teresa, Zhang Tie was amazed that the name-plate of the orphanage had disappeared. The orphanage was closed. Using his dark vision, Zhang Tie could see the playground of the kids was covered with packs of goods. The orphanage seemingly became a warehouse.

Seeing the light coming from the small room of the night watchman, Zhang Tie walked forward and slightly knocked at the door of the room. After a few seconds, he received no response;

therefore, he knocked once again.

This time, he heard some noises in the room. After a few seconds, the night watchman pulled open a palm-sized iron window and showed half of his face with a vigilant look while lifting his fluorite lamp towards outside.

"Whom are you looking for?"

"I want to know where are Grandma Teresa and those kids?"

"You mean that old nun who adopted a lot of orphans?"

"Yes!"

After thinking for a short while, the man in the room replied, "They've moved away two months ago."

"Are they still in Blackhot City?"

"Not anymore. After disposing the real estate here, that nun left with those orphans by airship!"

"Hmm, thanks!"

Zhang Tie turned around and left the orphanage. After hearing the night watchman's words, Zhang Tie let out a sigh. Besides Patron School, nobody would do that.

When Zhang Tie met Crell in Ice and Snow Wilderness, who was familiar with Grandma Teresa very much, he started to doubt that Grandma Teresa's status in the Patron School might not be that humble. It seemed that Grandma Teresa had other missions to accomplish in Blackhot City, for instance, to seek for orphans who were suitable to the cultivation system of Patron School. Given the current situation, it was indeed like that.

Whatever, after knowing that Grandma Teresa and those orphans left Blackhot City, Zhang Tie finally became reassured. If Grandma Teresa and those orphans had not left, Zhang Tie planned to take all of them away this time.

After leaving the orphanage, Zhang Tie walked on the tranquil

street alone. He wanted to find an inn; however, Beverly's face appeared in Zhang Tie's mind at once, making his heart race.

"Perhaps, I can give her a surprise!"

With a wink, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he sped up.

...

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie appeared outside a apartment in a lane near Red Maple Avenue in the north of Blackhot City.

Zhang Tie stood in front of the building and watched the lighted window while raising his head. He remembered that Beverly's family lived in the 6th floor, namely the top floor. Beverly's room was adjacent to the balcony facing this lane.

As he was going to try a new thing, he felt excited inside. After looking around and finding nobody was near him, he instantly sprung up from the ground onto the balcony of Beverly's apartment like an owl. In the air, he just pressed his one hand onto the windowsills on two floors before springing up once again. He then appeared in the balcony of Beverly's apartment silently.

It was very easy for a LV 8 powerhouse like Zhang Tie to do this.

The balcony directly led to Beverly's room. There was a glass door and a window between the balcony and Beverly's room. As it was winter, the window and the glass door were covered with deep, thick curtains. The glass door was also closed. After twisting the handle of the glass door, Zhang Tie opened the door, only causing a silent sound, "click". He then flashed inside the room at once before closing the door.

Using his dark vision, Zhang Tie could see clearly the dark-pitched room like how commoners saw things in the daytime.

It was a small, tidy room. It was only a bit more than 10 square meters. On the clothesline pole were hanging some woman's clothes, including two sets of nursing uniforms, some pairs of delicate underwear and sizable bras. The whole room was filled

with a familiar smell of a young girl.

As this apartment was equipped with heating units, the room was not cold. In a night skirt, Beverly was sleeping on the bed in a sexy manner...

Chapter 508: A Surprise

After a year, Beverly looked more mature at 18.

Her blonde hair was scattering over the pillow. She was breathing evenly. In sleep, her beautiful and delicate face looked pretty tranquil.

Beverly, who was sleeping soundly didn't know that a man was standing in her room.

Beverly's bed was covered with some stuffed toys. Even though in sleep, Beverly was still hugging a huge stuffed toy dog.

Zhang Tie was attracted by the ruby on her right fourth finger, which was gifted by him.

Zhang Tie slowly drew closer to her bed. The moment he lowered his body and wanted to kiss her, he saw one thing beside her pillow. Being shocked for a second, he silently took that thing.

It was a small white linen bag which looked pretty ugly. Zhang Tie pinched it and realized it contained some black mulberries that he fetched from the wild. This small bag was sewed by the pieces of his shirt.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Beverly treasured them so much that she put them beside her pillow instead of using them.

This ugly bag was a bit different than that before, as three words were sewed on it—I love you!

Beverly had not even said this to him even in the craziest period. However, she sewed those words on this bag.

Seeing that ring and that bag, Zhang Tie understood it right away. His eyes slightly turned wet.

He slightly put that bag in the original place and covered quilt for Beverly. After that, he silently moved back to the wall. He then sat on a chair and watched her sleeping soundly like watching a

beautiful painting.

...

On the second morning, a shrill drifted from Beverly's room.

"Bennie, what's wrong?" Beverly's mom asked outside her room.

After being silent for two seconds, Beverly replied, " Nothing, mom. A big cockroach drilled in from the balcony last night!"

"Well, I'm making breakfast. What do you want to eat?"

"Mom, I don't feel good with my stomach; I want to sleep a bit longer. I won't eat breakfast!"

"Whatever, your hospital is in a vacation. Take a good rest at home!"

"Hmm!"

The talk between mom and daughter then came to an end.

...

Seeing Beverly's amazing look and hearing the talk between her and her mom, Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

Beverly sprung up from the bed. When Zhang Tie thought that she would throw herself into his embrace, his smile froze as Beverly rushed into the washroom.

"What a woman!" Zhang Tie smiled in a speechless way...

Three minutes later, after washing her face and tying up her hair, Beverly rushed out of the washroom in a night skirt. Supporting Zhang Tie's face with hands, she watched Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes. Without saying anything, she immediately lowered her body and bit Zhang Tie's neck ferociously.

"Ouch..." Zhang Tie uttered a muffled voice.

After lingering for a short while, they smiled at each other. Although they had not seen each other for over a year, after such a kiss, they felt having separated only for a few days. Zhang Tie

didn't change, neither did Beverly.

"When did you come back?"

"I came back from Blapei to Blackhot City by train last night!"

"How did you come back? You're still wanted by the secret police!" Beverly said in a low voice while supporting on Zhang Tie's shoulder in case her mom heard it.

"Never mind. In the eyes of secret police, I'm invisible. As long as I don't run to the avenue and exclaim that I'm Zhang Tie who's wanted by the secret police, nobody will find me trouble..."

"Why are you back then?"

"To take you out of Blackhot City!"

"What? But why?"

"Because this is going to be a dangerous place very soon!"

"Is it because of war?"

"It's a long story..."

...

Zhang Tie stayed in Beverly's room for an entire morning. And when Beverly's mom went out to buy vegetables for lunch, Zhang Tie silently left Beverly's apartment.

After that, Zhang Tie called a carriage in the street outside the building and headed for Black Gold Hotel, the most one of its kind in Blackhot City. Using the special pass given by Lieutenant Colonel, he opened the most luxurious room which required 15 gold coins a day and waited there for the message.

Zhang Tie was not used to be that luxurious. However, this time, he had to be luxurious. Because in the eyes of the most commoners, the words of a person who could afford 15 gold coins a night was more authoritative than a person who could only afford 1.5 silver coins a night. Especially when people made major

decisions, it was very important to guide and encourage them to make a decision by one's energy and Qi field.

This was not the battle field where things could be solved by fists. If it could be solved by fists, it would be much easier; however, if he wanted to persuade others, especially the family members of his friends, he needed high skills.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the Black Gold Hotel, Barley and Sharwin had already started to collect people, one family after another according to the name list given by Zhang Tie. Besides the family members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood, the name list also contained Zhang Tie's other friends in Blackhot City like Blues, Potter and those people of the God's Will Association.

Zhang Tie just let Barley tell them that he wanted to see them. As he was still being wanted by the secret police, those who didn't know the truth had to endanger a high risk if they came for him.

If those people dared to see him at such a high risk, Zhang Tie would tell them about the truth and let them make a choice. If they agreed to leave, Zhang Tie would give them a favor and take them away. It was a payment to the friendship and loyalty.

Of course, if those people didn't come, he would have no complaints about that. In this world, we cannot force people to change their mind. In Chinese opinion, if two people were doomed to not stay with each other, they could only separate from each other.

Beverly was also busy. Zhang Tie told her to find other girls of Rose Association. He wanted to see how many of those girls would like to see him at this moment. If they would like to come, Zhang Tie would indeed fulfill his responsibility as a "Guardian Knight"; otherwise, what they did before was just like a crazy wet dream.

After the CSIF (Coal, Steel and Iron Federation) faded away from commoners' vision, very few people could afford such a high-end consumption in Black Gold Hotel. Even in the prime period when

the CSIF ruled this city, very less people afforded 10,000 gold coins a night in Black Gold Hotel like Zhang Tie.

Because of this, Zhang Tie was instantly served as the god of wealth. As long as Zhang Tie had a requirement, a great number of people would swarm up at once.

...

In the big steaming bath pool which was over 200 square meters, after waving his hand to tell some waiters to leave, Zhang Tie took off his bathrobe and slid into the warm and comfortable pool. He was thinking about a very tricky thing in a completely quiet and relaxed state.

"What about Miss Daina?"

"Who am I? How would I make Miss Daina believe in my words and leave Blackhot City together with me? In the final analysis, I'm just an average student of her. She might have already forgotten about my name. I'm not qualified to influence her choice on such an important thing."

Zhang Tie thought about this question for one hour in the bath pool. He even thought about abducting her out of there. Finally, he realized that it wouldn't work.

...

When Zhang Tie came out of the bath pool in bathrobe, over 30 waiters and female servants were waiting for him in the dressing room with his outfits. They were waiting for Zhang Tie's choice. All of the outfits were the top-class ones in Blackhot City...

Chapter 509: A Visit to the Headquarters of the No. 39 Division

After staying in Black Gold Hotel, on the following afternoon Zhang Tie left the deluxe presidential suite in wholly new clothes and sat in a black deluxe car which was arranged by the hotel. He then came to the Headquarters of the No. 39 Division of Blackhot City.

The migration certificates of Norman Empire were managed by the military, which must be issued by the local army. Therefore, he could not take away his friends and his friends' family members from Blackhot City without the consent of No. 39 Division.

Zhang Tie estimated that he would take away 8-10 people this time, some of them were even serving the No. 39 Division, which made it more difficult. Therefore, he decided to visit Colonel Leibniz, the supreme officer of the No. 39 Division.

Colonel Leibniz was also the supreme military officer of Norman Empire in Blackhot City. As long as he nodded, everything could be managed in Blackhot City. Although it was tricky, Zhang Tie believed that it would not be difficult than how those big clans silently transferred their whole clans. To the final analysis, almost all the problems in this world could be managed by money. As long as you had money, you could almost drive everything.

"I would give the same thing that those clans of CSIF had promised to Leibniz and the No. 39 Division." Zhang Tie was not brave enough to say this half a year ago; however, at this moment, even though he didn't use his influence in Ice and Snow Wilderness, he was still confident about making money by his all-purpose medicament.

After leaving Hidden Dragon Island for some months, Zhang Tie estimated that he had already made at least 1.2 million gold coins through the cooperation of Long Wind Business Group as the all-

purpose medicament became gradually improved and the completion of Jinwu Castle. Besides, he also made hundreds of thousands of gold coins through his elder brother's channels. Zhang Tie could never imagine such an amount of money one year ago. No matter where he put it, he could do a lot of things with such an amount of money.

The Iron Blood Camp of the No. 39 Division had been dispatched to other places for special training. Such an elite troop would rarely stay in the camp for too long. The Scouts Camp was not in Blackhot City at this moment, either. Having no chance to see those brothers and friends in Iron Blood Camp and Scouts Camp, Zhang Tie felt a bit regretful.

After coming out of the Black Gold Hotel, Zhang Tie was thinking about Miss Daina on the way. Until then did he realize that he rarely know her.

When he was a student, he just fell in love with her secretly like an idiot. After school each day, he would hide behind the bus station to enjoy her beautiful back. Besides knowing her name, her vocation as a biology teacher of 'No. 7 National Male Middle School' in Blackhot City and from where she would get on the bus after school, Zhang Tie knew nothing more about her.

What a tragedy!

When Zhang Tie was waving his head in the car for the former tragedy, he arrived at the headquarters of the No. 39 Division. His car was stopped by the guard outside the headquarters.

The driver in deep blue uniform wearing a sea-captain's hat looked around Zhang Tie, "Your excellency, you need to present your certificate!"

Zhang Tie took out his special pass of Iron Horn Corps and passed it to the guard. After glancing at it, the guardian gave it back to Zhang Tie with two hands; additionally, he gave a salute, allowing Zhang Tie to enter the yard of the headquarters.

After parking the car, the driver quickly got off the car and helped Zhang Tie opened the door. After that, Zhang Tie stepped his shiny black shoes out of the car.

Watching this place, Zhang Tie recalled when he came here last time. He really felt like having been here for three decades.

"Wait for me here!"

"As you wish!"

Zhang Tie got off the car and walked towards the headquarters. He still remembered the location of Colonel Leibniz's office. On the way there, all the military officers and soldiers who passed by Zhang Tie glanced at him for a few seconds silently as they muttered, "Is this a big figure from Nordingburg?"

At this time, after putting on a set of outfit that could not be afforded by his dad even after 10 years of work, Zhang Tie looked very excellent from both inside to outside. The outstanding personality that Zhang Tie formed on the battle field was utterly different from those toyboys who only knew how to coax women. If those toyboys were brass, Zhang Tie was gold.

When he entered the building, he encountered another man coming out.

After seeing each other, they were both shocked.

"First Lieutenant Vessie, long time no see!" Zhang Tie greeted him with a smile. Although it was only a bit longer than one year, this second lieutenant adviser of Leibniz had one more star on his rank. If such a low-rank military officer who was far away from the frontier wanted to be promoted, he had to gain the appreciation from his superior. Given it, first lieutenant Vessie must have gained the appreciation of Colonel Leibniz.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Vessie almost could not connect this Zhang Tie with the boy who was escorted into the headquarters from the prison of Blackhot City. After Zhang Tie greeted him, the

First Lieutenant Vessie changed his face at once.

"Zhang...you're back?" realizing the sensitiveness of Zhang Tie's status, First Lieutenant Vessie swallowed back Zhang Tie's name with a dumbfounded look.

"I came back a couple of days ago. I've already met those brothers of the Ministry of Supervision in Blapei, there's no problem!" Zhang Tie briefed, "Is Colonel Leibniz inside?"

"Colonel?"

"Yes, I need his help. If he's not there, can you help me reserve it?" Zhang Tie didn't think that he could see the supreme military officer of Blackhot City the moment he came here. Influential figures like Leibniz could not be easily seen in Blackhot City without reservation. Whereas, Zhang Tie also guessed that the Ministry of Supervision of the Corps had already told Colonel Leibniz about his arrival. Therefore, Colonel Leibniz should not be too surprised about his arrival.

"What a coincidence! Colonel has just come back after an inspection of the troop. If you come here half an hour later, I'm afraid that the Colonel would have left. Follow me, I will notice it for you!" Knowing that Zhang Tie was special, First Lieutenant Vessie directly led Zhang Tie into the building of the headquarters and towards the office of Colonel Leibniz.

"How did you do in Jinyun Country in the past year?" First Lieutenant Vessie asked out of curiosity on the way.

"Hmm, not bad. After arriving at the rewarded prefecture of Huaiyuan Palace, I was sent to the Hidden Dragon Island and stayed there for a period!" Zhang Tie revealed some information about his experience in Huaiyuan Palace.

If First Lieutenant Vessie understood the clan systems of these big clans, he should know the position of Hidden Dragon Island in Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie knew it clearly that he had to display his energy to a certain degree, instead of always being low-key, even though he just disguised as a powerful one with the banner of Huaiyuan Palace in case of being scorned by others. This would also be helpful to what he was going to do.

Humans were all realistic animals. If he was a dead dog, nobody would like to glance at him or kick him. Additionally, most of people would be pleasant to help a guy who might become the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace instead of a penniless guy.

As Zhang Tie had expected, after hearing the words "rewarded prefecture", "Huaiyuan Palace" and "Hidden Dragon Island", First Lieutenant Vessie revealed a bigger smile. In the following chat, he gradually improved the relationship between him and Zhang Tie after praising Zhang Tie's military exploits in Blackhot city.

After coming to a quiet reception room outside the office area of Colonel Leibniz, First Lieutenant Vessie asked Zhang Tie to take a rest on the sofa as Colonel Leibniz was holding a meeting. He then waited in the office area to notice Colonel Leibniz after meeting.

First Lieutenant Vessie was very enthusiastic.

Zhang Tie nodded, "Fine, you go first. I will wait here!"

After saying sorry to Zhang Tie, Vessie left.

There was only one snowwhite female secretary with the rank of first lieutenant in the military uniform typing words in the room. She was very beautiful in short black hair. Zhang Tie was rightly facing that female secretary.

After exchanging glances with that female secretary, Zhang Tie smiled, so did the female. After that, she changed her sitting posture and started to type words seriously once again...

Chapter 510: A Strategic Material

The elegant female first lieutenant sat straight and continued typing words. However, Zhang Tie had already sensed her restless aura.

In Donder's words, their invisible life magnetic fields were colliding with each other. The so-called 'love at first sight' was actually due to the dialogue between two life magnetic fields.

Zhang Tie liked such a woman, who was like a Faerie Dragon T9 roadster that was burning alcohol. She could be easily lit without a warm-up. As long as it was started up, it could soon bring its driver a perfect experience and a strong sense of manipulation, as if the car and the driver were combined in one.

Sitting on the sofa, Zhang Tie appreciated the woman carefully while she typed words.

One minute passed, and after feeling Zhang Tie's appreciative look the female first lieutenant raised her head once again and revealed a smile towards Zhang Tie which seemed to imply something that could not be easily identified. Her look even contained encouragement.

Zhang Tie then strode forward and stopped in front of her. After that, he put it straightforwardly, "Beautiful First Lieutenant, are you married?"

The female first Lieutenant became stunned for a short while as she blinked her eyes towards Zhang Tie in a cute way. It seemed that she had not imagined that Zhang Tie would ask this question, "Not yet!"

Zhang Tie smiled as he picked up a pen from her desk and wrote down his room number in Black Gold Hotel on a piece of white paper. After that, he moved back to his seat.

The female first lieutenant revealed an enchanting smile towards

Zhang Tie. After that, she put that piece of paper into her drawer.

...

First Lieutenant came back in a few minutes.

"I'm sorry to make you wait so long. The Colonel says I can take you to his office!" First Lieutenant Vessie told Zhang Tie.

"No problem, can we leave now?"

"Yes, please follow me!"

...

It had been more than one year since Zhang Tie had seen Colonel Leibniz again in his office. Compared to one year ago, Colonel Leibniz's appearance remained unchanged.

Colonel Leibniz watched Zhang Tie while an amazed look flashed in his eyes. He could still remember how Zhang Tie looked one year ago. Comparing it to Zhang Tie's current image, Leibniz became more admiring of Huaiyuan Palace. In his eyes, only Huaiyuan Palace could make Zhang Tie look so noble after just one year. Huaiyuan Palace had displayed its rich clan background through Zhang Tie once again.

Perhaps Zhang Tie was a descendant of a big figure in Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, Huaiyuan Palace spent so much effort in taking care of him. After such a whim flashed across his mind, Colonel Leibniz smiled inside.

"Please take a seat, First Lieutenant Zhang Tie!" Colonel Leibniz summoned Zhang Tie to sit on the opposite side of his desk. "It's my great pleasure to see you again. I have to say, you always bring me some surprise each time I see you!"

"Hopefully, I could also satisfy you this time, colonel!" Zhang Tie smiled as he replied with a pun in a very generous way.

"I already know your purpose for coming here from the Ministry of Supervision of the Corps. Privately, I feel very proud to be your

friend. However, from another perspective your request is very tricky!"

"I know. I'm here to have a good talk about it with you. We can manage this in a moderate manner!"

Colonel Leibniz then nodded. Silently he took out a document from the desk and passed it to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie stood up to take it over. At the sight of the Class-C Confidentiality mark on the cover, Zhang Tie became slightly stunned as he glanced at Colonel Leibniz.

"No problem!"

Zhang Tie flipped open the document, the contents of which made him slightly dumbfounded. It was a military analysis report of Norman Empire, the topic of which was his all-purpose medicament.

Zhang Tie skimmed the full text. Finally, his eyes focused on the end of the report, which read, "From today on, all-purpose medicament will become the LV 1 strategic material of the military of Norman Empire. Besides being delivered by the Logistics General Assembly Department of Norman Empire, each corps can purchase all-purpose medicament themselves for storage according to their demands!"

Zhang Tie then raised his head and looked at Colonel Leibniz, who was also staring at him with gleaming eyes. After that, Colonel Leibniz took out a vial of all-purpose medicament which was marked as Manjusaka from his drawer.

"This is the all-purpose medicament pushed by Huaiyuan Palace. The military of the Norman Empire received 100,000 vials of all-purpose medicament because of the relationship between them and Huaiyuan Palace. After a comprehensive appraisal, the military of Norman Empire ranked this medicament as a Class-A strategic material. Before this, the military of Norman Empire only

had one strategic material——alchemist's bomb. Now, they have one more strategic material!"

Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'Does this mean that the news that I can make all-purpose medicament has been spread in the public? That's impossible. After the murder, Huaiyuan Palace had adopted many means to cover the fact that I am the inventor of all-purpose medicament. The Long Wind Business Group even made some fake production bases of all-purpose medicament. Therefore, only a few people could know that I'm the very producer of all-purpose medicament.'

Although he was shocked inside, Zhang Tie's expression remained unchanged.

Colonel Leibniz let out a sigh as he looked at that vial of all-purpose medicament in his hand like gazing at his mistress. At the same time, he stroked it slightly. "This kind of medicament really has a wide range of purposes. It could almost be applied in all aspects except for killing people. It can respond to many emergencies in place of most other inferior medicament and grants soldiers with a new life by curing wounds and diseases, improving their fighting ability and recovering ability, and also greatly simplify the overall logistics supply system of troops at critical moments. According to my rough estimation of the Norman Empire military, if this medicament could be used among troops, as long as each soldier could have one, the fighting strength of the whole troop could increase by at least 40%. The survival rate of soldiers in the wild could rise by 61%. Casualties in war could reduce by 55%. Comprehensive logistics expenditure on troops could reduce by 31%. Field hospital expenses could decrease by half. What's more, this kind of medicament could be made with mass production. Do you know what this means?"

Zhang Tie didn't speak as he knew that Colonel Leibniz didn't really expect an answer. Zhang Tie was just a bit shocked. He knew the great effects of his all-purpose medicament. However, he had

never imagined that it could be widely accepted in the army.

"All-purpose medicament helps average soldiers most. If each soldier of the corps could be given one, the overall fighting strength of Iron Horn Corps would increase by one whole level, upgrading it from a black iron corps to a bronze corps!"

"This item is not bad..." Zhang Tie replied meticulously in case he revealed some information.

Colonel Leibniz let out a sigh, "It's more than that, this item is marvellous and admirable. Besides its many applications in battle fields, it's also very effective in keeping women young. Additionally, it could make men more robust in bed. Moreover, it could cure many diseases without any side effects. Therefore, the military of Norman Empire spent a lot buying 100,000 vials of all-purpose medicament from Huaiyuan Palace. However, after it was shared by some bigwigs and noblewomen in the capital of Norman Empire and Nordinburg, the troops on the frontlines could only receive a small portion of the order. According to regulations, Iron Horn Corps should have gained 5000 vials in the first batch. But actually, they only got a little more than 2000 vials. Finally, only 70 vials were dispatched to me under the supervision of the military affairs chancellor. If not for that, these vials would have long been cleared in the capital. None of them could flow in Nordinburg, not to mention Iron Horn Corps and Division No. 39!"

"You mean..."

Colonel Leibniz looked at Zhang Tie with a serious look. "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, I don't want to bring you trouble, but I have to do something for the benefit of Division No. 39. Now that you're from Huaiyuan Palace, I believe you can get hold of such things from Huaiyuan Palace much easier than us. Therefore, in one word, I know you want to take people away from Blackhot City, but you have to pay 30 vials of all-purpose medicament for one migration certificate. As long as you can bring me all-purpose medicament, I don't care how many people you take away, even if

you take the whole population of Blackhot City. As to your friends who have joined the army, as long as they want to go, I will let them go. How about that?"

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he asked in a weird tone, "30 vials of all-purpose medicament for one person?"

Colonel Leibniz twisted his body on the chair, embarrassed. "Hmm, I know...it's a bit too much. If that's not possible, how about 25 vials per person?"

"25 vials?" Zhang Tie pretended to consider it on purpose. After thinking for a while, he slowly nodded.

Colonel Leibniz became very excited. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie wouldn't even bargain over the price. He moved in front of Zhang Tie from behind the desk before putting his big hands onto Zhang Tie's shoulders. "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, you're truly a man of Division No. 39. I've not backed the wrong horse!"

...

After leaving No. 39 Division's headquarters, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. He had not imagined that he could make such a difficult thing so easily. What was more unexpected was that his all-purpose medicament aroused such great attention.

After glancing at his watch, Zhang Tie told the driver to drive the car to the rendezvous between him and Barley——close to the gate of the No. 7 National Male Middle School.

Zhang Tie arrived there almost 15 minutes in advance. However, he had not expected Barley and Sharwin to be standing there already. Therefore, Zhang Tie had the driver park on their side.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's familiar face through the window, Sharwin became very thrilled. The moment Zhang Tie opened the door, Sharwin had already come inside. Closely after that, he punched Zhang Tie's chest fiercely. Zhang Tie returned the punch. They then burst out in laughter in unison. Barley then also came

in.

The car started once again while the separator between the front and back seats rose automatically. After that, the space for the back seats was isolated.

...

"How's going?" Zhang Tie asked them.

"I have no problems!" Sharwin became excited. "But five people in my family will leave. Is there a problem with the migration certificates?"

"No problem, has your mom agreed to leave?"

"Since Sharwin started to make money, he became the boss of the family!" Barley added. "I told Sharwin not to tell his asshole stepfather about that in case our plan was exposed. We will just take him when we leave!"

Zhang Tie nodded. 'Barley is indeed considerable,' he thought to himself. "What about you?" Zhang Tie asked Barley.

Barley scratched his head slightly in an embarrassed manner, "I want to do business outside. However, my dad said he wanted to see you before making his decision!"

Zhang Tie understood at once, 'Barley's dad wants to see whether I am believable and have the ability and energy to do that.'

Zhang Tie didn't care about it. Compared to the fate and destiny of his brother's family, this was nothing serious. If they truly needed his help, Zhang Tie would even carry their family members to Black Gold Hotel one after another. "I'm living in the Presidential Suite room number 6 of Black Gold Hotel. When does your father have time? I will invite him to eat in Black Gold Hotel. Set up a time by yourself, I will have a car pick you up!"

Barley also understood Zhang Tie's words, which made Barley feel warm inside. 'That's my brother.'

After that, Barley told Zhang Tie what he'd experienced in finding the God Bless Association.

Some of the God Bless Association had not passed the physical examination of Norman Empire like Barley and Sharwin. Therefore, after graduation they started to work hard. However, as Zhang Tie had predicted, among the remaining members of God Bless Association, except for Potter, all the others changed their attitudes instantly the moment they heard about Zhang Tie in case being involved with him brought trouble. Someone had even clarified the distance between them and Zhang Tie by swearing Zhang Tie was a liar in front of Barley.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie sighed inside. He didn't blame them as they were all small figures and commoners. Because of the great pressures of life, they chose to keep themselves away from trouble. Few commoners knew why he'd left Blackhot City. Additionally, he appreciated them for not immediately revealing him to the secret police of Norman Empire.

After graduation, many people had realized that his disguise as a damn father underground was just a joke. Few people would believe in it now.

This was the reality!

"How's Potter?"

"He's still digging the mines. Before digging, he would always kneel down and pray. At the beginning, he was mocked by many people in the mines. Now, they have become used to it. After he was told that you're coming back, Potter was very happy. He wished to see you. However, as his vacation starts tomorrow he could not leave the mining area today!"

Thinking of that emaciated youth, Zhang Tie had mixed feelings. "Who else is in Potter's family?"

"No one else. He was always living with his relative's family and

was poorly treated. After work, he mailed some money to the relative a few times and didn't return there anymore. He lives in the mining area and has a meal with us occasionally!"

"What about Bagdad and the other people?"

"Their vacation starts January 2nd. Many people of God Bless Association are also in troops, who could be hardly contacted!"

...

After making a round of the Blackhot City in the car and talking with Zhang Tie for a while, Barley and Sharwin got off the car in a side street.

After that, Zhang Tie had the driver drive to the Golden Roc Bank of Blackhot City, where he had the personnel in Golden Roc Bank send a message to his elder brother written in the secret language that could only be understood by Zhang Tie and his elder brother.

When Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Yang had already become a VIP guest of Golden Roc Bank. Therefore, Zhang Tie could contact Zhang Yang in an easier and safer way.

After finishing these things it was already dark. Therefore, Zhang Tie left Golden Roc Bank and returned to the Black Gold Hotel.

The moment he opened the door of his presidential suite, Zhang Tie heard the cheers of Beverly in the huge, luxurious bath pool. When he left Beverly's home this morning, Zhang Tie had already told her to come here and wait for him.

Zhang Tie handed a slip of paper to the steward of his presidential suite, which contained the name and the work place of Miss Daina.

"Find the best private detective in Blackhot City and figure out all of their information for me. be careful not to influence and disturb their personal life. After that, prepare a romantic candlelit supper for me."

After delivering his orders, Zhang Tie started to undo his tie as he walked towards the bath pool.

The steward waved his hand, ordering all the others servants to leave the room...

Chapter 511: Gifts

On December 31st, the last day of the 890th year of Black Iron Calendar, the festive atmosphere in Blackhot City reached its climax. On this day, many businessmen earned most in the year around. After this day, many stores would close their doors and take rest for three days at the beginning of the near year. Therefore, numerous people had to go out for a big purchase on that day even though they rarely did shopping before.

For many people, on this day family members would unite with each other. Zhang Tie was also free today. Many things had to wait until next year to be dealt with. Therefore, Zhang Tie spent today with Beverly.

Barley's dad had not determined to leave Blackhot City yet. However, Zhang Tie had to persuade Beverly's parents today. Beverly had already mentioned it to her parents yesterday. Her parents were also worried about leaving Blackhot City for a strange yet remote place.

Beverly's mom was a typical housewife while her dad was an accountant. If her parents didn't want to leave, Beverly wouldn't go with Zhang Tie either.

Beverly was very happy today. Since this morning, she had been staying with Zhang Tie. After breakfast in the room of the hotel, Zhang Tie took her out of the hotel and selected gifts for her and her parents. After that, Zhang Tie paid an official visit to Beverly's home with these gifts and made an official communication with her parents.

After arriving at the Avenue Bright by the very car of Black Gold Hotel, the two people had started to select items there.

This day was the most boisterous day of the year in Avenue Bright for sure. The population of the visitors in the avenue surged by several times than usual.

As he didn't know what Beverly's parents liked and what was the most appropriate gift for them, Zhang Tie let Beverly choose the proper gifts for her parents while he was only responsible for the payment. Zhang Tie enjoyed paying for his own woman. However, sending gifts was a knowledge and not only a matter of money. As it was his first time to visit her parents, the gifts should neither be too casual nor too expensive; otherwise, it would lack sincerity or become too domineering. Beverly also knew it. Therefore, she didn't choose expensive ones like jewelry.

After wandering for awhile, Zhang Tie bought a very expensive pen for Beverly's dad which was worth about 4 gold coins and a female mink coat which was worth a bit more than 3 gold coins.

After that, they returned to the car. Beverly was so happy that she wanted Zhang Tie to go home together with her.

"You've chosen your parents' gifts, but what about yours?" Zhang Tie kissed Beverly's face.

"Ah? I also have a gift?"

"Of course!"

"What is it?"

"I will not tell you. You will know about it after a short while!" after saying that, Zhang Tie told the driver to drive to Golden Roc Bank.

In a VIP hall that especially served Chinese, a director received Zhang Tie and Beverly.

"Mr. Zhang. This is the reply of your message yesterday. Please write your name on the receipt!" the director directly handed a sealed letter to Zhang Tie politely at the sight of him.

Seeing Zhang Tie opening it, the director even hurriedly moved two steps back, "Do you need a single room?"

"No need!" Zhang Tie smiled as he skimmed the message on the

letter. This letter was also written in secret words by his elder brother. Although the secret words were not senior, commoners could not easily understand them.

The message was——30000 big thorny cucumber has been sent out, which will arrive at K city in 7 days and wait there for your order.

Its meaning was as follows: A huge airship had already set out from Huaiyuan Prefecture, which carried 30,000 vials of all-purpose medicament according to your order. This airship will arrive at Kalur City in 7 days and wait for your order over there.

After reading this letter, Zhang Tie let out a sigh.

"Mr. Zhang Tie, do you have another other requirements?" the director of Golden Roc Bank asked very politely.

"Hmm, I want to make a lifetime annuity deposit financing plan for this young lady!" Zhang Tie told the director with a smile after glancing at Beverly on his side.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Beverly uttered a voice 'Argh' as she looked at Zhang Tie with an amazed look.

"Okay, fine, wait a second please, I will arrange a special personnel to deal with it for you!" the director left politely after glancing at Beverly.

Zhang Tie then patted Beverly's hand, "Don't be so surprised, that's my new year gift for you!"

"This...this would cost you too much!" Beverly became hesitated, "You'd better not do that. Having you back was my gift already. I've already been satisfied with the candlelight supper last night. No need to do that for me. I heard only rich people and big clans in Blackhot City could make annuity deposit financing plan...I don't need them..."

Saying this, Beverly stood up from the sofa and wanted to pull Zhang Tie away. With a slight draw, Zhang Tie forced her to sit

back. He then pulled the hand with ruby in front of him and kissed it. Closely after that, he watched Beverly with a serious look, "I've told you that as long as I can do it, I will definitely try my best to give you more!"

"But...it's really unnecessary!"

"No, it's necessary; Bennie, it's a chaotic world. It would be worse in the future. No one knows what will happen tomorrow. If I die or may not be by your side, I will not be able to protect you and look after you anymore. I hope you can live a happy life wherever you go. I hope you can live in a dignified and guaranteed way. I hope you don't have to worry about money. In many people's eyes, this might be very vulgar; however, this is indeed the best gift that I want to give to you!"

Beverly watched Zhang Tie while her beautiful eyes were filled with tears at once. That was her favorite men, who was frank, enthusiastic, straightforward and never hypocritical. No matter what, he could always give her the best thing; even at the risk of his life, he would have pushed her away without any hesitation.

"Don't cry anymore. Give me a smile, that would bring me a sense of achievement!" Zhang Tie wiped off her tears using his finger before making a joke, "What if I give you a smile?"

Saying that, Zhang Tie rolled his eyes and blew his cheeks towards Beverly, making her laugh at once.

Seeing someone entering the room, Beverly hurriedly lowered her head while wiping off her tears.

...

"Hello, sir, I'm the financial commissioner of Golden Roc Bank. It's my great pleasure to serve you. I was told that you need us to make a lifetime annuity deposit financing plan for this young lady?"

"Yes!"

"Can you tell me about your requests and the details about this young lady. I will make a proper plan for her. You can choose a proper deposit financing plan according to my suggestions!"

"I want to know about the average per capita income of cities in Eastern Continent."

"Eastern Continent is very prosperous. It could not be matched by Blackson Humans Corridor. Based on our statistics, the average per capita annual income of a commoner in Blackhot City is 10 gold coins and 76 silver coins, the per capita annual income of people in some developed countries of Blackson Humans Corridor can reach above 30 gold coins. However, in Eastern Continent, residents in most of cities could earn more than 40 gold coins a year. Amazingly, residents in some very developed and prosperous regions could earn more than 200 gold coins! Of course, the figure would decline in some relatively under-developed regions and relatively enclosed rural areas."

"Okay, please calculate how much do I need to deposit in your bank if I want to get 2000 gold coins a year from you?"

"Is it a lifetime annuity?"

"Yup!"

"Will you deposit it at once or by installment?"

"At once!"

"Will it take effect right now or in the future?"

"Tomorrow. It'd better take effect from January 1st of the 891st year of Black Iron Calendar!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the financing commissioner started to calculate rapidly on a piece of paper. Meanwhile, he looked up data from the forms of a document and gave Zhang Tie an answer very soon.

"If so, you need to pay 34,482 gold coins for this lifetime annuity

financing plan. From tomorrow, this young lady could get 500 gold coins from each branch of Golden Roc Bank at the first day of each season. We will open a special annuity account for this young lady. All of her annuity would be transferred in this special account. The interest of the capital in this account will be calculated according to current deposit. The annuity of 34,482 gold coins could be inherited by one or several people appointed by this young lady. She could also withdraw all of them when this lifetime annuity plan is on due!"

After hearing his explanation, Zhang Tie directly drew out of 4 gold checks from the gold check folder in his coat, each of them was worth 10,000 gold coins, "I will choose this plan with 40,000 gold coins!"

"If you input 40,000 gold coins at once, this young lady will gain 2320 gold coins a year, 580 gold coins per season."

Zhang Tie nodded.

After that, he dealt with the procedures for Beverly. The financial commissioner of Golden Roc Bank brought an inkpad. After checking Beverly's palm, he asked Beverly to press her fingers onto it.

"Each person's ten fingerprints are distinctive. After collecting this young lady's fingerprints, we will extract the features of her fingerprints and convert them into digital code. This will be her exclusive identification code in our bank. We will preserve this code in the large-scale steaming computer data center of the headquarters of Golden Roc Bank. After that, this young lady could easily withdraw her annuity through her hands and the annuity withdrawal code that she had set!"

After making the model for her fingerprints, the financing commissioner of Golden Roc Bank directly passed out that model through a small window on the side door of the room. Someone took it away. After that, the financing commissioner brought a

metal box and taught Zhang Tie and Beverly how to set code. He then left. After Beverly set the code, someone took the metal box away. After that, the financing commissioner reappeared with a document and asked Beverly to sign on it. Here it came to an end.

The moment this process was finished, Zhang Tie had a strong sense of satisfaction and happiness. Like how he felt when he conquered Beverly on bed, such a feeling made Zhang Tie puzzled. He didn't know why he was so satisfied with such a pure payment. Until he held Beverly's hand while walking out of the gate of Golden Roc Bank and watching her happy look did he realize it right away.

——Whether on bed or not, whether to conquer or pay, men actually wanted to tell women that they were capable of love. A man who was able to love a woman was happy and satisfied; perhaps, men were trying to do the same thing in their whole life.

After leaving Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie and Beverly went to her home and met her parents.

Beverly's parents were commoners in Blackhot City. They had sophisticated moods for their daughter bringing home such a big boy. Since last year, they had heard many stories about Zhang Tie from their daughter. However, it was the first time for them to see Zhang Tie.

Beverly's mom was gentle after knowing her daughter's love affair; however, her dad became solemn at the sight of Zhang Tie as if he had seen a thief who was stealing a treasure from his house...

...

Chapter 512: A Sacred Contract

Perhaps every father feels uncomfortable when they see their daughter coming back home with a man. Zhang Tie could feel that Beverly's father disliked him. Although he controlled himself, he finally couldn't stand it after supper.

After supper, Beverly and her mom cleaned the bowls and plates in the kitchen, leaving Zhang Tie and her dad in the parlor. Before entering the kitchen, Beverly even glanced at Zhang Tie with a worried look. Zhang Tie replied to her with a reassuring smile.

"Bennie always talks about you at home. I know she likes you!" Beverly's dad sized up Zhang Tie's expensive costume with a fastidious and complex gaze through a pair of thick, crystal glasses, like he was reviewing a nice balance sheet. As accountants were always censorious, they usually paid more attention to the internal key logical connections instead of the surface. "I know how rich men live. I might not be able to afford your clothes for many years. I also know the attitudes of those rich people toward women. You only need to answer me this: Will marry my daughter in the future?"

Soon after this question came a clanging sound from the kitchen. A metal plate fell on the ground.

Beverly's house was less than 100 square meters, only three bedrooms with one parlor. Beverly's father didn't lower his voice. He didn't ask this question at the table in front of Beverly and her mom because he might not have wanted to make Beverly embarrassed. However, if he asked Zhang Tie at this moment, Beverly would not feel embarrassed anymore. Additionally, Beverly could also find out Zhang Tie's opinion.

Zhang Tie had not been prepared for her dad to ask such a sharp question at the beginning of their talk. He understood the hidden meaning clearly—why would a father believe in the nonsense of

a man who had not even shown responsibility for the future of his daughter and left Blackhot City?

Zhang Tie became silent for a while. The sounds in the kitchen returned to normal. However, Zhang Tie knew that Beverly must've been very tense in the kitchen.

"Mr. Joan, perhaps you don't believe in my words. However, I don't care how much my clothes are worth at all. This is meaningless for me. It's not because I have enough money, but because I only care about whether I can survive!"

The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth Beverly's dad was stunned. The movements in kitchen also slowed down.

"Before coming to Blackhot City over 2 months ago, I almost died. I was hunted by a LV 10 strong fighter. Perhaps Mr. Joan doesn't understand the concept of LV 10 strong fighters. According to my knowledge, before Blackhot City was merged into the territory of the Norman Empire, there were less than 5 strong fighters across Blackhot City. I couldn't beat him. Therefore, I was struck off a peak of a mountain, which was thousands of meters high. Fortunately, I didn't die. In the process of rolling down, thanks to the twigs and vines in the valley, I finally fell into a pond and survived by myself..."

"After that, two strong fighters hunted me as my head was to be rewarded with 5000 gold coins. I almost died!"

"I joined Iron Blood Camp, Division No. 39 and stayed for over one year, during which period, I almost died many other times. I was shot by bolts covered with blue frost and almost died. In Kalur theater, Iron Blood Camp Division No. 39 was surrounded and outnumbered by Black Feathers Corps of the Sun Dynasty. Although we finally broke out of the encirclement, I almost died there too. That time, I suffered 186 wounds and 47 bone fractures all over my body. Finally, I was struck by the sky battle qi of a LV 8 military officer from Black Feathers Corps. As a result, my guts

were severely wounded. My brothers of Iron Blood Camp sent me to a field hospital. When one doctor caught sight of how much fresh blood and wounds were over me, he told my brothers that I was already dead. My brothers of Iron Blood Camp even put blades to the doctors' necks and forced them to rescue me! Finally, I survived. I thought I was lucky. After that, I found out that a respectable officer of Iron Blood Camp sacrificed himself in order to save me!"

"When I returned to Jinyun Country, I almost died twice too. One time, I was betrayed by a person and was hunted by many killers in Dragon Cave. I was almost thrown into the magma. Thankfully, my master saved me. Another time was the event in Heavens Cold City. You might have heard about this event. As one who participated in and experienced this event, I know how it felt when the troop was surrounded by millions of demonized puppets. You would never know how risky it was when a person was surrounded by tens of thousands of demonized puppets that were not afraid of pain or death like machines. The demonized puppets left 137 wounds on me. These ones have just recovered in the last few days!"

Zhang Tie was very calm, as if talking about other people's affairs.

"I'm not showing off. I'm just telling you what I've experienced and the risks that I've faced in my life. To be honest, although I'm sitting here and talking with you, I'm not sure if I'll still be alive and talking with you and Bennie in half a year, because I don't know what the next danger is. I'm not sure whether I can survive each and every danger. Therefore, I really don't know how to answer you, as I don't know whether I'll still be alive by then."

"I don't want my family members to live in fear and concern every day. Wives are worried about losing their husbands. Kids are worried that their dad will not come back after going out! The biggest responsibility of a man, a husband, is to keep his family

free from fear, instead of bringing fear to them. Pitifully, I cannot make it so!"

"As long as I'm alive, as long as I am with Bennie, I will exert my full effort to protect her, treasure her and love her. As long as I'm with her, she will never be bullied by others. I will let her be happy and treat her happiness and smile as my pride and achievement. I can promise you that if I am alive in the future, when I feel I'm qualified to be a husband, I will marry her if Bennie would still like to marry me at that moment. I will be happy to have Bennie as my wife."

When Zhang Tie left, Beverly sent Zhang Tie downstairs with red eyes. She hugged him tightly as she pressed her face on Zhang Tie's chest for a long time before letting him go.

If Zhang Tie slept in Bennie's home today, he would make her parents embarrassed. It was also improper if Bennie directly left with Zhang Tie. Beverly lied to her parents that she was playing with her friends last night. As she was already grown up, her parents would not keep her under their strict control. However, if Beverly didn't come back tonight with the same excuse, she must have underestimated her parents' intelligence quotient.

...

After leaving Beverly's home, Zhang Tie sat in the car alone and watched the gradually depopulating Blackhot City. He had to pass this New Year's Eve alone in the luxurious presidential suite in Black Gold Hotel.

The moment he returned to Black Gold Hotel, Zhang Tie caught sight of a familiar shadow getting out of the carriage outside the hotel. Given her black, short hair, beautiful face and the alluring, mellow shanks, Zhang Tie instantly recognized her.

When Zhang Tie got off the car, the beautiful female first lieutenant also caught sight of Zhang Tie. After that, they smiled at each other. Without saying anything, Zhang Tie offered his arm

when the female came over, reached out and linked her arm with Zhang Tie's.

"First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, you're too audacious. How can you dare to stay in Blackhot City at this moment?" the female asked.

Hearing her question, Zhang Tie finally knew why she didn't come to him yesterday. She must have discovered his background. She must be a meticulous person.

...

Twenty minutes later, the female first lieutenant blushed after drinking some wine whilst inclining against the sofa in the bar of the luxurious presidential suite, which made her seem like she was waiting for Zhang Tie to violate her. Embracing her with one arm, Zhang Tie held a glass while rocking the liquid around in the bottom.

Mellow wine and beauties. Zhang Tie didn't know how long he could enjoy such a nice life. He looked a bit vacant. All the words that he'd said in Beverly's home were true. After experiencing so many dangers and partings between dead people and living ones, Zhang Tie really didn't know whether he'd still be alive in this world in half a year or one year. As the producer of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie was not sure whether a knight would suddenly flash in front of him and punched him to ashes.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood the thoughts and mentalities of those military officers who were always spending their time on women and alcohol whenever they were free.

It was because they didn't know how long they could survive. As long as they were alive, they would enjoy and make full use of their lives.

"What...did you mean by asking me that in the reception room?"

"That what?" Zhang Tie guzzled down the wine before throwing it onto the carpet.

"You asked...whether I've gotten married or not?" The female first lieutenant turned around and watched Zhang Tie with fascinating eyes. "You men always like to play jokes. I thought...I thought you were kidding me...actually...actually I've already gotten married..."

After saying this, the female first lieutenant lay face down the sofa and kept her eyes closed, waiting for Zhang Tie to violate her.

She waited for one minute and received no reply. After another half a minute, she found that Zhang Tie had already helped her gather her clothes and kept his hands away from her.

She then turned around and found Zhang Tie had already sat down on the next sofa and was panting heavily. He opened a new bottle of liquor and poured half of it into his mouth.

"What's wrong?" the woman became dumbfounded as she didn't understand why Zhang Tie would stop at the most critical moment.

"It's too late. You'd better go back home." Zhang Tie raised his head and finished the remaining half of the bottle of liquor.

"Argh! But why?"

"You won't understand!" Zhang Tie shook his head as he didn't want to explain it. He then pulled the bell rope beside him. Soon after that, the steward appeared outside the door of the bar.

After seeing this, the woman could only turn around and sit up. As she tidied her clothes, she watched Zhang Tie with a confused look.

"Your excellency, what can I do for you?"

"Send this woman back home in my car!"

"Please, lady..." the steward made a gesture politely. After glancing at Zhang Tie with an embarrassed expression, the female turned around and picked up her overcoat before walking away in

high heeled shoes, while rocking her buttocks.

After only one minute, the steward reappeared in front of Zhang Tie. "Your excellency, I've had the lady sent away. Do you have any other demands?"

Zhang Tie waved his hand, then the steward left silently. Sitting in the room alone, Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. He knew that if what he did tonight was exposed, someone would swear at him as an idiot for sure. Perhaps other men would never have stopped in that situation. However, he had already crossed the line in his books.

In this age, many people had not treated their wedding banquets seriously. Neither did they treat others' marriages seriously. However, Zhang Tie regarded weddings as the most sacred contract to exist between humans. In his opinion, a wedding was the most sacred, inviolable contract between two partners.

Zhang Tie's opinion about weddings originated from his parents. His parents established a family through marriage. Although his dad and mom always lived calmly in Blackhot City, sometimes they even quarrelled with each other and didn't speak to each other for a few days. All this didn't influence Zhang Tie's views about marriage from his parents and his respect about the sacred marriage between man and woman.

Zhang Tie could not imagine how his family would be if one of his parents had betrayed their marriage during the past dozens of years. As the old Chinese proverb went——don't impose on others what you don't desire. Similarly, what he didn't want his own family to face should not be imposed on other families.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, the contract of marriage between a man and a woman was more sacred and solemn than any other laws. He preferred to violate the laws and regulations of the Norman Empire than to destroy the sacredness and solemnity of a contract of marriage.

Therefore, no matter how much he liked a married woman, he would not touch her. Because Zhang Tie thought these women were protected by their sacred contract of marriage. Even if this contract became trivial in the eyes of the ones who'd established it, Zhang Tie still considered it inviolable.

Additionally, even though Zhang Tie had not met the female's husband, regardless of the man's looks, job, experience and talents, Zhang Tie felt men should at least respect each other, even if they didn't know each other or were enemies. With this respect, one man would not steal another man's object. No matter what, men should have some common values.

Zhang Tie didn't think he was noble. From the beginning, he still felt that he was a man and had his morals. Therefore, he stopped at the most critical moment. There were so many women in the world, but Zhang Tie was not a love king. He would not touch those women who had gotten married. If a thing was pleasant, it should not hurt others.

This was a respect given to both others and himself.

In many people's eyes, this moral standard was hilarious. However, Zhang Tie didn't care. He wanted to satisfy himself.

Zhang Tie immersed himself in the icy bath pool for one hour before recovering his composure.

Zhang Tie cultivated himself silently over the long and deserted New Year's Eve in the empty room of the luxurious presidential suite of Black Gold Hotel.

...

When Zhang Tie and his brothers of the Hit-Plane Brotherhood reunited with each other after New Year's Eve, everything started to run rapidly.

After meeting Zhang Tie, Barley's father was the first one who determined to leave Blackhot City. The family members of Doug,

Hista and Leit also agreed to leave the city after Zhang Tie's visit. Although some of them were still a bit hesitant to leave, they were finally moved when Zhang Tie told them to just take it as a vacation to the seaside if they didn't like the idea of leaving Blackhot City, and that they could come back in three months if they wanted. Even Beverly's parents agreed to take a look in Jinyun Country. If they were not used to that place, they could come back in three months.

Everything was panning out well. After the best private detective in Blackhot City told Zhang Tie about Miss Daina's recent situation, Zhang Tie started to make a clear plan.

It wasn't until then that Zhang Tie discovered Miss Daina had grown up in a single parent family. After her father died, the only family she had left was a paralyzed elder brother who lay on a bed for many years. Because of her elder brother, Miss Daina didn't get married for many years. She just made money to cure her elder brother's disease.

It would cost her a lot to cure her elder brother and employ two people to look after him. Therefore, even on vacations, Miss Daina still worked two part-time jobs.

In one job she was hired as a private teacher by a rich lady. Another job was as the instructor of the No. 4 Female Middle School in Blackhot City on holidays.

With the two part-time jobs, Miss Daina could gain another two gold coins and 74 silver coins. With her income from No. 7 National Male Middle School as a teacher, she could make over 40 gold coins a year. However, she had to spend over 30 gold coins on her elder brother.

Although Miss Daina looked as brilliant as a goddess, she didn't live well in her daily life. She had to bear a great amount of pressure from the cost of living. However, she didn't expose her stress to others or complain about it. Instead, she just bore it

silently. She buried all her troubles in fascinating smiles. She looked elegant whenever Zhang Tie saw her in or out of the camp.

After knowing this about her, Zhang Tie thought Miss Daina was respectable. Besides being beautiful and independent, Miss Daina was strong-willed and kind.

On January 5th, the atmosphere of the New Year gradually faded away. On the same day, Zhang Tie met Susan and Fiona of the Rose Association.

When they saw Zhang Tie again, the two girls didn't smile. Instead, they just put many rings on Zhang Tie's hand.

——To my beloved baby Angel——Zhang Tie

——To my beloved baby Sharapova——Zhang Tie

——To my beloved baby Hiltina——Zhang Tie

——To my beloved baby Nya——Zhang Tie

——To my beloved baby Mia——Zhang Tie

Reading those words on the insides of the rings, Zhang Tie felt that something bad had happened. "What's wrong?"

"They're dead!" Susan and Fiona cried at once. "Before death, Angel told us to hand these items to you. She said you understood it!"

'Dead?' Zhang Tie became stunned for a second before he burst out into tears.

"How did they die? Tell me what happened!" Zhang Tie uttered in a terrifying voice as tears flew down his face.

"Soon after you left Blackhot City, Master Abyan's manor recruited some assistants. After hearing about the good treatment over here, they came given that their conditions were satisfied..." Fiona wept as what happened gradually became clear to Zhang Tie...

Chapter 513: Withering Roses

There was a graveyard on the hill over 30 kilometers away to the north outside of Blackhot City. After hearing that Angel and the other girls of Rose Association were buried here, Zhang Tie walked out of the north gate of Blackhot City on the dawn of January 7th, facing the withering, chilly wind.

Knowing that these girls had been good sisters at school, their family members decided to bury them together in the same place in case they were lonely.

The accumulated snow outside the city was thick. After each step, he would sink to his knees in the snow. Zhang Tie arrived there in two hours, one step after another, wearing an overcoat.

The five new graves were very eye-catching. Zhang Tie soon came to the front of them, which had been covered with white snow. After pulling off his gloves, Zhang Tie swept off the snow from the graves, revealing their black and white photos.

Facing the black and white photos, Angel's blonde hair, Sharapova's beautiful face, Nya's shiny eyes, Hiltina's entangled hair and Mia's lovable dimples reappeared in front of Zhang Tie.

The time when he'd indulged with these girls seemingly happened yesterday. However, they already lay icily underground.

This was a so called parting between dead people and living ones.

Hot liquid flew out of Zhang Tie's eyes and dripped onto the icy graves.

When no more tears flowed out, Zhang Tie lowered his body and kissed each of their graves before turning around and leaving.

After leaving the graves, Zhang Tie returned to Blackhot City one step after another. At the sight of the city gate of Blackhot City, Zhang Tie didn't enter the city. Instead, he continued around towards the south of Blackhot City.

...

The animal trading market in the south of Blackhot City also became sluggish on such a cold day. Almost nobody could be seen over there. However, the manor of Master Abyan's castle outside the city looked more magnificent and beautiful than it had over one year ago, because the former castle could not match the current status of Master Abyan anymore.

Last year, Master Abyan was promoted from red robe pharmacist to orange robe pharmacist. As a result, he reached the 6th brilliant stage of pharmacists world and became the most influential figure across Blackhot City.

At this moment, Master Abyan had already joined Norman Empire and became one of the vice chairmen of the Pharmacists Association of Brunswick Province of Norman Empire. His reputation had even spread to Nordinburg, the capital along the north border of the Norman Empire. Recently, Master Abyan went to visit Nordinburg at the invitation of the Pharmacists Association of Nordinburg. It was said that he would come back in a few days.

In a strictly hierarchical country, like Norman Empire, Master Abyan could be the noblest officer in Blackhot City by becoming an orange robe pharmacist of Norman Empire. He had a great influence in many aspects. He was even more influential than Colonel Leibniz in some aspects. At least, Colonel Leibniz could not casually access Nordinburg like him. Compared to a colonel, an orange robe pharmacist was undoubtedly more favored by some big figures.

Therefore, under the great influence of Master Abyan, the deaths of Angel and the other girls of Rose Association were covered. It was just caused by an accident. As the assistants of an orange robe pharmacist, some young girls had touched some fatal things in a warehouse full of poisonous substances and fierce beasts, and they were killed. That was too "normal". This case came to an end after paying some gold coins to each family.

In the eyes of Master Abyan they were just common girls in Blackhot City, and their deaths were nothing serious at all.

Of course, they didn't die from an accident. In fact, they were murdered.

Susan and Fiona saw many weird wounds over their bodies, which were not caused by wild beasts but humans. Additionally, their blood had seemingly been drawn out. Angel's right hand was holding something tightly. Susan and Fiona spent some time trying to open her fingers, while tears dropped from their faces before taking the ring out of her hand.

According to the secret, popular "regulations" followed among girls of Rose Association, after a girl took off the jewellery gifted by a man, if she threw it away, it meant she was saying good bye to the man forever. If she still held it, it meant that she wanted to give it back to the man.

'If Angel had suffered an accident, she would have thought about saving herself instead of thinking about returning that ring back to me, as I was not present at all. It was also unnecessary to do that. Therefore, Angel's action meant that she wanted other girls of Rose Association to return the ring to me. Angel wanted to tell me that she was still awake when she took off her ring. However, she knew that she could not see me any more while she was alive, because she had predicted her own fate.

This was what Angel wanted to tell me. If it was an accident, Angel would never do that. She was doing this to tell me how she was killed.

Angel was intelligent and proud. While the other girls didn't think about it or had been unable to do this, she did it by tightly holding her ring, leaving a key message to me.

Who tortured them to death?

The answer was clear. Nobody else could have besides Master

Abyan.

If Master Abyan was an idiot, he might have lost his control about his castle or perhaps someone dared him to kill his female assistants in his castle. However, the problem was that he was not an idiot. A young, energetic and powerful vice chairman of Pharmacists Association of Brunkswick Province of Norman Empire could never lose his control about his nestle. In Blackhot City, Master Abyan was known as a strict person. Therefore, nobody would be the murderer except him. If it was done by others, Master Abyan would never manage it using his own influence.

Standing on the hill, Zhang Tie watched the manor of the magnificent castle where Master Abyan lived with icy and dead eyes.

After remembering all the details about the manor, Zhang Tie took a deep breath and closed his eyes. After half a minute, he opened his eyes. Meanwhile, he grabbed a handful of snow and rubbed it on his face. After that, he turned around and left.

...

After twenty minutes, Zhang Tie got into his exclusive car matched by Black Gold Hotel in a street of Blackhot City and shut the door, causing a "bang" sound. He tried to recover his composure and figure out his next move.

"Go to Avenue Gregory!" After determining what to do today, Zhang Tie had the driver start the car.

...

Avenue Gregory was named after the surname of the Gregory Clan, which was one of the most influential clans of CSIF in Blackhot City. In the legend of Blackhot City, over half of the houses and shops in this avenue had belonged to the Gregory Clan.

Of course, Zhang Tie's arrival had nothing to do with the Gregory

Clan. He was here for a more important thing.

The car was parked outside a post office in Avenue Gregory. Zhang Tie stared at the broad plate "Bionne Clinic" through the window for a short while. After that, he got out of the car and walked across the road towards that clinic.

The gate of the clinic was under the broad plate. Because it was cold and the New Year festival had just passed, there were few people in the clinic. A young nurse was sitting behind the reception desk. It wasn't until Zhang Tie came to the front of the reception desk when the nurse realized someone had come in. She hurriedly raised her head as she hid the snacks.

"Argh, mister, are you sick?" asked the nurse with a round face as she looked at Zhang Tie.

"I'm not sick. I'm looking for Doctor Bionne!"

"Have you reserved an appointment with Doctor Bionne?"

"I don't need a reservation!" Zhang Tie smiled as he presented the special pass delivered from the Ministry of Supervision of Iron Horn Corps to the nurse.

The special pass from the Ministry of Supervision of Iron Horn Corps was also the identification certificate for a military officer of the Ministry of Supervision in execution of a mission. In regions like Blackhot City, where it had just been conquered by Norman Empire by force, a certificate from a powerful military department posed a great threat to commoners. At the sight of Zhang Tie's certificate, the nurse changed her facial expression at once.

"Argh...please follow me." The nurse hurriedly walked out of the reception desk and led Zhang Tie in.

This clinic only covered a bit more than 200 square meters. After passing by the reception desk, a drug storage room and a diagnosis room, the nurse led him in front of another room before knocking at the door.

"Please come in..." a voice drifted from inside.

...

Chapter 514: God Blessing Brotherhood

"Who's this, Sally?"

"This mister wants to see you!"

"Has he reserved an appointment?"

After hearing that Doctor Bionne was dissatisfied, the round-faced nurse wanted to explain. However, Zhang Tie turned around and told her, "It's okay. You can go now!"

After glancing at Zhang Tie, the round-faced nurse lowered her head and left as she closed the door.

"Mister, I'm very busy recently. If you want medical treatment or a diagnosis at your home, you need to reserve in advance!" Doctor Bionne said to Zhang Tie with a contemptuous voice.

Zhang Tie walked towards him and presented his certificate to him for ten seconds under his dissatisfied look. When he put away the certificate, Doctor Bionne changed his face right away. He instantly revealed a genial smile, which hid his fear. Any common small figure, who was being gazed at by a person from a powerful, violent position, would feel fearful.

Like sitting on a see-saw, the moment Zhang Tie's buttocks touched the sofa, Doctor Bionne sprung up from his chair. He came in front of Zhang Tie carefully and lowered his body, "Mr...do you have any needs?"

"Yes, I do!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

"Ah, please, please..."

"Take a seat, please!" Zhang Tie pointed at the sofa opposite him like he was the owner of this office.

"Fine, thanks, thanks!" Doctor Bionne sat on the opposite sofa with his legs tightly closed. From his movements, Zhang Tie knew that he was as timid as a rabbit. Before Zhang Tie even spoke, he

was already so scared.

"Do you have a patient called Laona?"

"Yes, yes, he's paralyzed. I have to visit him twice a week!"

"I know, you will go there on Tuesday and Friday, 18 silver coins each time. You've already treated him for over six years. According to the plan, you have to be there on time this afternoon!" Zhang Tie told him what he knew. Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Doctor Bionne started to ooze sweat on his forehead. He was afraid of being in trouble. Otherwise how could he be followed for so long?

"I...I was just helping him rehabilitate. I've done nothing else to him. I didn't know about what that person and his family members did." When saying this, Doctor Bionne stood up from sofa once again.

"I know, don't worry, take a seat, take a seat..." Zhang Tie waved his hand towards Doctor Bionne. "Is Laona suffering from a special central nervous dysfunction syndrome?"

"Yes, it's a very tricky disease. Most of the medicines were not effective. The patient felt weak all over and could not walk. Besides this, his immunity is low while the toxins could not be drained out of his body. Each time, I brought him some medicine it had no effect at all. I mainly help him do some physical therapy!"

"I'm carrying out a special mission, which requires your coordination!"

"Argh, please, I will coordinate with you for sure!"

Zhang Tie then silently took out six vials of all-purpose medicament from his pocket and put them on the table, "These are very special medicament. From today on, you must have him drink two vials of this medicament each time you visit him!"

At the sight of the vials of medicament on the table, Doctor Bionne turned pale. Zhang Tie's special status and the medicament before him reminded him of some plots to kill people. However, he

was not brave enough to refuse Zhang Tie.

"In order to carry out this medicament mission, you need to give him the medicament treatment in the following three days!"

"Do...do I need to go there today?"

"Today!"

"May...may I ask about the purpose of this medicament?" Doctor Bionne asked in a frightened way.

"This medicament is helpful to his health!" Zhang Tie glanced at Doctor Bionne. "I know what you're thinking about. But it's not like that. If you do it according to my request, you will face no danger at all. You don't need to know other things!"

"Yes...yes!" Doctor Bionne nodded hurriedly.

"After this medicament takes effect, Laona and his sister, Miss Daina, will know it. If they ask you why, you tell them..." Zhang Tie told Doctor Bionne about the story that he had fabricated.

Doctor Bionne became dumbfounded.

"Have you remembered what I told you?"

"Yes, I've remembered it, I've remembered it!"

"Repeat it then!"

Doctor Bionne then repeated what Zhang Tie had told him. Zhang Tie nodded inside.

"Remember, as long as you do what I told you to do, you will have no trouble. Besides, you will have a good reputation. But if you want to play tricks, I promise that you won't want to see the result!" While saying this, Zhang Tie pinched the desk using his right thumb and index finger. With a cracking sound, the thick, solid desk cracked like having been split by an axe.

The terrifying strength of Zhang Tie's fingers made Doctor Bionne go pale-faced once again.

After glancing at Doctor Bionne, Zhang Tie stood up and amplified his voice, "Thanks, Doctor Bionne, thanks for your concern about the orphanage. I've not imagined that grandma Teresa has moved away. What a pity! The six vials of medicament are my gifts from Jinyun Country. Hopefully, they could help you! I have something to deal with, I have to go..."

Zhang Tie reached out his hand towards Doctor Bionne, who instantly sprung up and shook hands with Zhang Tie saying, "Erm, it's my pleasure, my pleasure!"

"Hmm, it's a bit cold and dry these days. Look, your desk has cracked. It doesn't look good. You'd better get a new one!"

"Yes. What damn weather! It's too cold!"

"I will stay in Blackhot City for the next couple of days. If you have any problems, do you know where to find me?"

"No. 6 presidential suite in Black Gold Hotel. I'll keep it in mind!"

"Good. See you then!"

"Bon voyage!"

"Thanks!"

...

After Zhang Tie left, Doctor Bionne stood still in his room for two minutes before quivering all over for a second. 'The powerful, violent departments of Norman Empire are too weird. I had not imagined that I was involved too. Thankfully, my job is easy. I only need to cooperate with him.' Doctor Bionne was really not brave enough to search for the reason behind this request.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie didn't force him to poison his patient.

Walking to the side of the desk, Doctor Bionne took up a vial of medicament. At the sight of the delicate symbol for Manjusaka on the vial, his eyebrows jumped at once.

He had never heard about this medicament at all. However, given

its symbol, it seemed to be expensive.

Doctor Bionne finally recovered his composure.

On the same afternoon, Doctor Bionne went to his patient with the all-purpose medicament...

...

Since Susan and Fiona came for Zhang Tie, the other girls of Rose Association started to come for Zhang Tie too. Zhang Tie told them about his target here.

After only one year, many girls who were intimate with Zhang Tie had already found their own life partners, except for those who were killed by Abyan, those who'd left Blackhot City due to various reasons, or those who dared not to come for Zhang Tie. Finally, 47 girls in total decided they would like to leave Blackhot City after meeting Zhang Tie.

Watching these cute girls, Zhang Tie was relieved of all his negative moods, like grief for the deaths of Angel and the other girls. He really didn't want to see those beautiful roses wither. After just one year, Zhang Tie had already seen how the affairs of the world were inconstant. After one year, Only 47 of the total 84 girls of the Rose Association could gather with him in Blackhot City. What about the fates of these cute girls in the next year or the distant future?

...

In the evening on January 8th, Zhang Tie invited seven people from Hit-Plane Brotherhood and 21 people from God Blessing Association, including Potter, Wood, Francis and Zhang Tie's friend Blues, to join an evening reception in Black Gold Hotel where Hit-Plane Brotherhood and God Blessing Association officially merged into God Blessing Brotherhood.

Meanwhile, they improved the organizational framework and constitutional system of God Blessing Brotherhood.

The new organization was oriented towards mutual assistance, mutual support, solidarity, friendliness and common development. The main principle of the God Blessing Brotherhood was mutual benefit between power and obligation, contribution and achievement. As long as it fit the constitution of the organization, the members of God Blessing Brotherhood could choose to join or exit it freely. The only target of the foundation of the God Blessing Brotherhood was to survive its members, allowing everyone in the brotherhood to survive the coming holy war.

Zhang Tie took out 200,000 gold coins for the first development fund of God Blessing Brotherhood after they left Blackhot City. Through unanimous nominations, Zhang Tie became the leader of God Blessing Brotherhood.

For Zhang Tie, 200,000 gold coins were only worth a few vats of fermented fruits. 'If this amount of money can allow these people to believe in me today, bring a bright future to my brothers and enable them and their family members to live better futures, then those vats of fermented fruits meant nothing to me at all.'

In the evening on January 9th, Zhang Tie invited the 47 girls of Rose Association and Beverly to come to Black Gold Hotel...

Chapter 515: The Best

47 girls of the Rose Association came to Zhang Tie's presidential suite for the party in beautiful skirts and evening wear.

According to the list made by Zhang Tie, Black Gold Hotel tried its best to dispatch 47 exclusive limos and servicemen to take all the 47 girls of Rose Association to Black Gold Hotel from door to door, which was the most luxurious escort request in the history of Black Gold Hotel.

In order to welcome these girls, the hotel even set up a special VIP pathway which was only available to these girls.

The bright, bloody carpet went all the way from where the girls got off the limos to Zhang Tie's presidential suite.

Along the carpet were a number of archways made of bright roses, which had been sent here from tens of thousands of miles away by airship. Male and female servants were standing on both sides of the carpet tidily in black swallowtail suits. They were welcoming the girls of the Rose Association in the most respectful manner...

The professional photographers started to take photos of the girls the moment they got off the limos. Each time a limo parked and a girl got out of it, constant flashes of light from cameras could be seen in the surrounding areas.

Like a princess' welcoming, this was completely dreamlike for the girls of the Rose Association.

Zhang Tie, in a grand and brilliant black evening suit, was smiling and standing outside the gate with his hands behind his back.

In the banquet hall behind him, the crystal lamps were twinkling, while a philharmonic society was playing a melodious and pleasant song beside the fountain in the middle of the hall.

Each girl was led to the banquet hall by one of the hotel waiters. While they felt that they were princesses at this moment, they regarded Zhang Tie as their prince.

Many girls of the Rose Association were puzzled at this moment.

Zhang Tie kissed each girl's hand. After that, he told the staff of Golden Roc Bank to guide them aside. They put their fingerprints in a metal inepad and signed contracts with Golden Roc Bank. After that, each girl could receive 580 gold coins a year from Golden Roc Bank as the beneficiaries of the lifetime annuity financing plan.

This was a gift from Zhang Tie.

This gift made many girls exclaim in shock. Compared to the gifts that Zhang Tie had presented them last time, this one was too expensive. Actually, with this gift they could live a graceful life wherever they went from then on.

Zhang Tie smiled. However, Beverly almost came to tears at the sight of him. Only those who were very familiar with Zhang Tie could feel the grief in Zhang Tie's eyes behind his smile.

At this time, Zhang Tie was completely forcing his smile in such a fairy-tale scene.

They had the best food, the mellowest wine, most brilliant carpet and the best music in that banquet. The moment Zhang Tie appeared in the banquet hall, all the girls became quiet while gazing at Zhang Tie, waiting for him to say something.

The music stopped at this moment. The staff of Golden Roc Bank also left.

Glancing at those beautiful faces in front of him, Zhang Tie had mixed emotions inside. "There are more people who should have been here today. What a pity! Shirley said everything here is the best, just like in her dream, we have the best wine, the best golden caviar, the best tableware and crystal glasses, the best music and

the best waiters..."

After being mentioned by Zhang Tie, a girl called Shirley, who was holding a glass and wearing black evening wear, rolled her eyes away from Zhang Tie embarrassedly.

Watching the adorable Shirley, Zhang Tie smiled. "Shirley was right about many points, but she forgot one important point. In my eyes, besides these things, the best girls in Blackhot City are here too. Because of you, everything at present has become meaningful! Without you, everything in front of me would be nothing other than desert and rocks. Because of you, this place was filled with brilliance, laughter and pleasure. And because of you, my life has also been filled with brilliance, laughter and pleasure. Therefore, I have to extend my thanks to you all, the best girls in Blackhot City. I appreciate that you loved me yesterday and you still trust me today! Today, you're the queens and princesses, while I am just your humble servant, an idiot being brightened by you..."

After saying this, Zhang Tie raised his glass and gulped it all down...

The girls also raised their glasses...

Then, the unforgettable evening banquet started...

...

Zhang Tie drank too much this time. He drank one glass after another with each girl of the Rose Association. In that boisterous and happy atmosphere, the girls of the Rose Association pulled him onto the dance floor and taught him about waltz. He then danced with each girl, one circle for one girl. The girls kept rotating, smiling and playing in front of him like beautiful flowers...

Gradually, all the waiters in the presidential suite left, including the philharmonic society. The steward of the presidential suite closed the gate from outside.

Feeling a bit dizzy, Zhang Tie lay on the soft sofa and watched the

fascinating faces of the girls of the Rose Association in the crystal lamplight.

Zhang Tie's shirt had been undone by the girls while some small, golden fish were swirling over Zhang Tie's body, moistening Zhang Tie's chest and lower abdomen. Fiona was kneeling between Zhang Tie's knees while her beautiful evening gown and black bra had been undone and taken off her shoulders. She was covering her breasts using her hands in a shameful way. She knew Zhang Tie liked it that way.

A milky firework rose from Fiona's breasts and flew in the air. Finally, it spread over their bodies and faces.

This firework was like a signal flare. Soon after the girls' exclamations, Zhang Tie was covered by them at once...

...

Zhang Tie didn't know how long he had slept or whether he had slept at all. When he woke up, Zhang Tie still felt a bit dizzy.

The mechanical button of the red calling lamp on the pure gold microphone was turned on. It seemed that someone wanted to talk with someone in the room. Zhang Tie moved his body slightly out of the crisscrossed Rose Association girls.

Beverly was half-exposed in her evening wear, bowed at the waist and hugging her legs, curled up in Zhang Tie's chest. This was the best position.

The moment Zhang Tie moved, Beverly murmured a low hum in sleep and her eyelashes quivered once.

Zhang Tie lowered his head and found that his p*nis was still in Beverly's body. He didn't remember what had happened last night as he was drunk with alcohol. He only remembered that it was a crazy night. All of them were mad, including Zhang Tie and those Rose Association girls. They all vented something in their madness, became freed of something. When someone mentioned

Angel, many people cried. After that, they became entangled with each other in a crazier way...

Zhang Tie silently drew his p*nis out of her body and got off the bed. He then casually threw on one coat and stealthily passed between the girls' bodies on the soft and thick carpet in the bedroom.

At this moment, 49 girls were crisscrossed over the 200-odd square meters of bedroom in the presidential suite, from the extremely huge bed to the sofa and carpet. The entire bedroom became an alluring pornographic field. The torn-off evening gowns, colorful bras and underwear were thrown everywhere. The whole room was filled with the smell of Zhang Tie's semen.

Because of they had heating units, it was as warm as spring in the bedroom. The girls were still sleeping soundly while the thick curtain prevented sunlight from being cast into the room. As a result, people could not identify the current time.

They were too crazy last night. Glancing at the scene, Zhang Tie became a bit bashful. He silently left the bedroom and closed the door. When he came to the corridor outside the bedroom, he opened the cover of a pure gold microphone and pressed down the switch.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie asked.

In two seconds, the steward's voice was heard, "Your excellency, two people want to talk with you!"

"Who are they?"

"A man and a woman. The man is Doctor Bionne. He said he was your friend. The woman is Daina. They have been waiting for you for half an hour."

'Miss Daina?' Zhang Tie became stunned for a second. Then, he instantly glanced at the clock hanging on the wall. It was already past nine o'clock in the morning.

Zhang Tie took a deep breath. "Argh, fine. Guide them to my room in a couple of minutes...oh...no...You'd better let them wait for me in the cafe of the hotel. I will be there soon!"

"Yes, sire. Do you have any other demands?"

"Hmm, when the girls wake up, have people send some clothes and skirts inside. Let them select their favorite ones."

After hanging up, Zhang Tie became stunned for a second before hurriedly rushing into the bathroom. After taking a bath, he put on a new suit. He then took a look at the handsome guy in the mirror before leaving the room for the cafe.

Upon entering the café, with a casual glance Zhang Tie had seen Doctor Bionne and Miss Daina, who were sitting beside a curtained glass window. At the sight of Miss Daina, Zhang Tie's heart started to pound like how he would react at school. After over one year, Miss Daina was still the same as before in Zhang Tie's heart...

Chapter 516: See You, Blackhot City

Miss Daina and Dr. Bionne were sitting beside a glass window in the coffee house. She was watching the garden in the hotel which caused a greenhouse effect while she slightly stirred up a cup of coffee on the table with a silver ladle.

Zhang Tie stood at the door of the coffee house and gazed at Miss Daina's side for about half a minute.

Dr. Bionne noticed Zhang Tie's arrival ahead of Miss Daina. At the sight of Zhang Tie, he instantly revealed a slightly exaggerating surprise as he sprung up from his chair, "Argh, Miss Daina, he's that person I told you!"

Miss Daina turned around as she caught sight of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had rehearsed how to deal with this scene for many times. Therefore, after miss Daina looked at him, he revealed a surprising look, "Argh, Miss Daina, what a coincidence! Do you remember me? I'm your student."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Dr. Bionne almost fell down. Twitching his eye corners, Dr. Bionne naturally revealed a dumbfounded look. He could not understand why such a military officer of the violence sector of Norman Empire could be a student of Miss Daina. He was more confused as he didn't know why he was involved now that Zhang Tie was familiar with her. In short, all this was too weird in the eyes of Dr. Bionne. Whereas, he did not dare to figure out the reason.

Miss Daina watched Zhang Tie while an amazement flashed by her eyes. She had not imagined that the one she would like to see was her student. Zhang Tie was always silent in the No. 7 National Middle School in Blackhot City. Therefore, he was not impressive in the eyes of Miss Daina. However, after Zhang Tie's excellent performance in the survival training before graduation and his participation in Iron-Blood Camp as the most famous person in his

session, Miss Daina started to pay attention to him.

Zhang Tie sat beside the coffee table.

Doctor explained everything according to Zhang Tie's will to Zhang Tie and Miss Daina. After sitting for another 2 minutes, Dr. Bionne felt like sitting on a fire basket.

"Miss Daina, I've explained everything clearly. He gave me the vials of medicament. I've not imagined that they could have such a great effect on Leona. Now that you know each other, you can talk freely. I have something to deal with in my clinic. I have to go now."

"Hmm, Dr. Bionne, I appreciate you so much!" seeing Dr. Bionne was going to leave, Miss Daina stood up and saw Bionne off politely.

Zhang Tie also stood up. Based on Zhang Tie's design, he and Bionne had long been familiar with each other as they both usually visited the orphanage of Grandma Teresa. This time, Zhang Tie gifted him six vials of "very special medicament" when they encountered in Blackhot City.

"Ah! It's my pleasure. I'm also very happy to see Leona's condition becoming better!" Dr. Bionne said righteously. After saying that, Dr. Bionne stealthily glanced at Zhang Tie. After seeing that Zhang Tie was pleasant, he left.

Miss Daina's blue eyes were like a blue mountain in Zhang Tie's eyes.

Miss Daina's brown hair was like warm wind that blew through mountain ranges.

Facing Miss Daina and being watched by her, Zhang Tie felt being in a dream. It was so warm and nice.

This was Miss Daina's image in Zhang Tie's eyes.

"Dr. Bionne said you were familiar with each other in orphanage.

I was told that you usually sent gifts to the orphanage in Blackhot City. I've not imagined that you're that kind!" Miss Daina uttered in a warm voice.

"My family usually made rice brew. When we have surplus rice soup, my mom usually told me to sent some to those kids. Plus some salt or sugar, rice soup would be nutritious. Those kids liked to drink it! As Dr. Bionne always went to the orphanage to treat those kids. Therefore, we gradually knew each other. This time, when I encountered him on the street, I gifted him some vials of medicament. I've not imagined that they were helpful to Miss Daina."

In a white skintight thin sweater, Miss Daina's figure became especially eye-catching today. After a glimpse at her, Zhang Tie felt thirsty because of excitement.

The fragrance over Miss Daina was also intoxicating.

"May I know the name of the medicament?" Miss Daina looked at Zhang Tie with a desiring look, "I've seen that medicament; however, I've not heard about it before. But it works so well on my younger brother. Only after using six vials of that medicament, his condition had been improved. This never happened before!"

Zhang Tie didn't feel strange that a common biology teacher had not heard about the name of all-purpose medicament. Because all-purpose medicament had not been popularized among average people across Norman Empire. Additionally, Blackhot City was always information occluded.

"That's all-purpose medicament produced by Huaiyuan Palace!"

"All-purpose medicament?" Miss Daina blinked as she exclaimed 'ah' with an amazing look.

"Have someone made super enzyme in Jinyun Country?" Zhang Tie nodded towards Miss Daina as he didn't feel strange for a biology teacher to know something about super enzyme, even if

not being an alchemist.

Miss Daina then became hesitated, "Do...do you have more such medicament? I want to buy some from you, if possible."

"God, forgive me. It's my first time to cheat a woman, especially Miss Daina!"

Zhang Tie prayed inside before shaking his head decisively, "Miss Daina, I've not brought too much of that medicament this time. After sending some to others, I don't have them anymore..."

"No more?" Miss Daina looked a bit disappointed.

"Now that it's produced in Huaiyuan Palace, do you know where to buy it?" Miss Daina's eyes blazed with some hope after a second.

"Honestly, Miss Daina. All-purpose medicament is very popular now. It has become a class-A strategic good in Norman Empire. Therefore, it is greatly desired by other countries and powers. I'm afraid that it could be hardly gained through normal channel!"

Hearing the word class-A strategic good, Miss Daina's hope died out like burning candles in chilly wind.

Noticing the sort of grief in the eyes of Miss Daina, Zhang Tie almost took out a pile of all-purpose medicament from Castle of Black Iron and put them in front of Miss Daina. However, considering the possible result, Zhang Tie stopped.

"This medicament could be hardly gained through other channels. However, as it was produced in Huaiyuan Palace, I could still get some in Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Miss Daina's eyes blazed with hope once again.

"However, even if I could get some from Huaiyuan Prefecture, Blackhot City is too far from Huaiyuan Prefecture. I cannot send the goods to you conveniently!"

It was said that human postal and express system could deliver

addressee's message to every corner of the planet before Catastrophe. However, in this age, this was hardly satisfied. Average message could be passed in one region or a country. Nevertheless, a logistics system that stretched across numerous countries had not been established yet. Even if it was established, it would cause a huge operating cost when airship was used as a traffic tool. Nobody could afford this. In this age, business groups were prosperous and developed partly because that business groups sustained the logistics trade between countries and regions.

"Then...then there's no way else?" Miss Daina muttered. After losing another hope, Miss Daina didn't know whether Leona could bear such a strike. This was even crueler than having not given him a hope. Recalling Leona's shiny eyes, Miss Daina felt like crying as she covered her mouth at once; meanwhile, a drop of tear fell into the coffee cup on the table.

"Miss Daina. Do you have other relatives in Blackhot City except for your younger brother? If so, it would be easily solved if you and your younger brother go to Jinyun Country together with me!" Seeing that the opportunity was ripe, after pretending to think for a short while, Zhang Tie finally poured out what he wanted to say to Miss Daina.

Miss Daina became amazed at once. Raising his watery blue eyes towards Zhang Tie, she said, "This...this would be very troublesome. Migration certificate is needed if I and my younger brother are going to leave Blackhot City..."

"Miss Daina. If you want to leave Blackhot City. I will help you and your younger brother to manage migration certificates. You know that I once served in the No. 39 Division of Norman Empire. I am acquainted with Colonel Leibniz of No. 39 Division. I've contacted with Colonel Leibniz. There will not be a problem!"

Staring at Miss Daina's face, Zhang Tie felt that Miss Daina had been dreaming for that. However, she still hesitated. Zhang Tie knew what she was worried about. Every woman would be a bit

hesitated to leave a familiar place with a younger brother who needed her help.

"Actually, many people that you know will leave Blackhot City together with me!"

"Ah, who else?" Miss Daina asked in an amazing look.

"Hmm, of course, many of them are familiar with you, Miss Daina. Because they are your students, including some male students of my session in No. 7 National Middle School and some girls in No. 4 National Female Middle School. They are all my friends. You could take your younger brother away from here by airship together with them. You can look after each other on the way! When you arrive at Huaiyuan Prefecture, you will have familiar persons over there. You can work and accompany your younger brother for medical medicament. The medical conditions over there are much better than that in Blackhot City. Chinese medical system is more developed. Besides you will have more work opportunities over there. When your younger brother's disease will be cured completely, you can come back if you want!"

Zhang Tie knew that Miss Daina was finally moved by his last words...

"Zhang Tie, I really don't know how to appreciate you. I've not imagined that you could help me so much this time..." watching Zhang Tie, Miss Daina became a bit thrilled.

"Hehe, you don't have to thank me, Miss Daina. It's my great honor to help you. If my friends in No. 7 National Middle School knew that I could give a favor to you, they would envy me very much!" Zhang Tie said in a relaxed manner.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Miss Daina's face blushed slightly as she felt warm inside...

...

After seeing off Miss Daina to leave the hotel by a car, Zhang Tie

recovered his composure.

He finally let out a deep sigh.

As long as Miss Daina would like to leave, what's left could be easily dealt with.

"Who else should I take away?" Zhang Tie tried his best to recall those people that he was familiar with in Blackhot City. Finally, two straightforward men appeared in Zhang Tie's mind——Captain Kerlin and A'Nuo.

Zhang Tie knew that as long as that cyclops knew that Miss Daina would leave Blackhot City together with him, he would definitely follow them. "Regardless of that cyclops feelings about Miss Daina, he is my savior. He not only gave me the secret book of Iron-Blood Fist, but also saved me out of the Gold-eating cave. Because of this, I have to take him away with me. In the coming holy war, a LV 8 fighter is nothing but a scum, who might be killed at any time."

I would not disturb the relationship between that cyclops and Miss Daina. Because that would be too nasty. Neither would I help them to develop their relationship. Because that violates my original intention. It would be too silly to do that.

As to A'Nuo...

Recalling that straightforward and simple human flesh bag, Zhang Tie smiled. "Mom said I have to appreciate those who helped me even if a bit. This was a Chinese virtue. I will appreciate him this time. If A'Nuo and his family members would like to leave Blackhot City, I will then take them away..."

For A'Nuo, if he could make more money than being a human flesh bag in Iron-Thorn Fighting Club and save his family members, he would be happy, even being a driver or a common bodyguard in Jinwu Corporation.

See you, Blackhot City. That's all that I care. After these people leave, what's left would be the same...

Chapter 517: The Arrival of the Airship

When the huge airship appeared in the sky, Zhang Tie and Colonel both narrowed their eyes as they raised their heads to watch it.

The 100-m long triangular body of the airship indicated its type at once——fury-level harp airship produced in Huaiyuan Palace.

At the sight of the airship, ground crew send a landing signal. After a few minutes, in the wuthering chilly wind, the airship slowly landed on the designated field while dropping off some ground anchors. Ground crew instantly ran towards it and tied those ground anchors to the ground anchor piles, fixing the airship steadily.

The huge object was very terrifying in the sky; however, when it landed and appeared in front, it felt much more terrifying.

According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, fury-level airship was the largest and most powerful airship ever manufactured by human among all the countries across Blackson Humans Corridor.

"Fury-level..." Colonel Lebniz muttered. Watching such a huge airship which glittered silver grey luster, Lebniz's eyes gleamed. As a soldier, at the sight of such an airship, it was like a warrior caught sight of a treasured sword or a fierce beast caught sight of a grand feast. Of course, he was interested in it very much.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his elder brother could dispatch such a huge airship here. The mark of Jinwu Corporation on the airship indicated whom it belonged to. It also reminded Zhang Tie that Jinwu Corporation had gained a momentum development in a short period by selling all-purpose medicament. Therefore, his elder brother could afford such a huge airship.

The moment the airship landed, a hatch door was pushed open as a middle aged man in the uniform of coxswain and the first mate of

the airship came out. Zhang Tie and Colonel Lebniz then boarded on it.

After greeting each other for half a minute, the coxswain murmured to the first mate. The first mate then entered the airship. After a short while, crew members drew out the goods by a manual hydraulic trailer from the airship. Those goods were sealed in the shiny metal boxes. Each box could rightly be carried by a person just like a carry-on luggage.

The boxes were especially for carrying expensive vials of medicament. At the sight of those boxes on the hydraulic trailer, Colonel Lebniz's eyes gleamed like that of wolves.

Dozens of boxes were placed in front of Colonel Lebniz and Zhang Tie in two piles tidily.

Colonel Lebniz glanced at Zhang Tie, who also nodded. Thus, Colonel Lebniz walked to a box and opened it.

The moment he opened it, he caught sight of the rows of vials of medicament being inserted in the soft protective grooves like soldiers being ready for review.

Colonel Lebniz instantly took out one vial and drunk it. After closing his eyes for while, he opened his eyes with a satisfactory look.

Watching those boxes, Colonel Lebniz was so thrilled that he even felt his blood rushing to his head. "God bless, only 70 all-purpose medicament were allocated by Iron-Horn Army; but the Iron-Horn Army now have almost 2000 vials of all-purpose medicament." At the sight of so many vials, Colonel Lebniz almost passed out.

At this moment, Colonel Lebniz even worried about those empty boxes.

After taking a deep breath, Colonel Lebniz asked Zhang Tie in a slightly quivering voice, "First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, are...these

all-purpose medicament?"

"Yes. Each box contains 200 vials of all-purpose medicament. This time, 291 people want to leave Blackhot Cit together with me. 25 vials of all-purpose medicament for each person, 7275 vials in total. We have 42 boxes here, 8400 vials in total. Please transfer the 1000 of the surplus 1125 vials of all-purpose medicament to those brothers of Iron-Blood Camp as my gift. As to the rest 125 vials, please hand them to Salvey of Scouts Camp."

"Although i've lost some commoners, I store a great quantity of all-purpose medicament for No.39 Division. This is really economical. If this piece of information is exposed, many people in the army would admire me."

Colonel Lebniz was very satisfied with this trade. After hearing that Zhang Tie would like to send 1000 vials of all-purpose medicament to Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division, even 125 vials to his friends in the Scouts Camp of No. 39 Division, Colonel Lebniz was deeply moved. Each vial of these all-purpose medicament might save one soldier on the battle field. This indeed interpreted the meaning of comrade-in-arms.

"Trust me, I will hand these 1125 vials to Iron-Blood Camp and your friends in Scouts Camp. These vials of all-purpose medicament would be freely used by them!" Colonel Lebniz said in a solemn way.

"Thank you!"

Colonel Lebniz then sighed as he put one hand on Zhang Tie's shoulder, "First Lieutenant, you will be the military officer of No. 39 Division forever, nobody will dare to harm you as long as last soldier of No. 39 Division is alive!"

Zhang Tie smiled and nodded.

Colonel Lebniz glanced at First Lieutenant Vessie on his side. A great number of soldiers instantly rushed towards here from the

base. In a wink, they had moved all these all-purpose medicament on the truck in the far. After covering the carriage tightly, a great number of soldiers instantly escorted that truck away with two armored vehicles.

...

"First Lieutenant Zhang Tie, may I visit this fury-level airship?"

"Please!"

Under the leadership of the coxswain, Zhang Tie and Colonel Lebniz walked towards that airship. The moment they entered the hatch door, Zhang Tie had caught sight of Linda. As Linda was inconvenient to come out just now, she just waited for Zhang Tie inside the airship.

Zhang Tie introduced Linda to Colonel Lebniz with a smile. He then visited the inside of the airship together with Colonel Lebniz while embracing Linda's waist frankly. At the same time, the coxswain introduced the inside of the airship to them.

Even Zhang Tie, who had seen airship for many times, had been amazed by the layout in the airship, not to mention Colonel Lebniz. The inside of this airship interpreted coziness and luxury so well.

"This airship was manufactured on the concept of luxurious air yacht. That's why its inner layout is completely different from common airships. Its cargo carriage is very small. The crew area is separated from the passengers area. The airship is divided into three floors, most of the space is for rest and entertainment. It is made of high-intensity light metal material, which greatly increases its manufacturing cost; however, it provides a larger internal space and a greater take-off weight!"

"How many people could it hold?" Colonel Lebniz asked.

"360 passengers could enjoy a comfortable and pleasant air travel experience; 700 people could be held if the passengers would like to

sacrifice some coziness!"

"What about its fighting force? I was told that fury-level airship has a very powerful air fighting ability."

"Compared to military fury-level war airship, this airship has much less weapons. However, there are still two 3000-m range Thor-level steaming ballistas, four middle-range Naruto three-in-one crossbows and six dense steel beads emitters!"

Hearing such an allocation, Colonel Lebniz sighed once again. Such fighting force had surpassed that of the in-service mad shark-level war airship in Iron-Horn Army. Compared to this airship being designed as a air yacht, the mad shark-level war airship felt shameless to be a war airship. These products from Huaiyuan Palace were really challenging.

When they came to the observation deck which was semi-closed by the high-intensity reinforced steel, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Colonel Lebniz. Colonel Lebniz thought for a second before turning around, he then asked two of his followers to visit the engine room of the airship. Zhang Tie then threw a glance at the coxswain. The coxswain then left with another two people.

Immediately, only three people were left on the observation deck. Linda felt that Zhang Tie would like to say something to Colonel Lebniz. Therefore, she also wanted to leave. However, Zhang Tie embraced her waist tightly. She then stayed with a warm feeling as she knew that Zhang Tie had accepted her inside.

"There are another 108 boxes of all-purpose medicament in the airship!" the moment Zhang Tie finished his words, Colonel Lebniz became dumbfounded.

He drew a breath. "108 boxes? That means over 20,000 vials of all-purpose medicament. How many vials of all-purpose medicament have Zhang Tie got from Huaiyuan Palace in total? The military of Norman Empire could only get 100,000 vials. However, Zhang Tie alone got 30,000 vials?"

"Colonel, are you interested in taking all these vials of all-purpose medicament?"

"What's the price?"

"Thanks for your help. Therefore, you could get them in a price 20% lower than that the military of Norman Empire could get from Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

Zhang Tie's words made Colonel Lebniz's heart pound. Based on the current supply condition of all-purpose medicament, Colonel Lebniz knew that Zhang Tie not only brought him a great amount of gold coins, but also brought him a huge resource, which could not be measured by gold coins in Iron-Horn Army or Nordinburg.

Colonel Lebniz could imagine how crazy those noble women would be when he would take out the all-purpose medicament in the salon of Nordinburg. This good was the best product to maintain youth and vitality for women now. It had a remarkable effect whether to daub it on one's skin or drink it.

Women were crazier than men about this product.

...

When Colonel Lebniz left the airship, his face shined obviously. The moment he got off the airship, he had sent an order to the military officers in the base--to satisfy all the demands of this airship and complete its supply in the fastest speed...

If he still treated Zhang Tie as his subordinate military officer before getting on the airship, he had already treated Zhang Tie as his best friend now.

Zhang Tie was seeing off Colonel Lebniz on the airship. By this chance, he broke through the line of Iron-Horn Army for Jinwu Corporation. From Armes, the Mercenary Empire to Ewentra Archipelago, from Iron and Snow Wilderness to the north border of Norman Empire, such a network and power helped Jinwu Corporation lay a solid foundation for its development.

...

"I feel through your eyes that something is in your mind!" Linda murmured to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie became stunned as he watched this elegant, beautiful and mature woman and sniffed her hair deeply. He then smiled, "I'm just missing you!"

"Liar!" Linda slightly peaked Zhang Tie's lips.

Zhang Tie didn't want to talk about this topic anymore. Therefore, he transferred the topic, "Oh, are you used to this airship?"

"It's fast. Only after half a day, we're already here!" speaking of today's travel, Linda showed an exciting look.

"Oh, have you dealt with the affairs in Blapei?"

"I've already transferred my store and clothes to others. I don't know what to do then. Can I open a store in the future?"

"Of course. As long as you like, you can open a big clothing shop in Huaiyuan Prefecture. As the boss, you can dress yourself well everyday and employ some people to sell your favorite clothes. In this way, you can make money and enjoy yourself. Additionally, you can show me your dress everyday. When we're free, we can take a walk on the seaside. We can enjoy various seafood and buy whatever we want. In summer, we can have a vacation in islands, swim and catch crabs over there. We can have one vial of all-purpose medicament a day to keep ourselves forever young!"

Linda imagined what Zhang Tie described as a desiring look flashed by her eyes, "Is that real?"

"Of course!" Zhang Tie nodded firmly.

"Do you have a lot of friends here?"

"Hmm, you will see them tomorrow. You will set off tomorrow!"

"You?" Linda realized something, "What about you, won't you go

there together with us?"

"I have something to deal with. Trust me, I've already told my elder brother. You're my woman, someone will take care of you in Huaiyuan Prefecture. Don't worry about that, someone would accompany you on the way!"

However, hearing Zhang Tie's words, Linda did not feel reassured...

...

Chapter 518: Picking up People

On January 14th, it was a bit sunny in Blackhot City. Although the accumulated snow outside the city had not completely melt but at the sight of the wisp of light through the thick clouds, people's grief gradually reduced.

At this moment, the Blackhot City was still prosperous and boisterous. Over 10 coaches with the license plate of No. 39 Division of Norman Empire were running in the streets of Blackhot City silently.

Each coach had a military officer of No. 39 Division, who was holding the road map and a name list. They were picking up people as marked on the map according to the name list.

For those soldiers and drivers in No. 39 Division, they were executing a military mission, during which period, no mistake was allowed. Therefore, everyone became very serious.

...

When a car parked outside the Norbin Hotel, a military officer in the car got off the coach. A girls of Rose Association and her parents were waiting there. After checking their names, they all got on the coach...

...

At the same time, another coach parked outside the Mangrove Shopping Mall in Blackhot City. At the sight of the coach, some people walked over here.

"Are you Mr. Franca's family?" the military officer asked politely.

"I'm Franca..." as a common gardener in Blackhot City, Mr. Franca walked one step forward in a bit tense look.

"Can you show me your migration certificates?"

"Fine!" Franca revealed a smile as he took out the migration

certificates of his family to that military officer.

"Alright, please get on the coach!" the military officer invited them in politely.

Franca's family members then got on the vehicle. At sight of the familiar faces of the brothers of God Blessing Association, Franca responded with a smile.

After finding some people in the vehicle were as old as them, Franca's dad and mom started to chat with them and soon they became relaxed.

...

Blues was cradling his younger sister. Lifting a luggage with his left hand, he was waiting outside the postal office of Blackhot City with his family members. Only after ten more minutes, a coach had already parked in front of them.

After communicating with each other for a few seconds, Blues' family got on the vehicle.

...

The same scene happened in many places across Blackhot City.

In the Red Maple Avenue in the north of Blackhot City, at the sight of Beverly in a beautiful red overcoat standing on the roadside with her parents, Zhang Tie ordered his driver to park over there. At the sight of Beverly through the window, Hista and the other guys of Brotherhood started to make ambiguous grimace towards Zhang Tie. If not their parents were sitting in the vehicle, they must have been booing and hooting.

The moment the vehicle parked, Zhang Tie jumped off it and took over Beverly's luggage, "Let me do it!"

Beverly responded with a sweet smile. She let her mom get on the vehicle first, then herself.

Watching such a spacious coach, Beverly's dad asked Zhang Tie

silently in the back of the coach, "Ah, so many people would like to leave out of here with you?"

Although Zhang Tie had already told him that he would take some friends back together with him, Beverly's dad had not imagined that it was a full coach of people instead of just 7-8 people. Therefore, he became a bit amazed.

Zhang Tie then felt a bit diffident inside. After talking with Beverly's parents that day, he found that Beverly's dad had almost treated him as a will-be son-in-law. If Beverly's dad saw those girls of Rose Association after a short while, Zhang Tie was wondering what Beverly's dad would think about him.

"Erm...I have many friends in Blackhot City!" Zhang Tie yawned as he invited Beverly's dad in the vehicle. He then placed Beverly's luggage.

"Are we going to the railway station after a short while? We'd better buy sleeping berths; otherwise, Beverly's mom might not stand it!"

"Hmm, I know, I won't let aunt feel uncomfortable!"

"Papa, what're you talking about. Come on, get on the vehicle!" Beverly urged them in the vehicle.

The vehicle started once again. Zhang Tie was sitting on the side of the driver, which was close to the door. If it was a bus, Zhang Tie was in the position of the ticket seller. Beverly's parents were sitting behind the two people and were chatting with Barley's parents. Beverly was sitting on Zhang Tie's side as she hugged Zhang Tie's arm with a sweet look. For Beverly, she felt like traveling with her family members under the guidance of Zhang Tie, making her feel pretty sweet.

"Bighead, who else should we pick up?"

Doug, sitting on the back of the coach, called Zhang Tie's nickname straightforwardly even at this moment. He had not

noticed Leit's expression at all. After Zhang Tie became the boss of the God Blessing Association, even Barley and Sharwin silently changed Zhang Tie's appellation. They rarely called him Bighead anymore, except for Doug.

Zhang Tie didn't mind at all. Turning around his body, he explained, "I made a friend in Iron-Thorn Fighting Club, A'Nuo. I plan to pick him up this time. He has the same temper like you, Doug!"

"Really?" Doug became excited, "That's going be fun!"

"Oh, how did you get your nickname Bighead?" Beverly asked Zhang Tie in a low voice.

"Ah, erm...when in preliminary school, we used to play truant. As we could not escape from the front door, we could only drill out of the gap between protective steel bars in the classroom. Everyone could drill out easily, except for me because of my big head. My head was stuck in the protective steel bars, which made me very embarrassed. From then on, they called me Bighead!" Zhang Tie murmured to Beverly.

Beverly revealed a smile at once as she had not imagined that Zhang Tie had such a story...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie saw A'Nuo's family who had been waiting for them near the Citizen Square of Blackhot City——A'Nuo, his wife and two kids, who were younger than 8 years old.

Seeing Zhang Tie getting off the vehicle, A'Nuo instantly held Zhang Tie's hand tightly with an exciting look. He didn't know what to say. Since last year, A'Nuo had already known some frightening information by chatting with some guests in the fighting club. As high-end clients gradually decreased, A'Nuo had felt the coming danger. However, he was unable to solve that. He had long expected to leave Blackhot City for his kids. However, he could not make it. Zhang Tie's appearance made A'Nuo feel that the God had heard his prayer. He was very appreciative inside.

A'Nuo had not imagined that his benevolence in the fighting club could win him such a great return. What an amazing fate!

"Have you got this month's salary from the fighting club?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes. Manager Hance even paid me advance salary of two more months' when he knew that I was going to leave!" A'Nuo replied with full gratitude.

Remembering that fat in the Iron-Thorn Fighting Club, Zhang Tie smiled, "That shrewd guy must have long managed his migration certificate. Such a sycophant don't need my concern at all."

"Good, get on the vehicle!"

A'Nuo's family then got on the vehicle. With two more kids in the vehicle, the coach became more boisterous.

...

After picking up A'Nuo in the Citizen Square, Zhang Tie told another address to the driver.

Several minutes later, the vehicle parked. Zhang Tie then jumped off the vehicle. Meanwhile, he needed the help from Barley and the other guys.

"Ah, who will we pick up?" Barley frowned as he watched the apartment which had been covered with purple vines.

"Cut the crap. You will know about that at once. I'm sure you will be surprised!" Zhang Tie smiled towards his brothers before walking in the apartment building.

Barley and the other guys followed Zhang Tie to the third floor of this apartment building with full doubts. Zhang Tie knocked at a door on the third floor. After a few seconds, the door was opened. At the sight of Miss Daina's beautiful face, the other guys were dumbfounded at once. Widely opening their eyes, they almost

screamed.

"Miss Daina!" Bagdad exclaimed at once.

"Miss Daina, are you ready?" Zhang Tie asked her quietly with a smile.

"I'm ready. but, Leona has inconvenience in movement..." Miss Daina said politely.

"Ah, do you need help? Let me help you, let me help you..." Hearing that Miss Daina needed help, those horny students swarmed in at once.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see Miss Daina's younger brother. He was more than 20 years old. With a pale face, the emaciated man was sitting on a wheelchair while frowning his forehead. It seemed that he was being troubled by many concerns. Not until he saw the group of horny guys pouring in and heard their appellation towards his elder sister did he relieve his frown.

Bagdad, the most strongest one among them, directly carried Leona on his back. Sharwin folded Leona's wheelchair while the other horny guys hurriedly helped Miss Daina to pick up the luggage--three trunks, leaving Doug standing alone there. Finally, he walked in front of cabinet and asked Miss Daina shamefully while smiling like a rotten pear, "Miss Daina, do I need to move this?"

Miss Daina instantly burst out a smile. Watching her students, all of her concerns disappeared at once...

Zhang Tie and the other guys made a contemptuous gesture towards Doug at the same time.

...

Chapter 519: A Brave Jump

The moment Miss Daina got on the vehicle, the whole vehicle became much more boisterous. They all felt having a travel organized by the school. Even Leona, Miss Daina's younger brother revealed a smile in such a happy atmosphere.

At this moment, the other guys in the vehicle truly felt being dwarfed in front of Zhang Tie. He could even take Goddess Daina away, that's too great! Greater than the Great King Bull in the famous Chinese fantasy novel 'Journey to the West'.

Only after a glimpse at Miss Daina's attractive figure, Beverly had understood everything. She then rolled her eyes towards Zhang Tie.

"You badass!" Beverly murmured in Zhang Tie's ear and pinched his waist forcefully.

Zhang Tie drew a breath. He could only stand it as he didn't even have a chance to right wrongs in the public .

"I've not even touched Miss Daina's hand!" Zhang Tie explained it to Beverly in a low voice.

"Humph, I don't believe you!"

Zhang Tie became speechless. Perhaps he was excessive in some aspect in Beverly's eyes. Therefore, she didn't believe him even if he was telling the truth.

...

Many people in the vehicle exchanged glances with each other when they found the coach directly ran towards the east of Blackhot City instead of the railway station of Blackhot City.

"Bighead, aren't we heading for the railway station, or are we going to pick someone else?" Doug asked.

"Hehe, you will know it!" Zhang Tie briefed as he wanted to give

them a surprise.

After leaving the east city gate for one kilometer, the vehicle parked alongside a row of coaches.

"Wait for a second, I will check whether all of them have arrived!" after saying that, Zhang Tie got off the vehicle and started to check those coaches one after another.

At the sight of so many vehicles in front, Beverly's dad widely opened his mouth. If all the people in the vehicles wanted to leave Blackhot City, it was at least 200 people. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie was such an able man.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming over, those soldiers on the coaches also got off their vehicles and started to report to Zhang Tie. They had already picked up everybody according to the name list provided by Zhang Tie. All the vehicles had arrived except for one.

When Zhang Tie came to a vehicle in the front, he caught sight of Ms. Anna. That woman smiled at Zhang Tie implicitly, so did Zhang Tie.

"Take Ms. Anna away." this was what that Fatty Barley requested after plucking up his courage. Zhang Tie was wondering whether that guy still had a special feeling about this woman who had lost her husband and deteriorated into the secular world.

Sharwin said Barley had not found any other women since graduation. Instead, he usually slept in Ms. Anna's house. What a spoony guy! Sometimes, he even gifted her money and goods.

Zhang Tie didn't understand Barley's emotions. However, considering that this woman turned all the brothers of Hit-Plane Brotherhood into real men except himself, Zhang Tie took her.

At this moment, Ms. Anna just had a light makeup. With a silver enamel necklace and a fox scarf over his neck, she coiled her hair. Besides being a bit mature and alluring, she was almost like a fair lady.

"As I've taken hundreds of people, I don't care about taking one more." Actually, Zhang Tie was sympathetic about this woman inside. As to how Barley would treat her in the future, it had nothing to do with Zhang Tie.

Captain Kerlin was also sitting in a coach. Seeing him crossing his arms, nobody dared to sit together with him. At the sight of Zhang Tie, his eyes even included a sort of threat--if Miss Daina didn't go there, I will beat you well!

All the girls of Rose Association and their family members had arrived. At the sight of the familiar faces, Zhang Tie became reassured inside.

Zhang Tie let the coaches to wait here for a while.

...

After 7-8 minutes, the last coach arrived. When the coach parked, Zhang Tie walked over there.

"I'm so sorry. My wife's younger brother is a bit naughty. When the vehicle arrived, we had to find him for a while..." seeing Zhang Tie, Wood explained on the vehicle in an embarrassing way. Wood brought the most family members. Besides his family members, he also brought his wife's family members, 9 people in total.

"It doesn't matter. It's just a few minutes. It's okay..." Zhang Tie comforted Wood before asking that military officer on the vehicle, "Is everybody here?"

"Yes, everybody is here!" that military officer nodded.

Zhang Tie then got off the vehicle and made a hand gesture to that vehicle in front of him. After that, he got on his own vehicle. Then, the fleet drove forward orderly.

Only after ten more minutes, the fleet had driven in that place where Zhang Tie and Colonel Lebniz welcomed the airship. That was an airship hub which was established by No. 39 Division outside the city, which was over 10 km away from Blackhot City.

When entering the base, some people on the vehicles were a bit restless. When the fleet stopped in front of that huge fury-level airship, Zhang Tie jumped off the vehicle at first before calling Miss Daina and the other people to get off their vehicles.

Watching such a huge, nice airship, everybody became dumbfounded. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie could fetch such a great airship as their traffic tool. Before the Catastrophe, this was like a large airplane. That was fabulous.

"This...this is our...our transport tool?" Barley stammered as he raised his head and watched this mountain-sized fury-level airship in its shadow.

"Of course, why not? Do you think I brought you here for a visit?" Zhang Tie smiled.

Standing in the huge shadow of the airship, many people raised their heads as they put their hand on the forehead and watched this huge giant in the air. Many girls of Rose Association became excited. For many people at present, this was their first time to take such a high-end traffic tool.

Captain Kerlin, who only carried a luggage, combed his mane-like hair casually by hand as he walked over there. After glancing at Zhang Tie, he implied, "Brat, that's my boy. You're not bad." After that, Captain Kerlin started to greet Miss Daina enthusiastically, "Miss Daina, are you also heading for Jinyun Country?"

At the sight of Captain Kerlin, Miss Daina was also stunned; however, she recovered her composure very soon, "Yes, I have prepared to take my younger brother to Jinyun Country for further treatment!"

After hearing Miss Daina's words, Captain Kerlin noticed that youth sitting in a wheelchair on her side who looked similar to Miss Daina. In a split second, Captain Kerlin had mixed moods. He finally understood why he could not get her heart——because he

didn't know about her situation at all.

Colonel Lebniz even bid a farewell to Zhang Tie. After saying some warmhearted words to Zhang Tie, he left.

Seeing off Colonel Lebniz, Zhang Tie instantly called them to board on the airship. They had enough time to be amazed inside the airship.

The coxswain and all the crew were welcoming them at the hatch door in tidy uniforms. Standing in two rows, all the crew chinned up and chested out in full spirit. Meanwhile, their hands were supporting on their waists, displaying their good spiritual outlook. The coxswain was standing at the entrance and greeting everybody entering the airship.

For many people who took airship for the first time, everything here was fresh and stimulative. When they boarded on the airship one after another, they became more thrilled about the luxurious and cozy layout inside. The girls twittered and circled around the berth cabins. Those members of God Blessing Association also started to look around out of curiosity.

Until 20 minutes later did they become a bit quiet when they confirmed about their own berth cabins.

There were two spacious, luxurious berth cabins in the airship, according to Zhang Tie's arrangement, one for Miss Daina and Linda, the other for Captain Kerlin and Miss Daina's younger brother.

The coxswain of the airship came to ask Zhang Tie whether to take off. Zhang Tie nodded. Then the airship slowly moved.

When the airship took off, many people ran onto the semi-closed sightseeing deck on the airship to experience how the airship lifted in the air. Seeing the airship gradually leaving the ground, many girls of Rose Association shrilled loudly due to excitement.

...

"Mr. Zhang Tie, I'm...I'm sorry for what happened!" the father of a girl of Rose Association called Feli finally got a chance to apologize to Zhang Tie solemnly once again. In order to show his sincerity to Feli's parents, when Zhang Tie visited Feli's home several days ago, he was treated as a human trader by Feli's parents and was poured by a basin of vegetable-washing water in the winter. Out of fury, Feli's dad almost wanted to send Zhang Tie to the police station.

However, at the sight of such a luxurious airship, Feli's parents finally believed in Zhang Tie's words; they then came here to apologize to Zhang Tie once again.

These days, Zhang Tie also experienced many things in the secular world. In order to take away these people whom he cared about, he had tasted a lot of feelings.

"Haha, it's okay. Just forget it!" Zhang Tie comforted Feli's parents. He even asked whether their berths were comfortable or not and whether did they have any other demands. Therefore, Feli's parents left pleasantly.

After the airship rose in the air for less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie came to bid a farewell to them.

The members of God Blessing Association were shocked too much; even Miss Daina and Captain Kerlin were stunned.

Zhang Tie just revealed a smile towards them, "I've already arranged everything for your arrival at Jinyun Country. Don't worry. You don't need to know what I'm going to do. I've promised to protect some lovable girls. It's time for me to fulfill my promise."

Captain Kerlin wanted to say something; however, Zhang Tie put one hand onto his shoulder. The man instantly changed his face as he felt the great, destructive power on Zhang Tie's hand.

Until then did Captain Kerlin realize that this teenager was not

that Zhang Tie of before.

...

After the airship left Blackhot City for 200 km and arrived above the wilderness, Zhang Tie ordered the coxswain to keep flying away from Norman Empire after he left. After that, the airship lowered its height and put down the rope. Zhang Tie then made a brave jump.

...

None of girls of Rose Association knew that Zhang Tie left. They were told that he had left an hour later.

Zhang Tie didn't tell them what he was going to do. Only Fiona and Susan burst out into tears when they were told that Zhang Tie had left...

Chapter 520: Sneaking in Abyan's Castle

Lurking in the woods, Zhang Tie was covered with a waterproof overcoat. He buried himself under snow and kept gazing at the castle down there quietly.

This was the second day since Zhang Tie came here. After leaving the airship, Zhang Tie dodged from crowded roads. After darkness fell, he returned from Wilderness to Blackhot City. Zhang Tie didn't enter the city; instead, he just lurked outside the city and kept his eyes on Abyan's castle.

After staying in Blackhot City for a few days, Zhang Tie had acknowledged many information about master Abyan.

After becoming a orange-robe pharmacist, airship had become master Abyan's traffic tool. He visited and returned from Nordinburg by airship this time. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only choose to ambush master Abyan in his castle.

That was a castle full of evils. After inquiring about master Abyan's message carefully, Zhang Tie learned that some people died in his castle every year due to various reasons since over one decade ago when master Abyan became well-known. Angel and the other girls of Rose Association who were killed were neither the first batch nor the last batch.

Of course, death was a very serious problem for others, however, it was trivial in master Abyan's eyes. With his special status as a pharmacist, master Abyan was always good at human relationships. Therefore, he could easily establish relationships with the most powerful ones and became the top guest of those people no matter who was ruling Blackhot City. In such a case, of course, it was nothing serious for him to kill some people.

After many pharmacists were murdered on the continents, master Abyan also employed many powerhouses to protect him and became more careful in travel.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could fight master Abyan. However, there were some things in life that must be done.

If it was two years ago, he and the other members of Hit-Plane Brotherhood would admire to be master Abyan's assistant or apprentice at school. However, now, he only wanted to chop off his head.

...

In the afternoon, a medium-sized airship landed on the airship hub outside the castle. After that, the airship was pushed into a warehouse beside the castle. Zhang Tie found that everybody in the castle were busy. In the evening, many vehicles drove into this castle from Blackhot City, making it boisterous at once.

Zhang Tie knew that master Abyan was back.

Zhang Tie kept waiting and observing quietly in the distant woods. He drunk one vial of all-purpose medicament in each three hours so as to maintain his best physical strength and state. He kept waiting there like a wild wolf and stealthily changed his locations in the chilly woods.

Until the dark fell and the temperature started to drop did those people return to their vehicles and left. After waiting for another few hours, the castle recovered silence while lamps gradually blacked out. At midnight, when almost everyone fell asleep, Zhang Tie finally stood up from the snow field.

After stretching his limbs, Zhang Tie put on the dark tore gloves. Additionally, he started a "rapid moving skill" and "hiding skill".

With rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie moved faster and more swiftly. With hiding skill, Zhang Tie lowered his Qi by one level, enabling him more difficult to be found and sensed.

With Zhang Tie's dark vision, evening became as clear as daytime.

Zhang Tie soon arrived at the exterior manor of master Abyan's

castle after flashing less than 2 km. In the evening, some people had started to go on patrol in the exterior manor. However, they were just small figures. They could only prevent commoners from entering the castle. Therefore, Zhang Tie easily flashed across the manor and came to the wall of the castle, which was as high as dozens of meters.

The defense of the castle begun stricter from here. Some people were standing on the high wall. Additionally, some soldiers were going on patrol near here. Zhang Tie then came to the dark foot of a high bartizan outside the high wall and started to climb up.

With a terrifying strength, iron-blood battle Qi and that pair of dark tore gloves, Zhang Tie firmly seized the exterior granite wall like grabbing rotten wood and clay sculpture. He easily inserted his fingers into the solid rocks and kept climbing up.

Like a swift gecko moving in the dark, Zhang Tie soon reached below the crown-sized shooting mouth at the top of the bartizan which was higher than 40 meters. As long as Zhang Tie raised his head, he could see the part of steaming ballista that stretched out of the shooting mouth.

Through the shooting mouth, he could see light and hear human voice.

The moment Zhang Tie moved closer to the shooting mouth, he heard the sound of opening door and a fricative sound of leather shoes stepping on the floor.

"Head, why are you here? It's so late..."

"Hmm, it's the remained roasted goose of the banquet. I asked Wella to bring some here. It's a bit cold, but you can still eat it..."

Muffled cheers then drifted from the ballista.

"Ah, those rich men are really wasteful. How could they throw such delicious food? We cannot always enjoy such good food!" Zhang Tie heard a voice mixed with a chewing sound.

"After enjoying it, be careful on your work. Keep your eyes widely opened until the next shift!"

"Don't worry, head!"

"Head, when will you marry Wella?"

"Idiot. If Wella gets married to the head, she won't make good food for us in the kitchen!" a voice broke...

"Ah, I found a female cook in the kitchen. She's nice, white skin and big breasts. Head, can you ask Wella to introduce her to me?"

"F*ck, you can not even make 3 gold coins a month. How dare you dream for that? When you could make 10 gold coins like the head, even if you don't open your mouth, women would come for you."

They then derided and taunted each other...

...

Hearing their talks, Zhang Tie knew that he had made the right choice. Abyan deserved to be killed; however, not each of his subordinates should die. Many people in this castle and manor were average people from Blackhot City. They were just here to survive themselves. "It's truly cool to make a massacre here before chopping off Abyan's head; however, how many people would be killed together with that bastard like cannon fodder?"

Zhang Tie lay in the shadow below the shooting mouth of the ballista. Until that 'head' left the bartizan in about 5 minutes did Zhang Tie detour to the other side of the bartizan. He came onto the wall of the castle through the stairs of the bartizan and slid into the castle along the wall.

This castle was almost as large as Jinwu Castle. It was very difficult to find a specific target in hundreds of rooms. He might expose himself at any time.

Therefore, the best way was to have someone lead him there.

Commoners didn't work, the steward of this castle was the most proper one.

As for such a castle, when the owner returned and invited his guests in the evening, the steward could not take a rest until all the guest left and his owner went to bed. Therefore, the steward's room must black out in the end.

Additionally, according to Zhang Tie's knowledge, although being not absolute, a qualified steward in a castle should live in a room, through the window or balcony of which, he could observe the major areas of the entire Castle.

Although so many rooms were still bright, Zhang Tie instantly locked some targets facing the front of the castle and the manor.

After dodging from two groups of patrolling guards, Zhang Tie flashed across an open place between the exterior castle and the interior castle. After that, he sprung up from the ground and stuck onto the external wall of the inner castle like a gecko in a shadowy area. Closely after that, he started to "swim" towards those windows in his memory one after another.

Through the first two windows, Zhang Tie caught sight of a warehouse and a guard's room. When he was close to the third window, Zhang Tie heard the sound "Pah...pah..pah..." from inside the room.

Zhang Tie was very familiar with such a sound caused by collision between fleshes.

Zhang Tie glanced at the inside of the room and saw an old douchebag colliding a woman's butts while pressing her on the sofa.

He showed his disgusting, loose and fatty butts while sweating all over. That woman was still wearing a servant's black-and-white uniform.

After a few minutes, the old asshole stopped while panting and

cramping heavily.

"Cecelia...trust me, the manor outside the city needs an inspector. You can send your brother to have a try over there next week..." the old guy opened his mouth after resting for a few minutes.

The female servant remained silence in the whole process. She silently put on her skirt and helped him clean his body. Before leaving the room, she said in a low voice, "Thanks, steward, please...please don't tell my younger brother about this!"

"Don't worry. As long as you follow my order, I will not tell anything to your younger brother!"

When the female servant left, the old guy even touched her butts before seeing her off with a greedy look.

Hearing the name Cecelia, Zhang Tie prayed silently for some bad-luck guy. What an utilitarian world! Between some young men who enjoyed eating the remained roasted goose left by the guests on the bartizan and a disgusting, fatty old guy who had some power over personnel affairs, any slightly beautiful female cook preferred to climb onto this old guy's bed.

After being indulged in love affairs, the old man exhausted his physical and mental strength. He then started to take a nap on the sofa with his eyes closed. Not knowing how long had passed, when the old douchebag felt a bit chilly, he realized that the window had not been closed.

When he opened his eyes, he saw a black-haired young man standing in front of him. Before uttering any voice, his neck had been pinched by that young man's terrifying black glove.

That young man's strength felt like that of a strong adult while the old guy's neck was like a slim candle. As long as the young man used his strength, the old guy's neck would be broken.

The steward started to struggle; however, it was useless as a fly

could never push down a city wall.

"If you want to survive and follow my order, then you nod; if not, I will kill you right now!"

Before the old douchebag was suffocated, he heard Zhang Tie's sound. Although being too weak to struggle, he tried his best to nod.

Zhang Tie then slightly loosed his grip, allowing him to take a breath.

"Who...who are you, what..what do you want?" after recovering his composure a bit, the old man watched Zhang Tie with a terrified look.

"You don't need to know who I am. I'm here only to chop off Abyan's head. As I don't know the road in the castle, please lead me there!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

"Ah..no way..." the old man changed his face right away.

Zhang Tie then replied with a smile, "You might have not figured it out. From now on, if you want to save your life, you'd better pray that I could chop off Abyan's head!"

"How come that be?"

"Why not? You only have three choices now; Don't follow my order, pretend to follow my order and play tricks or follow my order. If you choose the first one, I will kill you right away; if you play tricks, I will kill you too; if you follow my order but If I fail, Abyan will kill you. Therefore, you should know that the only chance for you to survive tonight was to pray for Abyan's death!"

With a few words, Zhang Tie had broken through the old douchebag's mental defense, making his face turn completely pale...

...

Chapter 521: Killing the Enemy with One Punch

Zhang Tie knew that an aged man who was greedy about sex and tyrannically abused his power would be very afraid of death. As this kind of person would always be used to indulging in various joys, they were very afraid of losing their privileges.

It was very easy to break the mental defense of these kinds of people. As long as you let them know that they were in the palm of your hand and you could stomp them to death like a bug at any time, they would forget their ego completely. Even if you made them lick the soles of your shoes, they would do it better than a dog.

Such a person was essentially a worm, regardless of their position.

Of course, in order to stop him from playing any tricks, Zhang Tie took out a sharp dagger before putting on that loose, ascetic's robe. In this way, that old douche-bag would remember that he might lose his life at any time.

For Zhang Tie, he'd prefer to be stabbed ten times by a dagger than be struck by the dark tearer. However, this old douche-bag didn't know about the effect of the dark tearer. In the eyes of commoners, a punch could never match a dagger.

Therefore, Zhang Tie took out a sharp, bright dagger. After playing with it in his hands for a short while in front of the old guy, he hid it in the loose sleeve of his robe.

Before going out, Zhang Tie uttered, "Wait for a second."

The old guy quivered at once as he turned around. "What...what else?"

Zhang Tie pointed at the fingerprints on the old douche-bag's neck and said, "You need to put on a high-collared shirt. Or else the

fingerprints might arouse people's attention!"

The old guy hurriedly changed his clothes. Zhang Tie glanced at him for a while carefully before he nodded and allowed him to open the door. "Remember, you need to be relaxed. Don't play tricks or it will cost you your life. Don't do stupid things. Then you might survive. If Abyan was dead, nobody would doubt you!"

"You..really won't kill me?"

"You can choose to doubt me or believe in me. Which one do you choose?"

The steward of the castle quivered for a second before becoming silent. Zhang Tie then put on his hood and covered a small part of his face. After hiding himself in that loose robe, Zhang Tie followed the old guy out of the door.

It was very quiet in the corridor outside. There was a dim, fluorite lamp every ten or more meters. Zhang Tie and the steward were walking on the carpet silently one after another.

It was Zhang Tie's first time here. The dark red carpet and the dark brown dado felt weird and oppressive. Walking along the corridor, Zhang Tie felt as uncomfortable as walking along a long, bloody esophagus of an animal.

'Is this the special aesthetic standard of pharmacists?' Zhang Tie wondered, but his sixth sense told him that the atmosphere here was weird.

At this moment, most of the people in the castle had gone to bed. Therefore, the castle became very quiet.

Less than half a minute after they left the room, they had already caught sight of a team of patrol guards.

Watching them walking towards him and the steward, Zhang Tie felt the steward become obviously stiff. Therefore, he put his sharp dagger against the steward's waist through his loose sleeve while walking behind.

The two parties then passed by silently, and nobody exchanged glances with each other.

Zhang Tie then let out a sigh slightly. "Why don't they ask who I am?" Zhang Tie asked the old guy in front of him in a low voice.

"Because there are always some guests from Blackhot City. When guests come here, they don't want to show themselves to the public. Therefore, they just wear a long gown like yours and cover a part of their face!" the old guy explained in a low voice.

"Oh, who are the guests?"

"They are young ladies from big clans or rich families. They are all lonely. Master Abyan will cure their loneliness! Some of them are rich men in Blackhot City. As they are impotent, they come here to buy yang qi strengthening water from Master Abyan," he replied.

'F*ck.' Zhang Tie finally understood why women and men from Blackhot City always slid inside this castle for Abyan. Women were here to sleep with Abyan, while men were here for yang qi strengthening medicine. As they didn't want to be recognized by others, they always dressed in this way. Therefore, those patrol guards just pretended to not have seen them.

After a while, the steward led Zhang Tie downward along some spiral stairs inside the castle.

"Doesn't Abyan live above the ground?" Zhang Tie became a bit dubious.

"Master Abyan works above the ground. But his bed room, study room and store room of expensive goods are in the basement of the castle! This is also one of Master Abyan's weird habits."

Zhang Tie took a deep breath. He didn't believe that this old guy would dare to play any tricks on him. Therefore, he just followed the old guy downward. On the way, they met some guards and passed by them smoothly.

The spiral stairs didn't come to an end until they were dozens of meters underground. At the end of the stairs was a channel. If not for the carpet on the ground and the mural paintings on the two walls, Zhang Tie would have started to suspect that he was led into an underground prison.

"After circling around here, you will arrive at Master Abyan's room. There're two guards outside the door. They were especially promoted by Master Abyan and are his trusted followers. They don't follow my orders. You can go there yourself!" The steward besought in a low voice, "As I've brought you here, just let me go. Otherwise, you can batter me unconscious now!"

"No, you have to go there together with me. If there truly are guards outside the door, I have to go inside the room together with you in case I arouse their doubts. Since we're both here already, do you think that you have any other choice?" Zhang Tie said coldly.

The old guy grit his teeth as he led Zhang Tie down the tunnel with quivering steps.

Zhang Tie indeed caught sight of two guards over there. They noticed Zhang Tie and the steward at the same time. When they were closer to the guards, the old guy could not restrain his tenseness any more while facing an increasingly greater stress caused by Master Abyan.

The two guards eventually stared at the old guy.

The old douche-bag's quivering body aroused the attention of the two guards. Finally, when they were over ten meters away, one of the two guards raised his hand to stop them from moving forward.

Noticing that the guards had become alert, Zhang Tie instantly shocked the steward's heart into pieces with one punch before darting towards the two guards at maximum speed. At the same time, his two fists struck the lower abdomens of the two guards without encountering any obstacles.

Zhang Tie moved so fast that the two guards had no time to respond at all. As a LV 8 fighter, after eating nine huge-wolf seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie's explosiveness and strength had already raised his fighting strength to the highest level. Additionally, he was aided by his rapid moving skills, and therefore, he could reach such an unimaginable speed in such a short distance.

In this castle, commoners could be forgiven. However, that old douche-bag was remarkably Abyan's accomplice. He must have done a lot of bad things for Abyan, otherwise he would not gain Abyan's trust. How could Zhang Tie keep him alive? Zhang Tie didn't need to fulfill his promise to him.

Bad guys' secrets should not be preserved. No need to be honest to bad guys—This was what Zhang Tie's mom had taught him when he was young.

When Zhang Tie's fist struck the lower abdomens of the two guards, the faster one among the two guards had just put his hand onto his sword handle. Zhang Tie's iron-blood battle qi then exploded inside their bodies, mingling their guts into a mess.

Without uttering a sound, they had already fallen to the ground.

Zhang Tie then put his hand on the handle of the door in front of him. Releasing his great strength, he instantly broke the lock. Soon after that, he kicked open the door and threw off his robe. Almost at the same time, he flashed in.

There were two people in the room. Hearing the noise, they both raised their heads.

Zhang Tie caught sight of the two people, one in an orange pharmacist's robe was about 30 to 50 years old and looked weird and charming. The other one was more impressive to Zhang Tie because of his wolf-like eyes. Being gazed at by that man, Zhang Tie felt like being gazed at by a wolf.

Zhang Tie found that they were negotiating about something.

The one in the pharmacist's robe was sitting in the main position while the other man was talking about something with him.

"Zhang Tie!"

"Major Franca?"

At this moment, both Zhang Tie and Major Franca were shocked.

Remembering Zhang Tie's excellent swordsmanship, which had almost wounded him, Major Franca responded immediately as he sprung up from his chair and drew out of his long sword, increasing the distance between him and Zhang Tie at once. Meanwhile, he slashed towards Zhang Tie's neck in a very ferocious way.

After more than one year, Major Franca had made great progress in both movement and fighting skills. It seemed that he had already reached LV 9.

Major Franca was also full of confidence as he showed a joking expression, like how a wild wolf looked when it caught sight of its prey.

With a cold expression, Zhang Tie just watched Major Franca's sword, which was full of gloomy, killing intent, drawing close to him. After that, he stretched out his arm and caught Major Franca's blade at once, twisting the blade into noodles. He then punched through Franca's chest, revealing his fist through Franca's back...

Chapter 522: The Real Status of Master Abyan

Major Franca stared at Zhang Tie with a look of disbelief. Over the past year, he had made great progress. He thought that he could have easily defeated Zhang Tie. He had not imagined that he was done for the moment the teenager attacked him.

At this moment, Major Franca could not sense any pain at all. Instead, he only felt dumb and cold due to his gradually weakening qi and vitality, like when a balloon was deflated by someone. He then lowered his head and stared at the arm that penetrated through his chest before looking at Zhang Tie's sarcastic expression.

"I've not imagined...that you...could improve so fast!"

Soon after muttering this sentence, plasma started to pour out of Major Franca's mouth.

Zhang Tie drew back his hand rapidly as he threw the ball of scrap iron onto the ground. After that, he gazed into the wolf eyes of Major Franca. "In Blapei you should have realized that you have no advantage over me in response time!"

"Don't...I?"

After muttering this, Major Franca fell down.

At the same time, Zhang Tie charged at Abyan.

Abyan was just watching him quietly without any sort of flurried look. When Zhang Tie pounced at him, he simply stomped on the ground. Almost at the same time, a wall of seven centimeters wide steel bars fell down from the ceiling of the room, keeping Zhang Tie several meters away from him. Abyan instantly slid downward into a cave that appeared on the floor and disappeared at once.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Abyan would have such a layout

in his room. When Zhang Tie was dodging away from the barrier, Abyan had already disappeared in front of him. Zhang Tie was almost driven mad.

"Ah...open..." Zhang Tie roared as he tightly held two steel bars and started to pull them open, causing cracks on the bricks that held them. Gradually, the two steel bars became bent and allowed Zhang Tie to slip through. At the sight of that six or seven square meter cave on the floor, Zhang Tie instantly jumped inside.

The cave was inclined downward. The stones inside had been polished and they were very smooth. It looked like an underground tunnel. Zhang Tie kept sliding downward. After over ten meters, he heard a sound above his head. Raising his head, he found the entrance of the cave was blocked. Zhang Tie's heart instantly raced as he became alert. During the process, he grabbed the smooth walls of the tunnel using his dark tearer so as to control his speed and balance in case of an emergency.

Even though he was trying to control his speed, Zhang Tie still slid down at a very high speed. When he was about 100 meters away from the exit, Zhang Tie caught sight of some light. He then pushed off the wall with his hand to accelerate at once, flashing out of the tunnel immediately.

The moment he landed, Zhang Tie had rolled forward on the ground to an alert posture.

At the sight of the scene, Zhang Tie was greatly stunned.

This underground space was like a theater. The entire space was as bright as daytime. It was covered with high mirrors everywhere. The mirrors formed a maze. However, Abyan's reflection appeared in each mirror at each angle. He was watching Zhang Tie calmly.

'This is a lighting and shadow maze according to the principles of optics. Abyan didn't know that I was going to come here, therefore he didn't prepare this for me, but for himself. How abnormal he must be for setting hundreds of mirrors in such a hidden place.'

Zhang Tie looked around and was confused about Abyan's whereabouts.

"Zhang Tie. I've heard of your name for a long time, but this my first time seeing you here. It seems that you want to kill me?" In the mirrors Abyan opened his mouth as calmly as before.

"Right. I'm here to chop off your head today!" Zhang Tie slightly frowned. Abyan's voice drifted from everywhere, making him fail to locate him. 'It seems that Abyan has set a special acoustical transmission system here.'

Now that he could not find Abyan for a short while, Zhang Tie didn't wait there anymore. Instead, he chose the simplest and most efficient way to force Abyan to show himself. He moved in front of a mirror and punched it, breaking the expensive crystal mirror into pieces.

After another punch, he broke another mirror...

After the third punch, he broke one more mirror...

After a few seconds, seven or eight Abyans disappeared.

"May you tell me why you want to kill me?" Master Abyan in the mirrors still looked very calm.

"To get revenge!" Zhang Tie replied as he kept breaking mirrors one after another.

"Is it because of the dead girls in Blackhot City?" Abyan forced a smile.

"How do you know of the relationship between me and them?" Zhang Tie stopped.

"I didn't know about that before. However, I found out after the arrival of Franca. Therefore, I employed those girls as my assistants. I wanted to gain some information from them. Both Franca and I are very curious about you. We want to know your secret."

Zhang Tie had not imagined that their deaths were related to himself. Tightly clenching his fist, Zhang Tie radiated a furious killing intent from all over his body.

"What secret do I have?"

"You have too many secrets. You can form Iron-Blood Hidden Strength in a short time. You can defend blue frost. You can achieve fast improvements in your physical strength and fighting strength. You might even have formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi after only a bit longer than one year. Your body is priceless in my eyes!" Saying this, Master Abyan's greedy eyes almost blazed as he licked his lips.

"F*ck, if you want to know my secret, just do that to me. Why did you make so many innocent people involved?" Zhang Tie became completely furious. His battle-qi totem rolled densely as he accelerated his movement by more than ten times in a split second, breaking dozens of mirrors at once, causing constant cracking sounds.

"What silly people! You still know nothing about your secrets even now. Do you think that I could only get your secrets through you? You're wrong. As you were the first and only boyfriend in the lives of those girls, I could also discover your secret through those girls!" Saying this calmly, Abyan watched Zhang Tie, who was driven extremely mad, with a jeering smile. "I see a very powerful vital source in you which has new-born features. Even if you didn't come for me, I would have come for you. I've not imagined that you could send yourself here!"

"Go die!" After destroying the majority of those mirrors, Zhang Tie finally found the optical principles of the maze. He deduced which one was the true figure of Abyan. Therefore, he charged at Abyan and punched at him at once.

When his fist was close to Abyan, Zhang Tie saw that Abyan's eyes turned completely dark and disappeared like the black

background on the stage.

Abyan opened his mouth and shrilled like how a siren cried, causing all the mirrors to explode into pieces. Zhang Tie felt like he was being hit by hundreds of kilograms of iron hammers at once. With a humming sound in his head, his ears, nostrils and eyes started to bleed. At the same time, Zhang Tie was sent flying back in the air.

'That's powerful, that's too powerful. Abyan is too powerful to be a human. Right, he is not a human at all...'

After falling on the ground, Zhang Tie spat out blood as he struggled to get up. He then watched Abyan with an amazed look.

At this moment, Abyan was twisting his body weirdly while his orange robe swelled, broke and exploded into pieces.

With a "tsla" sound, his robe was completely ripped apart while a crocodile-tail like thing appeared from his back. Although he still looked like a man, his skull and brow ridge started to bulge as his face and neck were gradually covered with greenish scales. His hands transformed into monster's claws with sharp fingernails. Additionally, his shoes were broken as his feet started to change completely.

At the same time, a long tongue stretched out of his mouth like that of a poisonous snake. After quivering in the air twice, it was drawn back at once, causing a "hugh" sound.

"De...mon..." Zhang Tie stammered like he was being pressed by a 100 kilogram object.

"Wrong. We're shadow demons, the rarest species of demons. Please don't confuse us with common demons!" Abyan's voice became muffled like something was in his throat, causing an exotic resonance.

Chapter 523: The Holy War Broke out

"Shadow demon?" Zhang Tie heard about this term in the legend. This kind of demon caused a catastrophe to humans. They got their name from their great transforming ability. They were like chameleon and some octopus at the bottom of the sea. They were born to transform their looks. The transforming ability of shadow demon was much greater than that of chameleon and octopus. This was the most weird and dangerous ability adopted by demons. As long as they liked, they could transform into any person.

The fact that Master Abyan was a shadow demon could shock numerous people for sure. This was out of everyone's imagination, yet it was reasonable. Because in the human history, those shadow demons who could transform into humans had brought a huge terrifying catastrophe to all the humans. When shadow demons appeared as human elites, they might become the presidents, leaders and those big figures who had great powers of a human country. If such a demon who desired destruction of humans by keeping them under the control of demons and ascended to the throne of a human country, it would cause a much greater harm to humans than a demon army.

Besides casually transforming their own looks, shadow demons had a more frightening ability, to plunder and combine with other's genes. They were terrifying gene plunderers.

Shadow demons were the synonym of liars, plots and catastrophe.

"It turns out that the frightening demon was always near me. It's always in Blackhot City as an influential person."

Master Abyan, who displayed his real status as a shadow demon, walked towards Zhang Tie one step after another. Zhang Tie didn't know why such a demon would appear in Blackhot City. However, Zhang Tie was clear that now that it had displayed its original

look, it didn't plan to let him survive here. If he fell into its hand, Zhang Tie could only expect for death in a faster way.

When two enemies encountered in a narrow path, they had to fight for death!

"Kill..." Widely opening his furious eyes, Zhang Tie darted towards Abyan once again without any fear. He reached directly towards Abyan's chest with thunder-like fists and lightning movements. This movement gathered all of Zhang Tie's spiritual energy and qi. It was the most powerful attack that Zhang Tie could afford.

However, Abyan, who had recovered his demon's look, just stood there still. When Zhang Tie struck onto Abyan's scaled chest, he became excited inside. Almost in a split second, Zhang Tie had attacked Abyan for over 100 times all over his body; including head, neck, chest and lower abdomen.

However, Abyan just stood there still like a mountain.

"How could it be?" Zhang Tie became stunned. Each time he touched Abyan's body, Zhang Tie felt like being blocked by a strength. There seemed to be an invisible armor on Abyan.

Abyan's tail then swept towards Zhang Tie like a leg. It struck on Zhang Tie's chest, sending Zhang Tie flying back over 30 m. Zhang Tie finally hit onto the wall and fell down together with some broken stones from the wall.

Zhang Tie then spat out mouthful of blood as he felt his bones being broken all over. At the same time, Zhang Tie felt humming in his head while sparkles were in front of his eyes. If not having eaten a lot of Iron-Body Fruits, Zhang Tie knew that he must have been completely crippled. Two of his ribs seemed to have broken. Besides, his breast bone had cracked. Panting heavily, Zhang Tie struggled to get up from the ground slowly.

"You humans are as weak as ants in our eyes. Among all the

people that I've ever seen, I have to admit that you're the most powerful one on LV 8 at this age. Your strength is even greater than most of LV 11 fighting masters. You gave me a big surprise. However, gaps between levels could not be easily narrowed. For instance, a bigger mice could not be heavier than a new-born elephant. In front of a LV 14 fighting demon who has formed his protective battle Qi, even if you've already formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi and have much greater strength than that of others on your level, it's still useless! However, your body has made me more surprised!" Aryan revealed a smile on his fully-scaled, grim face before walking towards Zhang Tie one step after another.

"LV 14 fighting demon? protective battle qi?" Zhang Tie felt hopeless at once when he heard these words. Zhang Tie could hardly narrow the 6 levels gap.

Zhang Tie attempted to contact with Castle of Black Iron; however, he found his spiritual energy was very unstable at this moment. That guy's terrifying sonic attack directly penetrated through his head and messed up his spiritual energy. Plus the following collision, Zhang Tie had been greatly wounded all over. Of course his spiritual energy could not exist independently from his body. At this moment, his spiritual energy was absolutely like a mustang that escaped from the stable, which could be hardly collected at once.

"Are you regretful about coming here?" Zhang Tie asked himself. However, even now, he still didn't feel regretful at all. He had to do something. He just wondered why a LV 14 fighting demon would hide in Blackhot City in the look of a human.

"I know what are you thinking about. For our shadow demons, we could not exert our utmost ability ourselves; instead, we have to exert our ability to the utmost by combining ourselves into human society. We have many fighting demons. In the eyes of many powerful humans, especially knights, there's no difference between a LV 14 fighting demon and a LV 8 fighter. Therefore, I

chose to hide in Blackhot City so as to gain greater privilege and influence as a pharmacist and play a bigger role than a LV 14 fighting demon!"

Before Zhang Tie asked the reason, Abyan had already explained it to him, "After knowing this, you will have a good death. Do not struggle anymore, because it would make you more painful. I could feel your upsurging vitality. If I could engulf you, I might complete the evolution of my second form. I've been waiting for it since a long time. It's very difficult for me to meet a man who's suitable to be engulfed and could bring me much vitality. Commoners are useless for me. If I engulf commoners, I have to pay the same amount of vitality to gain vitality from them."

Zhang Tie felt that Abyan just treated him as a yummy dim sum, a rare tonic.

"Pah..." Zhang Tie spat out a mouth of blood as he revealed an untamed smile, "You want to engulf me? Go eat shit!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie darted towards the shadow demon once again. Zhang Tie would never make this b*stard happy even at the risk of his life.

At this moment, Zhang Tie drew out of the dagger. He exerted his full efforts to throw it towards Abyan in a sound-breaking speed like a flying javelin.

The dagger stopped in front of Abyan's left eye, closely after a loud sonic boom.

Abyan's invisible battle qi undulated for a short while. The dagger then fell down before Abyan, who caught it by hand and threw it back towards Zhang Tie, causing another sonic boom. The dagger almost penetrated through Zhang Tie's left scapula, causing a blood spurt on Zhang Tie's shoulder. At the same time, Zhang Tie was sent sliding back and was finally nailed onto the stony wall on

his back. Zhang Tie uttered a muffled harrumph as half of his body was tainted with fresh blood at once. He looked miserable; however, his battle intent was still burning in his eyes as he deadly gazed at Abyan who was walking towards him.

It was already out of Zhang Tie's ability to narrow the 6 levels gap. That was a bottomless chasm and an endless natural moat.

"I've told you, if the huge gap between levels could be mended up by brutal strength, people didn't need to cultivate anymore!" saying this, Abyan slowly walked in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie stretched out his right hand and pulled out of the dagger on his left shoulder and stabbed towards Abyan.

Abyan just stretched out his weird claw and slightly twisted Zhang Tie's right hand, breaking all the bones of Zhang Tie's right hand at once along with a cracking sound.

Zhang Tie kicked towards Abyan's lower abdomen like a huge ax while breaking the air. Seeing this, Abyan swept his tail over Zhang Tie's feet. With a cracking sound, Zhang Tie's feet were broken.

Spitting out blood, Zhang Tie knelt down by one knee to maintain his balance. At this moment, Abyan stretched out one claw and stuck Zhang Tie's neck, lifting Zhang Tie above from the ground. He then moved Zhang Tie in front of him as he looked straight at Zhang Tie's eyes.

"I rarely have seen such a stubborn person who has a great potential. As long as you promise me to serve demons loyally and become my bloody descendant, I will give you a chance to survive. You can have paramount privilege and have numerous women; you can enjoy everything in the world..." Abyan gazed at Zhang Tie with his pitch dark eyes as he said icily.

"Mo...motherf*cker!" Zhang Tie ferociously struck onto Abyan's face with his head. Although Zhang Tie's head started to bleed,

Abyan was still safe and sound. Zhang Tie raised his head and grit his teeth before striking onto Abyan's face once again. Blood spurted out of Zhang Tie's skull. After striking Abyan for the third time, Zhang Tie's skull was broken while his forehead had transformed. Whereas, Abyan's protective battle qi remained unchanged as firm as steel.

Zhang Tie's eyes were blurred by fresh blood, making the world in Zhang Tie's eyes look bloody.

"If so, go to hell..." seeing Zhang Tie being still that uncompromising, Abyan's tail raised while the tip of the tail inserted into Zhang Tie's spine through Zhang Tie's neck.

Zhang Tie's body then started to quiver all over. Being stabbed by that tail, Zhang Tie felt that his qi, blood and energy were all absorbed by that tail.

"How energetic vitality. Your vitality is at least 20 times that of human fighters of your level. This is really the best gift from the Demon God!" Abyan became thrilled as he grim his face and revealed a smile. Meanwhile, he stretched out his snake's tongue and started to lick the fresh blood that flew off Zhang Tie's head like tasting yummy food.

Abyan's body started to radiated red glow. With a heavy bloody taste, the red glow slowly covered Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie felt that he was losing his vitality rapidly. This process was completely converse to that when he ate seven-strength fruits. When the tail inserted into his spine, Zhang Tie felt that his strength of qi, strength of blood, strength of bone, strength of marrow, strength of vein, strength of passage and strength of spirit were constantly drawn out from his body and flew into Abyan's body.

The vitality that mentioned by demons referred to the above

seven strength in human body.

The red glow over Abyan's body started to appear more brilliant while the bloody taste covering Zhang Tie's body grew dense. Gradually, an ox horn started to bulge on Abyan's forehead. Meanwhile, a bone film appeared and gradually grew on Abyan's back like rat's wings...

Abyan became so excited that he even raised his head and uttered a terrifying roar.

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened to Abyan. It seemed to be an evolution of shadow demon. However, Zhang Tie knew that he was losing his vitality rapidly. He was going to die soon. "If not those seven-strength fruits, I might have already died."

Using his instinct, Zhang Tie moved his left hand and reached towards his double-carp sword. At the same time, a sharp sword qi flashed out of Zhang Tie's waist and circled around Abyan's neck...

"Hoho, I've not imagined that you could play such a trick. But it's useless. These common weapons could never break my protective battle qi at all..." although the sharp golden carp blade circled around Abyan's neck, Abyan just waved his head to make the golden carp blade drop off Zhang Tie's hand. Abyan then watched Zhang Tie with a bantering and satisfied look, allowing Zhang Tie to struggle, he even scratched him using his left hand in vain, "Struggle, humble human; be afraid, weak human; your fresh blood would be sweeter with your fear!"

...

"Am I going to die this time?" Zhang Tie's consciousness gradually became blurry...

Not knowing how long have passed, Zhang Tie suddenly became awake. This was the last awakening time of his life. When he woke up, he found that he only had 10% of his vitality. While Abyan became more terrifying. The bloody light covered Zhang Tie like a

heavy bloody cocoon, making Zhang Tie pretty weak.

Because too much spiritual energy had been drawn out, Zhang Tie felt that his remaining spiritual energy became stable although it was still flowing away.

The horn on Abyan's forehead was growing bigger. Watching the horn, Zhang Tie instinctively took out that horn that he picked up from the sludge in the river when he attended the survival training in the wild wolf valley from Castle of Black Iron. After that, he injected all the Iron-Blood Battle Qi into that sharp horn before stabbing it towards Abyan's heart...

The sharp object radiated a dim light after being injected with Iron-Blood Battle Qi. It smoothly broke Abyan's protective battle Qi and stabbed into Abyan's heart.

Abyan quivered at once as he watched that object with an unimaginable look. Like being fixed, his face was full of fear...

Zhang Tie also started to quiver. When he stabbed that horn into Abyan's body, he felt his palm hot as a great amount of energy flew into his body through that horn. Zhang Tie felt being locked tightly with Abyan at this moment. Neither of them could move.

Abyan was engulfing Zhang Tie's energy just now; however, after Zhang Tie stabbed that horn into Abyan's body, he started to engulf Abyan conversely. One human, one demon and one strange horn then formed a mysterious circulation.

Abyan wanted to open his mouth; however, he couldn't say any word, neither could Zhang Tie. He only felt getting hotter and hotter all over while his qi, blood, energy and red glow grew richer and thicker...

Before completely losing his consciousness, Zhang Tie locked that arched door in his mind——go back!

...

The news that Abyan was assassinated made his castle become an

empty place in three days. All the commoners who were afraid of being involved with this accident had escaped away. Besides, they took away all the valuable objects across the castle.

The whole Blackhot City was in chaos...

After seven days, a person appeared above the castle like a burning cloud.

Watching that castle at his foot, Zhao Yuan growled out of fury as he released a punch downwards the castle. With a boom, Blackhot City seemed experiencing an earthquake. At the same time, Abyan's castle disappeared, leaving a 100-m deep pit while the underground water filled the pit.

After a few days, a senior investigation team led by a big figure and some knights assigned by Norman Empire arrived at Blackhot City. When they stood on the side of the lake which was said to be a castle one month ago, they all became silent.

...

After over one month, over 30 countries and regions across Blackson Humans Corridor broke out demon catastrophes. Being controlled by puppet worms, the undying army spread across the ground like locusts...

The third holy war broke out!

...

Chapter 524: Three Years

Zhang Tie felt that he had made a long, sweet dream and became a fetus in his mom's womb once again. Being soaked in warm water, Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he slept. When he started to recover his consciousness, he twisted his body for a short while before opening his eyes.

It was dark in front of his eyes. After a short while, Zhang Tie realized that it was not because he lost his visual ability, but because he was wrapped in a thick, hard and dark cocoon-like mucous shell.

"I've not been suffocated to death?"

A whim flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. He then started to move his limbs. With a crashing sound, he tore off that mucous shell and walked out of it.

When he walked out of there, Zhang Tie was not adapted to the tender light in the outside. Therefore, he slightly narrowed his eyes. After a few seconds, Zhang Tie started to glance over this place.

Abyan was also wrapped in a 2m-high bloody cocoon. However, Abyan had become a completely dried corpse. He almost shrunk by half of his original body. Like a weathered lizard flesh, he looked very frightened. The sharp horn was still there in his chest.

After glancing at Abyan, Zhang Tie moved his eyes away.

He caught sight of the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree, which made him reassured at once. As long as he was in Blackhot City, he would be safe. However, the small tree in front of him looked a bit different than that before. Concretely, it grew taller with more dense leaves. "The surrounding houses didn't change too much; but why this space became a bit different than before?"

Zhang Tie remembered that when he came here last time, the

length and the width of the space of Castle of Black Iron was less than 1 km. However, at this moment, both the length and the width of the space of Castle of Black Iron reached about 10 km, which was almost one hundreds times greater than the former figures. Zhang Tie saw a lush plain in front of him which was covered with various crops and woods. What a prosperous scene! There was even a 100-m high hill miles away. The hill was covered with undulant woods. Plus an over 20 square km of glittering lake. All this shocked Zhang Tie.

If not that small tree and the rolling colorful clouds in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie almost thought that he had come to the wrong place.

"But, it really feels great to gain a new birth."

At this moment, based on the angle of the light in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie knew that it was noon. Some diligent bees were circling around Zhang Tie while being attracted by the special smell of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie could sense the pleasant mood of those bees.

Standing still for a few seconds out of amazement, Zhang Tie found Heller was not here. Therefore, he came to the riverside which was not far from him and prepared to cleanse up himself. Because he found that his clothes had been ragged and rotten, which looked poorer than beggars. Besides, he felt glutinous which made him more uncomfortable.

Zhang Tie came to the riverside. The moment he put off that dark tore gloves, he caught sight of his hands.

This pair of hands were completely different from that before as they were covered with black scaled skin while each fingernail looked as sharp as a blade, shining cold light.

"Ah..." Zhang Tie was too scared that he started to exclaim. At the same time, he faltered back. However, before he fell down, he

felt that another foot appeared on his back which supported on the ground to maintain his balance. Zhang Tie looked back and wanted to see what was that. Unexpectedly, that thing moved in front of him in a very agile way. He could see it clearly...

It was a tail like that of Abyan, which was similar to his third finger or third foot...

Zhang Tie was too frightened that his face turned blue at once. He became completely flurried. Right then, his clothes were broken while a pair of wings stretched from his shoulder. Each wing was about 3 m in length. The wings flapped forcefully, dragging Zhang Tie away from the ground.

After his clothes were torn off, Zhang Tie saw a layer of black scales over his body. In the reflection on the stream, he even saw a horn on his forehead.

Raising his head, Zhang Tie shrilled miserably, "What's happening? Ah...how can I become this?"

At this time, he found that his voice also became muffled due to the weird change of his vocal cords. His words had a hoarse effect.

Heller darted towards Zhang Tie from afar and stopped several meters in front of Zhang Tie. Watching Heller's calm look, Zhang Tie slightly recovered his composure.

At this moment, the pair of huge wings had already lifted him 8 m in the air and suspended him there.

"Ah, Heller, what's happening to me? How can I look like Abyan..."

"Don't worry, Castle Lord. Come down first. I will explain to you slowly!" Heller raised his head and told Zhang Tie.

"Ah...erm..erm...how can I come down. I cannot control myself!"

"You can. This is your instinct in this state like walking and breathing. As long as you are not nervous. You will know how to

come down!"

After hearing Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie tried to calm himself down. After that, when he intended to come down, he had already landed steadily on the ground while flapping his wings.

The pair of powerful wings with a layer of flesh film were folded at once.

Before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, Heller had already displayed a three-dimensional image in front of Zhang Tie by drawing in the air...

...

After ten more minutes, hearing Heller's explanation and watching Heller displaying how the two groups of spiral DNAs engulfed with each other, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded.

"You mean he didn't engulf me in that case but I engulfed him? What's that horn? How could it be so powerful? How could it break Abyan's protective battle Qi and transfer Abyan's vital energy to me constantly?" Zhang Tie touched that sharp horn in his hand as he asked.

"Do you remember that legend about the Wild Wolf Valley when you attended survival training there?"

"You mean that gold-eating boa which shocked the entire Blackson Humans Corridor?"

"Right. This sharp object is a teeth which exfoliated from an adult gold-eating boa. It's the most special object on gold-eating boa. This thing has the exotic ability to engulf and pierce through everything. After injecting your battle Qi into it, you activated it. Therefore, you had pierced through Abyan's protective battle Qi with it. Meanwhile, at that moment, Abyan was experiencing the evolution of his second form, which indicated that his DNA was highly active. You three then formed a mysterious circulation, under the effect of which, Abyan's second evolution process was

reversed to you, making you look like this."

"Can I recover my former look?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, you can. Your former look was your first form while your current look is your second form. With the ability of shadow demon, you're able to convert between two forms at your will!"

"Whether I am a human or a demon now?"

"It depends on your definition about humans and demons!" Heller watched Zhang Tie with a deep and savvy look.

"What do you mean?"

"If you differentiate demons from humans in terms of look, you are now a demon; if you differentiate it in terms of DNA, you're neither a demon nor a human. Because your DNA combines the common features of both species. You're now a mutated species. If you want to differentiate humans from demons in terms of ability, you're purely a demon as you can do everything that a shadow demon could do. If you differentiate it in terms of soul and awareness, you're yourself, namely human! Of course, it depends on your recognition about yourself. If it was people, at the sight of you, they would treat you as a demon for sure. However, any demon would treat you as their same species. Your first form would be considered as a transformation of a shadow demon. Nobody would believe that you're Zhang Tie!"

After hearing Heller's answer, Zhang Tie became stunned as he became very painful inside. None of normal men would like to look like this.

"Therefore..."

"Therefore, after you leave Castle of Black Iron, as long as you expose your second form or special ability of demon, you would be treated as a demon, a shadow demon, which was the top enemy of humans. According to the 'Great Brilliance Charter', anyone who kills a shadow demon could be promoted to be a Lord. Do you

know what does this mean?"

Of course Zhang Tie clearly knew that once he was exposed, he was doomed to be killed.

"Oh. What's the time now? How long have I stayed in the bloody cocoon? I have to go meet my friends!"

Heller then watched Zhang Tie silently for over 10 seconds before opening his mouth, "It's March 1st, 894th year of Black Iron Calendar..."

"What?" gazing at Heller's solemn look, Zhang Tie felt humming in his head as his face completely turned pale. He had not imagined that he had slept in the bloody cocoon for 3 years!

Chapter 525: The Price of Being a Pure Human

Three years elapsed in a wink. It took Zhang Tie one day to gradually adapt to this message. What made him a bit reassured was that all the people that he cared about had been properly managed.

His elder brother was accompanying their parents. Before he left Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie already gave his elder brother the basic energy aura yeast which could constantly reproduce. Therefore, although he was not in Jinwu Castle, his elder brother could still maintain the supply of the all-purpose medicament and guarantee the development of Jinwu Corporation.

"The members of God Blessing Association and those girls of Rose Association have already left Blackhot City and would be able to survive in Jinyun Country. I've already told my elder brother to take good care of Miss Daina and Linda. Therefore, they should also be safe." Before leaving Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie had already made proper arrangements for everything over there. Therefore, even without him, the Ice and Snow Wilderness could still run normally.

Thinking this way, Zhang Tie felt a bit better. However, Zhang Tie knew that many things must have happened and changed a lot of people.

"Dad and mom must be worried about me very much."

"How are my friends in Hidden Dragon Island doing now?"

"How is senior sister Lan Yunxi?"

"What's up with God Blessing Association and Rose Association?"

"How's Miss Daina and Linda now?"

"And I missed the chance to meet Pandora..."

According to Zhang Tie's former plan, after seeing off his friends from Blackhot City, he was going to attend Pandora's "hubby selection meeting" in Holy Golden Orchid Empire. He had not imagined that he would sleep for over 3 years. Therefore, he must have missed that meeting. Zhang Tie only hoped that Pandora's "hubby selection meeting" had ended smoothly due to the coming holy war. However, the moment Zhang Tie remembered Pandora's father, Haiger VII, he became restless, "Who knows what weird opinions would that mad emperor come up with?"

What was most was that Zhang Tie didn't know what happened to those people outside Castle of Black Iron and whether the holy war between humans and demons had broken out.

Zhang Tie knew that he had missed too many things during the past three years. The only achievement that he had made was to survive the battle between him and a LV 14 demon.

The price of survival was too big!

After watching carefully that strange face in the mirror and that pair of pitch dark eyes, Zhang Tie roared as he punched the mirror into pieces. This was the 7th mirror that he broke this day. Perhaps, this face was very beautiful in the eyes of a pure demon like the pervert Abyan; however, as long as Zhang Tie saw such a bug face and monster claws, he felt an impulse to destroy everything.

Many things were not considered precious until they were lost, such as human body. When you had it, you didn't feel it was precious. However, when you lost it, you would realize that each pure, aesthetic line displayed the nobility of human body. According to myths, the God created human body according to his own image, which indicated that human body was perfect.

Therefore, Zhang Tie felt being polluted by a disgusting and terrifying virus about the assimilated genes after killing Abyan.

Zhang Tie really didn't know how to face those people who were

familiar with him with his current mentality and body. He felt that he might drive them mad by this body.

What was more unacceptable was that he would pass some genes of his second form to his kids as was told by Heller.

This was the terrifying genes of shadow demon. Although such a blood-tied relationship was a paramount honor for someone such as Three-Eye Association. It was said that many managers of Three-Eye Association were the half-blooded descendants between shadow demons and humans. Their positions were determined by their purity of demon genes. Therefore, they only allowed half-blooded descendants to get married with each other. Zhang Tie's situation was greatly favored by those half-blooded descendants. However, Zhang Tie would never accept this.

Because Zhang Tie preferred to be a commoner. He thought what his parents gave him was the best. Zhang Tie could not accept what the other commoners disliked. He didn't want to be a monster; neither did he want his descendants to be such a monster. If so, Zhang Tie knew that his whole family would be destroyed. Not only his descendants and wives, even his parents could not accept this.

Therefore, Zhang Tie went for Heller with red eyes.

"I know you must have a method to manage this problem. Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree and this space must have a method to deal with that. I'd like to recover to my former body at any price. I have to drive those demon genes out of my body. I want my human body back at any price!"

Heller watched Zhang Tie. In the past one day, he had already felt Zhang Tie's mentality and response to his second form. Heller had not imagined that Zhang Tie could have such a sharp response about his transformation.

"Previously, I thought that you would not care about it as long as you don't expose the second form. With the second form, you

could have many abilities of shadow demon, such as flying, transforming, great vitality and strike-resistance ability. You could stay with demons safe and sound. You might play a key role at the critical moment. I've not imagined that you didn't accept it at all. Why not consider about it? In my opinion, body is just like a coat."

Zhang Tie watched Heller seriously, "Heller, your life and birth are different from me. Therefore, you don't understand how important is a human body for a human. My body belongs to myself, my parents, my wives and kids. It's closely related to my family. Perhaps you're right. But I don't want it. I only want to be a pure man, a man who could make every member of his family happy and proud instead of a powerful monster, who would scare his family members. I don't know whether I would be driven mad by such a body!"

After being silent for a while, Heller told Zhang Tie, "It would cost you too much if you want to recover the former pure human body. Even Castle of Black Iron and Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree are not all-purposeful. It follows many fixed rules and laws. If you want to reach your target, you have to spend too much!"

"What price should I pay?" Zhang Tie asked.

"You would not get any seven-strength fruit from Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree anymore!"

Zhang Tie became silent for a while. His current fighting strength benefited from seven-strength fruits to a certain degree. Seven-strength fruits were the most powerful fruits that the small tree provided him. Without seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie knew that he would lose his biggest advantage. From then on, it would be hard to say whether he could improve his fighting strength like before.

During the process that Abyan promoted to the second form of shadow demon, he consumed the greater part of Zhang Tie's vitality granted by those seven-strength fruits. After completing

the assimilation and evolution of his second form reversely, Zhang Tie even lit the remaining surging points on his spine and became a LV 9 fighter.

However, Zhang Tie's overall fighting strength was actually a bit weaker than that he had when he was in Blackhot City. The reason was that most of the energy granted by seven-strength fruits that he had eaten were consumed. His strength was not that abnormal anymore. The potential strength brought by lighting another 13 surging points could not offset the fighting strength that he had lost.

"If I knew how to light surging points after LV 9, I might have lit more surging points with the surplus energy of Abyan. What a pity!"

"Heller told me that I could not get seven-strength fruits anymore if I want my pure human body back."

"Which choice could make my parents pleasant and proud of?" Zhang Tie would ask himself this question whenever he faced a problem. He then soon got the answer. This question had become his compass of his life.

After hesitating for a second, Zhang Tie raised his head firmly, "I'd like to pay such a price, even if I could not get any seven-strength fruit anymore from then on. I have to recover my pure human body. The second form would make me lose many precious things, which was irreplaceable in this world. Although seven-strength fruits could improve my strength to the utmost, there are many ways to improve my personal strength. Those who have no seven-strength fruits could become powerful one step after another, I believe that I can also do it!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Heller's eyes were filled with admiration and respect, "If so, Castle Lord, please follow me!"

Heller then led Zhang Tie to a place where they planted the flower of life, which was like a huge lotus, each bud of which was

as large as a huge vat.

The flower of life covered dozens of square meters, which formed a scenery in Castle of Black Iron.

"Does flower of life have such a marvelous effect?" Zhang Tie became amazed.

"It could make each pure life seed to sprout here; of course, it could also make the life to recover to its pure seed here as well. However, the latter requires a higher price!" Heller explained as he touched a bud of the flower of life. The bud then opened. "Castle Lord, please take off your clothes and lie in there. It will take you two days to recover to your pure human body!"

Zhang Tie immediately lay in the bud of flower of life...

...

Chapter 526: Heller's Humor

After Zhang Tie laid in the flower of life, the huge bud gradually closed. Zhang Tie then felt being wrapped by pedals while an exotic fragrance drilled into Zhang Tie's nose. Zhang Tie instantly felt pure as his soul and his body seemed being split from each other.

...

Zhang Tie couldn't feel the existence of time in that state. After quivering his body all over, Zhang Tie realized that the pure state had disappeared. Zhang Tie opened his eyes and found that he was soaked in a liquid of the bud. What a strange feeling! He didn't breathe, however, he could sense that each pore on his skin was exchanging oxygen and energy with the liquid.

With a crashing sound, the bud opened while the liquid spread over the ground and disappeared instantly. All the liquid that touched Zhang Tie's skin also slid off Zhang Tie's body. Being naked, Zhang Tie also caught sight of the outside world at once.

At this moment, Zhang Tie really felt being a new born. He was pure, cool and energetic. He watched his hands, skin and his thing before letting out a deep sigh.

No tail on his body, no scale on his face, no horn on his forehead, no bat-like flesh-film wings on his back, he recovered his human body once again. In one word, "Cool!".

Although demon's body was powerful, Zhang Tie always regarded it as a worm, instead of a person. Now, he had recovered his pure human body; although losing his seven-strength fruits as a payment, Zhang Tie felt it was worthwhile.

Heller was waiting for Zhang Tie beside him with a mirror and a lot of clothes very carefully. It seemed that Heller knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

Zhang Tie jumped off the flower of life and put on his new clothes. After that he raised his head and exclaimed, "Ah..." for about 1 minute. After releasing all his depressive qi, Zhang Tie started to look in the mirror carefully. If there were still some scales on his face or a bulge on his forehead, he would suffer a lot.

It was still that same handsome face. There was no bulge on his forehead. Except one point, his eyes became emerald.

"Ah, why is my eyes green? Is there any remaining genes of demon?" Zhang Tie was greatly shocked.

"Demon's genes have been completely cleaned from your body. However, some of your special genes were activated when you and Abyan engulfed each other. Although demon's genes were removed, your genes could not be eliminated. You've already had the similar experience." Heller explained patiently.

"What do you mean?"

"Castle Lord has awaken another ancestral bloodline, a unique ancestral bloodline which only appeared in Chinese. Such a bloodline would be inherited to your descendants!"

"Ancestral bloodline? You mean I've awaken another ancestral bloodline?" Zhang Tie widely opened his eyes.

"Right!"

"What's its effect? To turn my eyes green?" Zhang Tie muttered inside.

"Castle Lord, you could imagine your eyes turning black!" Heller suggested.

Zhang Tie glanced at Heller before looking into mirror once again. He then silently imagined that his eyes were black. Amazingly, his eyes turned Chinese black.

Zhang Tie almost sprung up.

"Castle Lord, you could imagine that you have blonde hair like

that of Peter Hamplester!"

Zhang Tie then imagined as his black hair gradually turned blonde. Additionally, his skin gradually changed its color while his eyes turned blue.

All these only took him dozens of seconds. However, the effect was the same as that of disguising medicament. Zhang Tie was so amazed about that Peter Hamplester in the mirror as he widely opened his mouth.

"What a great...great...great ability!"

"Will I be mistaken as a demon?"

"No, like how fish could swim, human could also swim. You can't say that a person who has the same ability with fish is a fish. Your ability originates from the activated human genes of you instead of the demons. Additionally, this ability is completely different than that of shadow demon. Shadow demon could completely transform into another person; however, you could only change the color of your eyes, skin and hair. Some people were born to change the color of their eyes. For instance, some albinism patients could also change the color of their eyes, hair and skin. Because they've partly manifested their human genes. Although such a manifestation is not constructive and controllable in many people's eyes, it's truly their special ability. The biggest difference between you and those people who could optionally manifest their genes is that you could control this process!"

"Ah, but why would people have such an ability?" Zhang Tie continued.

Heller blinked as he joked, "If I told you that this was just an instinct and talent of women who could make themselves beautiful without make-up in the far ancient time, would you be surprised about that?"

"This was an automatic make-up skill for women?" Zhang Tie

became stunned as he watched Heller, "Heller, I've not imagined that you're that humorous!"

Heller replied with a smile as he shrugged, "I'm always humorous, but Castle Lord has not found that before. As the first person who wakes up this ancestral bloodline in this age, you can name this bloodline!"

"Let's call it Fantastic Pupils!" Zhang Tie replied after thinking for a while, "Although I've lost seven-strength fruits, I woke up an ancestral bloodline. Therefore, I can save the money for disguising medicament! That's not bad!"

"Castle Lord, as you've been focusing on that demon body these couple of days, you forgot to take a look at your reward from the small tree after killing the shadow demon. Shadow demon is the most terrifying enemy of human."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie hurriedly rushed towards the small tree...

After one minute, Zhang Tie's exciting roars drifted from that small tree...

...

One day later...

The moment Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron did he appear in water. Widely opening his eyes, he held his breath and watched where he was. If not Heller had told him that he would appear in water after leaving Castle of Black Iron, he might have been choked by water.

There were undercurrents in the water, which was caused by churning water. It was already deep night. However, under his dark vision, he could see everything clearly. He could see a shoal of small fish and flourish water seeds at the bottom of the water on his side. After ensuring that nobody was in water, he forcefully kicked back in the water and came to the surface of the water along

with his water-proof luggage.

In the past three years, as Zhang Tie was promoted to LV 9, Castle of Black Iron further released its spacial ability. Heller built a space tunnel between this subterranean stream and the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron so that water could be constantly transported in the Pool of Chaos and bring a great amount of energy storage to Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, Castle of Black Iron could be expanded. If not being afraid of too much water loss which might lead to abnormal phenomenon here, Castle of Black Iron might have expanded many times more.

However, even now, Zhang Tie was also satisfied. Because he found another way for Castle of Black Iron to increase its basic energy storage rapidly. Later on, if he wanted to rapidly increase basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron, he only needed to find a remote place in ocean. After entering Castle of Black Iron, he could directly open a space channel and absorb sea water in the Pool of Chaos from inside. In this way, he could increase the storage efficiency by more than 1000 times.

This made Zhang Tie comfortable more or less. Although it was a long period during which he lost many things, Zhang Tie also gained something. After recovering his human body by eliminating demon genes with the help of the flower of life, Zhang Tie found that he recovered his looks of three years ago. Three years was just like one day, which left no trace on Zhang Tie at all.

Only after a few seconds, Zhang Tie had already exposed his head out of the water. He looked around and saw nothing in the surroundings but waving reeds in the night wind.

Nothing changed in the surroundings except for the disappearance of the entire castle of Master Abyan. Instead, it became a lake. "According to Heller, my master Zhao Yuan arrived one week after I entered Castle of Black Iron. With only one strike, he erased the entire castle from this world."

Zhang Tie swam towards the lakeside. As long as he swam in the lake he could sense the terror of the man whose nickname was conversion demon. Such a terrifying strength was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. In front of such a strength, Zhang Tie, as a LV 9 fighter, or a fighting demon like Abyan was nothing but ants.

Zhang Tie was filled with reverence and self-mockery. It was reasonable that he didn't know what level was his master Zhao Yuan; however, although having lit 34 surging points on his spine, he was still confused about the next step. In Zhao Yuan's words, LV 9 was just a start of cultivation.

Thinking about this, Zhang Tie became more desiring about Huaiyuan Palace because his relatives, friends and the secret knowledge about the way of cultivation after LV 9 were all there.

Zhang Tie came to the lakeside and entered reeds. He then started to put on his clothes rapidly. When he fought Abyan, he dropped off his golden carp sword. Finally, the sword was covered by Abyan's bloody light and was teleported into Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, it was preserved. But the soul crystal gifted by Zhao Yuan was broken in fight.

After putting on average clothes, Zhang Tie walked out of the reeds and headed for Blackhot City.

On the way, Zhang Tie saw weed everywhere. Additionally, there were so many tombs on the hillside. Some red-eyed stray dogs were wandering in the wild. At the sight of Zhang Tie, some of them followed Zhang Tie without any fear. After Zhang Tie kicked two of them with stones, the rest ones escaped away while lowering their tails.

At the sight of all this, Zhang Tie gradually became cold inside. Although he didn't know what happened in Blackhot City, what was in front of his eyes had told him that Blackhot City had experienced a huge change.

Coming to the south gate of Blackhot City, Zhang Tie was startled by the current situation of Blackhot City. Ruined city walls and open city gate indicated that this city had encountered a catastrophe. It was broken and deserted everywhere. Nothing was on the top of the city wall. Some men were sitting at the city gate with spears. The whole city seemed having been deserted, which was sharply different than its previous boisterous scene.

Sitting in the gate entrance, they were sitting around a bonfire and roasting something. Until Zhang Tie reached the city gate did a guy who was facing Zhang Tie find him.

"Ah, someone is here..."

The moment that person exclaimed, everyone who was sitting before the bonfire turned around as they targeted their spears at Zhang Tie.

"Who're you?", a 40-odd strong guy with a ferocious look glared at Zhang Tie.

Frowning, Zhang Tie watched them. Their uniforms were irregular. Additionally, their gesture and coordination was not proper. Zhang Tie then confirmed that they were just some commoners with some strength. In another word, they were nothing but a motley crew.

"Who are you?" Zhang Tie asked them after glancing at them.

"Ah, he can speak. He's not a damn zombie!" one of them finally let out his sigh as he lowered his spear. As to that guy with a ferocious look, after glaring at Zhang Tie, he hurriedly raised his spear in a shameful way.

"Brat, answer me honestly. Who are you? Where have you come from? What are you going to do in Blackhot City?" the 40-odd guy shouted towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't speak; instead, he just flashed forward and instantly grabbed away that guy's spear magically. After that, he

changed the direction of the spear and put the sharp end of the spear onto that 40-odd guy's throat.

Zhang Tie moved so fast that the 40-odd guy's life fell in his hand in a wink.

"It's my turn to ask you. Who are you? Where have you come from? and What's the current situation in Blackhot City?"

...

Chapter 527: Humans Catastrophe

After his spear was drawn out of his hand by Zhang Tie, this man felt his hands hot. Facing that icy spear head, he did not dare to move at all. Zhang Tie just pinched one end of the spear like pinching a walnut with two fingers while the spear was as steady as Mount Tai.

At the sight of this, even idiots would know that they met a powerhouse.

The other guys were instantly scared several steps back. Even though they were a motley crew, they knew clearly about the great difference between small figures like them and a powerhouse.

"Ah, I said, I said...we are refugees from Blackhot City. We were residents in Blackhot City. This is...is how Blackhot City look!"

The 40-odd man stammered as he didn't dare to move a bit. At the same time, he looked down at that spear head on his neck. For Zhang Tie's last question——what's the current situation of Blackhot City, he really didn't know how to answer it. This question was too ambiguous. "Isn't this the current situation of Blackhot City?"

Zhang Tie slightly frowned, "What's the date of Black Iron Calendar?"

After blinking his eyes quickly, that man replied, "It's March 3rd, 894th year of Black Iron Calendar!"

"Ah, no, it should be March 4th!" another person hurriedly added.

"Ah, right, it's March 4th. I've not seen calendar for a long time, so I couldn't remember it clearly!" that man hurriedly added.

After hearing this answer, Zhang Tie nodded inside. He had not imagined that he had stayed in Castle of Black Iron for three years. If he was outside Castle of Black Iron in the past three years, he

must have made a great progress. However, he also made a great achievement after killing Abyan, although at a great price. Zhang Tie didn't know whether he won the fight or not.

"Has the holy war broken out?"

"Yes!"

"When did it break out?"

"February, 891st of Black Iron Calendar!"

"How could Blackhot City become like this?"

"After the holy war broke out, the army of zombies of Sun Dynasty surrounded here for one year!"

"Tell me what happened between Sun Dynasty and Blackhot City!" seeing their fearful looks, Zhang Tie put away his spear at once as he threw that spear back to the man. Seeing that Zhang Tie was not hostile to them, they all recovered composure. After exchanging glances with each other, they put down their weapons too.

In the following half an hour, they sat around the bonfire and told Zhang Tie what happened in the past three years.

Although Zhang Tie had long prepared to face the holy war, he was still shocked by their description. The 3rd holy war between humans and demons had spread over the Blackson Humans Corridor in only three years.

In Blackson Humans Corridor, the catastrophe of demon puppets broke out in over 30 countries and regions at the beginning and gradually spread the entire Blackson Humans Corridor.

Nobody could imagine that over 30 parent puppet worms appeared in Blackson Humans Corridor at the same time. This number had reached 1/3 of the total quantity of parent puppet worms in the 2nd holy war. It meant that demons had already mastered how to hatch and manufacture parent puppet worms.

This was a catastrophe to humans.

Additionally, the new parent puppet worms had a new trait, namely they were wiser and more difficult to deal with.

Sun Dynasty which was neighboring Norman Empire was heavily stricken by puppet worms. Three major cities within the territory of Sun Dynasty broke out demon disasters at the same time. After over 6 million demon puppets spread the entire Sun Dynasty, Sun Dynasty died in three months. Over 3 million demon puppets invaded Norman Empire and arouse battle fires everywhere.

On July, 891st year of Black Iron Calendar, over 600,000 demon puppets broke Kalur, the city of machine all the way to Blackhot City. They fought Iron Horn Army for half a year. The result was that demon puppets failed to occupy Blackhot City; however, Blackhot City became deserted completely.

In this war, over half of 500,000 soldiers of Iron Horn Army decreased. Blackhot City suffered over 800,000 casualties. Until now, there were still over 50,000 demon puppets in the dim underground tunnel of Glang Iron Ore in the northwest of Blackhot City. However, the railway lines leading to the outside of Blackhot City had been completely destroyed and blocked. As a result, the iron ore could not be exploited and transported out of there, causing Blackhot City to be deserted.

In order to protect commoners from becoming soldiers of demon puppets, since May, 892nd year of Black Iron Calendar, at the order of the emperor of Norman Empire, the remaining force of Iron Horn Army and the commoners who survived the catastrophe started to evacuate from Blackhot City.

As a result, Blackhot City became a dead city. Very few people stayed in the city.

Like worldwide wars between humans before the Catastrophe, in each worldwide war, techniques, tools, cruelty and devastating efficiency towards life would be pushed to a new high level. In each

war, people would forget about the experiences in the former wars, just like this holy war between humans and demons after the 2nd holy war about 200 years ago.

Demon puppets shocked people very much; the demon army that appeared in Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire since the beginning of the 3rd holy war made people despairing about the future of humans.

That was an unprecedented demon army which had not appeared in the former two holy wars. With their appearance, the four-level division that human army had carried forward for hundreds of years also became a history.

That demon army only contained less than 100,000 population, which was only about 1/6 of that of an average human army. However, the lowest level of those demon fighters was LV 9!

It was really out of people's imagination that the lowest level of the fighters of that demon army was LV 9. However, demons made it. In front of such an army, human army division became meaningless.

In front of this demon army, Golan Empire died in only two weeks. After that, this demon army constantly occupied 17 human countries in Blackson Humans Corridor like an unrivaled sharp demon blade, causing 1/4 of Blackson Humans Corridor collapse.

Terrifying demon army and raging demon disaster opened the curtain of the 3rd holy war between humans and demons. As a result, Blackson Humans Corridor was covered with battle fires and sad songs. In order to escape from the demon disaster, hundreds of millions of refugees escaped from their homes and headed for safer countries and regions. Human Alliance was consolidating the city walls and eliminating those demons in the wild.

Zhang Tie obtained this information in half an hour. This happened ten months ago. As to other big events in Blackson

Humans Corridor in the past 10 months, these refugees didn't know about them anymore.

The deserted Blackhot City had been isolated from outside world for a long time.

After hearing this, Zhang Tie knew that the world had toppled over in the past three years. The 3rd holy war must be unprecedentedly miserable. Besides, demon's great strength also made many people distress.

After entering the south gate of Blackhot City, Zhang Tie walked on the open and desolate streets as he sensed a strangeness which made him restless.

The whole city was like a ghost city at night. Zhang Tie could see nobody in the streets. Both sides of the streets had been covered with weeds while the streets were filled with wastes. None of the roadside showcases were complete. Additionally, besides thick dust, there were only sundries and wastes in the stores.

Many buildings were damaged. All the apartments and residential buildings were pitch dark. Only some villas and senior mansions had looming light and noises——those refugees were indulging themselves over there.

1/3 of Black Gold Hotel was left in ruins...

The school gate of the No. 7 National Male Middle School was tightly closed. The school brand was covered with dust while nobody was inside...

The Bright Avenue seemed having experienced a terrifying riot as the avenue was filled with broken glass and various litters. The roadside walls were covered with scrawls.

The fountain outside the gate of Golden Roc Bank had withered while its two gates had been destroyed and pushed down...

Zhang Tie knew that the Blackhot City in his memory was dead.

Zhang Tie returned to his home. The door of his home was still tightly locked. When his parents left Blackhot City at the beginning, they didn't sell this house; instead, they kept it so that Zhang Tie could have a place to stay when he came back.

The lock was 10 years old, which had been lubricated with oil by his mom when they left. Zhang Tie still had a key of his home in Castle of Black Iron. No refugees would like to visit such a poor home even after Blackhot City was deserted.

Zhang Tie stood still for a short while outside the door before taking out the key and opened it, causing a "click" sound like what it usually did...

Chapter 528: Shadow Demon's Backroom

Besides the layer of dust on the floor and the furniture, everything else remained unchanged. The beds inside the bedrooms were even covered with bed covers which were made by his mom. Zhang Tie pulled aside the bed covers and found the bed sheets and quilts were as tidy as before.

Zhang Tie returned to that narrow attic and slept peacefully that night.

This night, lying on his familiar bed, Zhang Tie felt pretty tranquil. He was thinking about one very important question—how to go back to Jinyun Country.

At this moment, Blackhot City had become a dead city. Kalur City was collapsed in the demon disaster. Although the mysterious eastern alchemist master could prevent Norman Empire and Sun Dynasty from occupying Kalur City, in front of those demon puppets who only knew about killing, the name of the eastern alchemist master didn't work at all. Kalur's collapse meant that the traffic hub from where he could fly to Jinyun Country was paralyzed.

Therefore, it became difficult for Zhang Tie to come back to Jinyun Country.

"My message lags about 10 months. I don't know about the current situation of the Blackson Humans Corridor." However, Zhang Tie was sure that the current situation on the continent was worse than that of a year ago. That terrifying demon army could make everyone distress.

Additionally, nobody could guarantee that demons had not input new army into this battle field.

...

On the next early morning, Zhang Tie was awakened by his

biological clock before 6. Since he knew that he could not obtain seven-strength fruits anymore, Zhang Tie started to cultivate himself more diligently.

Zhang Tie even started to practice 'mental arithmetic' which he had not practiced for a long time. Previously, the spiritual energy brought by practicing 'mental arithmetic' could almost be ignored compared to that of seven-strength fruits at all. However, after losing seven-strength fruits, the trivial growth of spiritual energy brought by practicing 'mental arithmetic' also became precious for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't believe that he could not become a powerhouse without seven-strength fruits. By working hard, one could always fix his stupidity. He will never forget this proverb at any time.

After visualizing two 13-column abacuses, Zhang Tie started to make different calculations with the two abacuses.

After practicing 'mental arithmetic' for one hour, Zhang Tie felt a trivial growth of his spiritual energy. After that, Zhang Tie practiced cross movement of Iron Blood Fist in his room for another one hour. After feeling that his physical condition had reached its optimal state, Zhang Tie sat down with his legs crossed before activating a trouble-reappearance situation.

This was the trouble-reappearance situation of the latest trouble-reappearance fruit, also an unexpected achievement that Zhang Tie made after killing Abyan. Besides this trouble-reappearance fruit, the small tree also bred a wholly new fruit—the fruit of plunder. Zhang Tie could take this fruit out of Castle of Black Iron and allow others to eat it. After considering about it carefully, Zhang Tie prepared to take the new fruit back to his elder brother.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that he could only get trouble-reappearance fruit by killing magical beasts and wild beasts. Now, he knew that he could also have a trouble-reappearance fruit by killing demons. This was the first trouble-reappearance fruit of an

intelligent species that Zhang Tie obtained.

The trouble-reappearance situation brought by this trouble-reappearance fruit was very meaningful for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie named it as Shadow Demon's Backroom.

The moment Zhang Tie appeared in the activated trouble-reappearance situation had he slid down along the smooth tunnel. In a few seconds, he came out of the tunnel and appeared in that backroom which was full of mirrors.

When he caught sight of those mirrors last time, he didn't realize it. Now, he realized that all the shadow demons were the most abnormal narcissists. This was one weird hobby of shadow demon. In the place which they think was safe, they would arrange a lot of mirrors so that they could enjoy their body which could casually transform into humans from all aspects.

This time, before Zhang Tie came for him, Abyan had already charged at Zhang Tie. With a roar, Zhang Tie also faced him with his iron-blood fist...

Only after 5 seconds, Zhang Tie had been killed by Abyan, closely after which, the trouble-reappearance situation split into light points.

This was the fastest battle since Zhang Tie had obtained trouble-reappearance fruits. This reminded Zhang Tie of the great difference between him, a LV 9 fighter and a LV 14 fighting demon.

Although it was a short fight, Zhang Tie's each movement was full of his strength and the power of his Iron Blood Fist. This was a tougher cultivation for Zhang Tie.

Not each person could have a LV 14 demon as his partner trainer.

Having not been killed like this for a long time, Zhang Tie's forehead oozed only after a few seconds. When he was killed by Abyan in the trouble-reappearance situation, his body even quivered some times.

Widely opening his eyes, Zhang Tie panted heavily. After one minute, he activated the Shadow Demon's Backroom once again. After another 5 seconds, his body quivered again as he was killed by Abyan for the second time.

The spiritual energy being used to activate the trouble-reappearance situation of Shadow Demon's Backroom was just 30% less than that required by activating the trouble-reappearance situation of that huge deep-sea monster. Zhang Tie realized the terror of Abyan.

Zhang Tie activated Shadow Demon's Backroom six times in 10 minutes, which consumed more than half of his spiritual energy. When he exited the trouble-reappearance situation for the 6th time, Zhang Tie felt his nose was wet. After touching it, he found that his nose was bleeding. Therefore, he stopped trying the 7th time.

What happened in the trouble-reappearance situation also reflected on Zhang Tie's body in terms of spiritual energy and feelings. Although it was not fatal, Zhang Tie would not bear it after being stimulated severely several times in a short period.

Before Abyan completely transformed into a shadow demon, Zhang Tie could only bear 5 seconds each time. He could stand such a physical intensity 6 times. Additionally, he could activate Shadow Demon's Backroom 10 times. Amazingly, Zhang Tie found that he could estimate his overall strength through the three data; 5 seconds referred to his fighting force, 6 times referred to the upper limit of his physical intensity that he could stand, 10 times referred to the total amount of his spiritual energy.

After thinking for several minutes quietly, Zhang Tie became spirited, "Perhaps, I could use the three data to measure my power from then on."

Like seeing a hope, Zhang Tie became spirited once again. After arranging his attic once again, he pulled back the bed cover. After

that, he came downstairs and came to the courtyard to cleanse himself using the water in the well. After that, he got some food from Castle of Black Iron and ate them and drunk a bowl of all-purpose medicament. Finally, Zhang Tie left this home.

After locking the door, Zhang Tie glanced at this home which he might not see any longer in the future, he then strode towards the east gate of Blackhot City in the early dawn.

Zhang Tie decided to walk eastward no matter how dangerous it was. He remembered that the ocean was over 7000 km away in the east of Blackhot City. As long as he passed by some depopulated zones and some countries would he see the ocean. He then could swim back to Huaiyuan Palace in the fastest speed. This was the fastest way that he could choose to return to Huaiyuan palace. If he was lucky, he might have a chance to take an airship on the way there.

...

Over 100 refugees were gathering at the east city gate. At the sight of Zhang Tie striding towards them, they surrounded Zhang Tie at once.

"I was told that a sharp young man came to this city last night. That must be you. I'm really lucky to meet you here." a 30-odd ass*hole who was wearing some female necklaces over his neck and a dirty, improper high-end western uniform stopped Zhang Tie with his long sword.

Zhang Tie watched that guy calmly, "That's me. What's wrong?"

"Ha...ha...you're lucky, brat. I'm their boss. As long as you join us, you can eat and drink well in Blackhot City from then on. You can be my assistant. If you perform well, I can give you a woman as a reward when we catch some!" That guy revealed his yellow teeth and laughed loudly.

"I'm not interested in that. Please give way to me. I have to go!"

Zhang Tie slightly frowned.

"Brat, you still want to go? Don't you know about the regulations in Blackhot City?"

"What regulation? Did I forget to submit entrance fee last night?" Zhang Tie replied in a cold, humorous tone.

"No crap, brat. According to the regulation in Blackhot City, all those entering the city have to join us and defend demons together with us!"

"To defend demons here? This guy really find a great reason for his deed."

"What if I disagree?"

That guy then sneered as he watched Zhang Tie confidently, "If so, you're the mole of demon, you will die here! Do not think that this father is afraid of you. This father has chopped off two demon puppets' heads."

Zhang Tie glanced at them as he smiled and waved his head, "I'm not a mole demon, neither do I want to claim your territory here with you. I don't care what you're doing here. But you'd better not stop me from leaving. Please give way to me!"

That person changed his face at once as he drew out of his long sword and shouted, "Kill..."

Before he finished his words, his head had already flown in the air with his open mouth by Zhang Tie's sword Qi. All those who prepared to swarm up stopped their steps as they watched Zhang Tie with a fearful look.

"I'm sorry, you could choose a new boss!"

Zhang Tie put back his silver-carp sword and kept moving forward. As a result, all those in front of him gave way to him hurriedly. Finally they could only see Zhang Tie off.

Soon after Zhang Tie left Blackhot City, he had started to run

towards the rising sun...

Chapter 529: Men to the North

Zhang Tie kept running eastward, except for 6 hours of rest per day, regardless of daytime or night. When he felt thirsty, he would drink a mouthful of all-purpose medicament or water. In this way, he could run 500 km a day.

What guided him was a map of Blackson Humans Corridor and a compass.

On the map, there was a wild area which covered more than 1700 square km. In the south of the wild area was a city Indhart which was one of the 17 stars on the flag of Andaman Alliance. This city was also annexed by Norman Empire and destroyed by demon puppets just like Blackhot City. Besides this city, no more city or people could be seen in the wilderness. Therefore, it looked very desolate.

Zhang Tie's first destination was not Indhart, but a human country—the Republic of Symbian in the east of this wilderness.

The Republic of Symbian covered about 2 million square km. A small part of this country was connected to Norman Empire. This country had more than 30 cities. Its national strength was a bit weaker than that of Norman Empire; however, it was much powerful than the former Andaman Alliance.

According to Zhang Tie's plan, after passing by the Republic of Symbian, he would keep moving eastward and pass the territory of Cross Star Commerce Alliance; then, he would pass two smaller countries before reaching the seaside.

The Sun Dynasty had already collapsed in the demon disaster, which meant that the way towards southward from Blackhot City was blocked. Although Zhang Tie was promoted to LV 9 for a couple of years, he didn't think that he could safely and smoothly survive those demon-stricken areas. He was told that the most powerful armies, the Brilliant Eyes and the Brilliant Fury were

demonized, causing Sun Dynasty collapse rapidly. Therefore, a LV 9 fighter was nothing in front of such a great power.

The road towards east looked less dangerous; however, it depended. Because the Republic of Symbian was only over 4000 km away from Golan Empire. 10 months ago, the demon army, which swept all the way towards south from Hurricane Plateau had already collapsed most of countries surrounding Golan Empire. The whole northeast territory of Blackson Humans Corridor had been collapsed. It was hard to say whether the demon's army had already reached the Republic of Symbian.

After running in the wilderness for three days, during that period, he killed some low-rank magical beasts and enjoyed their flesh for a couple of times. On the 4th day, Zhang Tie saw many airships in the sky, which were as dense as a horde of flies. They passed by this wilderness towards north while covering the sky.

This was the first time when Zhang Tie felt that airships could be as many as a horde of flies. All of them were large and medium-sized airships, more than 1000 in total. Zhang Tie raised his head and watched that cloud passing over him for about 10 minutes.

Watching those airships flying over him, Zhang Tie felt being shocked inside. However, he didn't stay there but kept running forward. After two hours, Zhang Tie moved another 60 km ahead. At this time, he saw another batch of about 100 war airships flying towards south.

In the next 5 hours, Zhang Tie encountered another 3 batches of war airship, the number of war airships of each batch varied from 300 to 1000. Each batch flew northward in a tidy formation.

At night, when the familiar fury-level war airships flew by Zhang Tie densely, Zhang Tie's blood almost coagulated. Zhang Tie caught sight of the symbol of cloud dragon which was special for Jinyun Country.

After thinking for a few seconds, Zhang Tie kept running

towards east.

After one hour, Zhang Tie saw a railway, two smoking trains and endless contingents of people on the sides of the railway.

One contingent was all underprivileged ones, who were moving from north to south while the other contingent was all armored soldiers, who were moving from south to north. They just passed by each other.

So did the trains on the railway. One train was heading for south from north and was crowded with people. Even its top and head was covered with people. People were climbing on the train like ants. Those passers threw their admirable looks towards those on the train.

The other train was heading for north from south was filled with steam armored vehicles, steam tanks and military materials being tightly covered with green water-proof cloth.

Right in front of Zhang Tie, two trains passed by each other in converse directions with a shocking slogan on each train——Men to the North; Women to the South.

Standing on the roadside, Zhang Tie watched the soldiers walking towards north and the underprivileged ones walking towards south. Many of them glanced at Zhang Tie out of curiosity when they passed by Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie even checked himself and found nothing special, "But why do they look at me with that curious look?"

Zhang Tie didn't figure out the reason while a military officer with the rank of captain who was wearing a white armband with the symbol of gendarme walked towards Zhang Tie followed by some soldiers in solemn looks. They surrounded Zhang Tie at once.

That captain watched Zhang Tie with despised and chilly eyes, "You coward, no matter what your name is or which troop you

have escaped from. You have two choices now. First, let me chop off your head right away. Second, go back to the frontier and die like a man. Make a choice!"

After hearing his words, Zhang Tie became stunned. He looked left and right and found nobody else was behind him. Therefore, he pointed at his own nose, "Are you talking to me?"

"Is there any other army deserter here?" the captain asked with a sneer.

"You might be wrong. I'm not a deserter. I am just passing by here!" Zhang Tie explained sincerely.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, not only that captain, even those soldiers started to laugh out loudly. At the same time, their laughter was mixed with a cold sense.

"Sir, although this guy is a coward, he's humorous. We've caught so many deserters these days. But this guy's lie was the most creative!" a soldier joked as he watched the captain.

"From three years ago, all the countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range of Blackson Humans Corridor have started the red mobilization decree. All the men ranging from 16 to 60 years old were forcefully recruited to serve the army. They had to fight on the battle field or join the reserve forces and logistics army. This place is close to the battle field of the holy war. All the men within 2000 km have to take the weapons and join the war. The frontier is converging with armies from dozens of countries of Blackson Humans Corridor. All the fighters of the Republic of Symbian had started to converge here. You're just passing by? From where? Are you here to enjoy the scenery?" Watching Zhang Tie with a cold expression, the captain revealed Zhang Tie's "lie" straightforwardly.

After hearing this, Zhang Tie became silent. The captain's words were reasonable, which Zhang Tie could not refute at all. Zhang Tie could not tell the captain about the truth. Even if he explained

it to him, nobody would believe in him.

At the same time, Zhang Tie carefully observed those people moving towards south. He then found that all the men looked old and clumsy with grey hair or had kids. Zhang Tie finally realized how distinctive he was here in such casual clothes.

"If all the countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range of Blackson Humans Corridor have started the red mobilization decree. I might have a lot of troubles if I want to pass by the Republic of Symbian and the other smaller countries on this route, which might be more troublesome than going southward from Blackhot City."

"If I went southward from Blackhot City, demon army might chop off my head. If I want to continue to pass by these countries, the commoners and army of these countries might kill me by treating me as a deserter. Do I have to return to Huaiyuan Prefecture by killing a lot of people?"

After thinking it for a short while, Zhang Tie recalled the airships from Jinyun Country. Thus, he deliberately let out a sigh like a captured deserter, "Well, I will go back to the frontier, just send me back to the encampment of Jinyun Country!"

After watching Zhang Tie seriously, that captain burst out into laughter, "You should think like that!"

...

After half an hour, that captain drove Zhang Tie to a railway station in the front. When a military train parked there, the captain told something to another military officer on the train before sending Zhang Tie into a carriage.

After a few minutes, the military train started to move. Seeing off the train, a gendarme asked that captain, "Captain, do you really want to send this coward to the encampment of Jinyun Country?"

"All those dispatched here from Jinyun Country were elites above LV 9 of the six major clans who could defeat demon army. How come such a coward be dispatched there from Jinyun Country? Do you think that I could not identify that he was lying?" that captain sneered.

"Ah, so where do you send him to, sir?"

"Such a coward deserter is most suitable to be a cannon folder in the vanguard of the battle field. If he could kill one demon puppet, his death would be meaningful!"

"What kind of people were those in that carriage?"

"They were all convicts sentenced to death from Cross Star Commerce Alliance. They had just put on the military uniforms. As long as they could survive one year in the vanguard, they could gain freedom!"

"Ah?"

...

When Zhang Tie was sent in the carriage, Lan Yunxi, a major in the military uniform was delivering an order in the flagship command module of the airship fleet while looking in the distance with a solemn look.

"We're entering the battle field, send the signal, let the fleet change to three layers. Gap, 20m. The first echelon formation releases gliders to spy on the air territory in the front. Watch out the strike of winged demons!"

During the past years, Zhang Tie became a LV 9 fighter in sleep; at the same time, the most brilliant pearl in Huaiyuan Palace also promoted to a great commander of the airship fleet. Her honor shocked the entire Blackson Humans Corridor.

Zhang Tie didn't know that when he raised his head towards the sky, Lan Yunxi was in the air territory within the reach of his eyes.

...

When Zhang Tie prepared to have a good sleep in the narrow carriage, he found the atmosphere was not right as some guys were gazing at him with malicious looks...

Chapter 530: Condemned Prisoners

The carriage was very crowded and filled with the smell of men's sweat. A lot of soldiers were casually sitting on the floor. Some were even laying on the big boxes of military materials in the carriage. Zhang Tie sat silently on some boxes which obviously contained weapons. At the sight of those malicious looks, Zhang Tie frowned slightly.

At first when he came in, Zhang found these guys were not bad. However, after a few seconds Zhang Tie felt that they were not soldiers at all.

It was a bit stuffy in the carriage. When the train set out, these guys took off their military uniforms and displayed many tattoos of ghosts and magical beasts on their bodies. Zhang Tie knew that some troops in Blackson Humans Corridor would have uniformed tattoos, which were usually symbols of honor and power in the troop. However, these guys' tattoos were very distinctive. Remarkably, they didn't have them in troops.

After a few minutes, those who were sitting beside Zhang Tie silently stood up and left. The atmosphere in the carriage gradually changed. Those people who had been chatting with each other in low voices also became quiet. They all watched Zhang Tie. At this moment, some tough guys walked towards Zhang Tie with malicious looks.

Zhang Tie simply raised his head and glanced at them, but he kept sitting and practicing his mental arithmetic. He didn't even stand up.

"Brat, I was told you are a deserter?" one guy asked loudly in front of Zhang Tie.

"No, I'm just a passer-by and people assumed I am a deserter. Coincidentally, I wanted to take a look at the frontier. Here I am!" Zhang Tie explained calmly.

"Ha...ha..." the guy burst out in laughter as if he felt Zhang Tie was telling a very funny story. "No need to disguise yourself any more. If you're not a deserter, why were you sent here together with us? All the passengers in this carriage are condemned prisoners. We're being sent to the vanguard as cannon fodder. As long as we can survive one year, we will be deemed innocent. Additionally, we can gain a new status!"

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie smiled and nodded his head. He hadn't imagined that the captain could use such a trick. 'It seems that it's indeed not good to be regarded as a deserter.'

"Brat. I'm now the boss of this carriage. Everybody here follows my orders. What do you want to say?" The guy watched Zhang Tie while standing in front of him.

"Hmm, you guys work hard. I hope you can survive one year!" Zhang Tie 'encouraged' them in a calm voice.

Zhang Tie didn't feel disgusted about these condemned prisoners. Zhang Tie knew that laws sometimes represented the will of the privileged upper class. Those being sentenced to death were not always evil people. Of course, it didn't mean that all the condemned prisoners were good men either. Some of them were scumbags for sure. But wherever it was, a country that could execute the death penalty on innocent people or good people would vanish rapidly. Across Blackson Humans Corridor, although the countries and regions were ruled by different regimes, most of the regimes and systems were relatively well-developed as a result of thousands of years of human experiences. Therefore, that kind of evil country basically didn't exist at all anymore.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, that guy became silent for a few seconds. Closely after that, he became irritated as he felt as if he was made an idiot in front of Zhang Tie. He was humiliated by Zhang Tie's words.

At this moment, that guy directed a kick towards Zhang Tie's head forcefully. Given his strength, his speed and his movement, that guy was already LV 7.

Any commoner who was kicked by him would be killed or heavily wounded.

However, Zhang Tie remained unchanged. He just casually caught the man's foot and threw him onto the floor face down like smacking a fly.

At this moment, although Zhang Tie had lost the strength from the seven-strength fruits, as all the 34 surging points on his spine had been lit he had reached LV 9. His physical potential had been tapped further. As a result, his pure strength was almost like that in the underground relics of Ice and Snow Wilderness when he didn't eat the nine powerful huge-wolf seven-strength fruits. Besides, Zhang Tie's battle awareness, application of battle skills and battle qi were greater than before after being baptized by Master Abyan.

With a "Bang" sound, the entire carriage shook. Then, the carriage became silent at once.

Fresh blood slowly flowed out onto the floor from under that "boss" and tinted the floor after a short while. Face down, the man lay in his own blood and couldn't stand up any more.

Like nothing had happened, Zhang Tie continued to practice mental arithmetic against the wall so as to improve his spiritual energy as soon as possible.

The iron wheels of the train were rapidly moving on the rails, making a loud noise, "kacha, kacha". Although there was a metal iron sheet between them and the wheels, the noise was still very jarring. In contrast, nobody dared to speak in the carriage. They dared not to even breathe.

After a few minutes, a slightly hoarse voice drifted from the

crowd and called out, "Michel..."

Soon after this voice sounded, a man came out of the crowd. He then carefully held and drew away that corpse. After checking the wounds seriously, he started to clean the blood stains on the floor.

After cleaning the blood stains from the floor, that guy used the corpse to set up a different scene against a wall.

After a few minutes, the guy called Michel stood up as he patted his hands, saying, "It's okay. As long as the troops don't dispatch a trace expert here, they won't find any problem. If I had some tools and materials, even trace experts could not find any problem."

At this moment, the slightly hoarse voice sounded once again, "Bohr has committed suicide. Have you seen that?"

After staying silent for two seconds, another furious voice sounded among the crowd, "After hearing that he was heading for the frontier and joining the vanguard, he became abnormal. When we fell asleep last night, he even shouted from a nightmare and woke everybody else. He even said that he didn't want to die. Peh! What a coward!"

"Yup, this guy even urged me to escape together with him. When he found no chance to escape on the way, his expression looked too bad!" another voice sounded.

"Michel, this coward committed suicide beside you just now. How did it happen!"

"We saw the coward crashing himself against the wall. We all saw it. After a loud sound, he died. I was really scared by this!"

"Yes, this guy didn't dare to even hold a machete. What a coward!"

"Right. This coward hit himself against the wall!" the rest of the people added in unison.

Right then, one guy suddenly burst out in tears. His crying was

really saddening, "Why couldn't you think it through? Why didn't you think it through? We are just joining the vanguards. We even planned to celebrate with some women after we survived there!"

At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie became stunned. 'What the hell are these people?'

A gentle man in his sixties wearing military uniform and a pair of glasses walked out of the crowd and stood in front of Zhang Tie. After bowing his body in a humble way, he almost lowered his gray-haired head below his knees. "Your excellency, I'm Hillman. It's my great pleasure to serve you!"

This man's voice was a bit hoarse. The moment Zhang Tie heard it, he knew that this old man was the very person who'd said "Michel" just now. Given his appearance, it was hard to imagine him as a condemned prisoner. If he'd been wearing another military uniform, he could look like a senior adviser. If not wearing a military uniform, he would have looked like a professor at a school or a bank manager. This guy looked a bit similar to Abyan. Zhang Tie wondered why he was here.

"Tell me, what crime have you made?" Zhang Tie watched this old guy with an interested look.

"Hmm. It...it's a small financial dispute!" the old guy replied in an implicit manner as he pushed up his glasses.

"Financial dispute?" Zhang Tie felt baffled about this term.

"A financial dispute with Cross Star Bank!" the old guy added.

"Bullshit. His nickname is old dog. He's a super liar," a voice drifted from the crowd. "He almost made Cross Star Bank bankrupt. If not for the third holy war, the Cross Star Commerce Alliance would not execute emergency air traffic control. If so, the old dog would have been invited to get off the airship and become a billionaire on another continent! I'm Figo. I'm a veterinarian. It's my pleasure to serve you, your excellency!"

'A vet? That's hilarious!' Zhang Tie smiled, "Then, what about you? Why did you become a condemned prisoner?"

Figo revealed his teeth as he looked a bit embarrassed. "Erm...I just performed some small surgeries without their consent!"

"Some small surgeries?"

"Your excellency. Figo's injections are mainly targeted at men——that is, rich and privileged men who would like to gift their inherited substances to women without their consent. When he knew of such a man, our Figo would always help that man do a small contraceptive operation so that those men would lose the necessary and basic physical channels to transmit their own DNA to the woman. Plus, our Figo didn't use anesthetic at all!" the old dog revealed Figo's secret briefly.

'F*ck!' after hearing this reply, Zhang Tie felt his legs clamp, 'What the hell are these condemned prisoners?'

Chapter 531: A Miserable Encounter

After linking the information that he got in Blackhot City to the information he was told by Hillman the old dog, Zhang Tie had a clear understanding about the current situation facing Blackson Humans Corridor.

The current situation was much more intense than that of one year ago. The demon army had started to move southwards. In the past ten months, three countries were consecutively destroyed by the demon army. In such a case, the countries of the Central States Union in Blackson Humans Corridor had to coordinate their forces so as to crack down on the demon disaster across the Corridor. Meanwhile, each country in Blackson Humans Corridor dispatched their elite force northward and cooperated with each other in case they were crushed by demons one after another.

At this moment, only some demon disasters in the southern countries were put to a stop. All the rest of the countries were filled with flames of war. A great number of refugees started to escape to the south after detouring around the demon-stricken areas. Since two years ago, those southern countries, especially Chinese countries, had started to transfer their population to the other continents at a large scale.

In such a large-scale holy war, the human population would be the major factor for humans to survive this war later on.

At this moment, the entire Selnes Plain between the north of Symbian Republic and Titanic Principality was the frontier for all the countries across Blackson Humans Corridor to defend against demons. The frightening super demon army was fighting the great army, which consisted of over 5 million people from dozens of human countries across Blackson Humans Corridor.

If the demon army broke the defense line of Selnes Plain, none of the forces across the vacant territory, from Selnes Plain all the way

to the north of the Kalay Mountain Range of Blackson Humans Corridor, could defeat the demons. Half of the territory of Blackson Humans Corridor would fall.

After only three years, the casualties across Blackson Humans Corridor had already surpassed 100 million people.

After hearing this news, Zhang Tie felt hopeless. According to Zhang Tie's instincts, Selnes Plain could not be held for long. As a LV 9 fighter, Zhang Tie knew the terrifying strength of that demon army, whose basic unit was made of LV 9 fighters.

If there were no more demon disasters, with a population of 1 billion across Blackson Humans Corridor, some golden armies composed of fighters above LV 6 could be formed. When fighting on the right terrains, and being assisted by large-scale mechanical troops, these golden armies might defeat this terrifying demon army. However, many countries were throwing their resources into dealing with the demon disasters in their own territory. Therefore, it was hard to say how long the human forces could stand in Selnes Plain.

...

After killing that guy called Bohr in the carriage, Zhang Tie established his prestige in the fastest way possible and became the "boss" of the condemned prisoners in the carriage. Some smart guys immediately stood on Zhang Tie's side. At this moment, they knew clearly that they could survive longer on Zhang Tie's side. This was one of the laws of survival that these condemned prisoners had learned in prison.

Zhang Tie was invited to sit in the most comfortable place in the carriage, where it was closest to the air vent. Besides having fresh air, this place was also cleanest.

In the carriage, these cannon fodder prisoners, who were doomed to join the vanguard, could only get some water and some dried food rations. Their weapons were placed in some ordnance

boxes, which could not be delivered to them until they got off the train under the supervision of someone from the troop. Right now those boxes were sealed with the symbol of Holy War Headquarters of Central States Alliance. If those seals were torn open by anyone before they got off the train, everybody in this carriage would be beheaded.

The first thing that was carried out in a war zone was military laws. Thousands of people would die everyday, everywhere. Therefore, it was easy for those law-enforcement teams to chop off the heads of some condemned prisoners. So even though those condemned prisoners were recalcitrant, they dared not risk their lives by opening the seals in advance.

However, the seals were opened. When Zhang Tie wanted to see what was inside these boxes, the guy called Michel voluntarily opened one box——Michel was a great thief and a trace expert. However, he was just a LV 5 warrior. Therefore, he tried to display his other talent in front of Zhang Tie.

The boxes contained common steel spears, which could be assembled in sections. There were also chest armors and helmets that were punched from thin, steel plates. The steel plates were only about two centimeters in thickness and very simple, which would not provide much defense. The chest armor could only defend one's breast and lower abdomen while being fixed with canvas on one's body. The helmets looked as if they could also be used as lunch boxes.

All these were the simplest of weapons and defensive fittings. Such was the special "treatment" that could be enjoyed by vanguard members in the war zone.

After Zhang Tie saw those items, Michel sealed the box like before. Zhang Tie's eyes glittered because of this guy's talent.

At midnight, the train was still running on the railway. Hillman the old dog told Zhang Tie that they had already entered the war

zone. Zhang Tie didn't sleep at all. He just kept his eyes closed and practiced mental arithmetic.

Seeing that Zhang Tie was silent, all the other guys in the carriage became quiet. None of them dared to make any noise.

When the next dawn fell, after listening to the rumbles of the train wheels over night, Zhang Tie suddenly felt his heart racing as he opened his glittering eyes immediately.

"Watch out..." Zhang Tie shouted instantly, waking all the guys in the carriage at once. Many people just watched Zhang Tie with a confused look, wondering why Zhang Tie woke them up.

However, before Zhang Tie could explain, he had already heard a boom in front of the train. Closely after that, the whole carriage keeled and rolled. Zhang Tie could only just catch a metal handle beside him so as to stabilize his body...

The carriage crashed and bumped for 20 seconds due to its inertia.

The train was derailed while the whole carriage was in a mess. The wooden boxes in the carriage hit some people as they rolled around. With some terrifying bone cracks, some guys started to shrill miserably. A guy's head exploded, spraying brains in all directions.

The carriage rolled 180 degrees, its roof and floor reversed. One box with helmets had been opened, and helmets flew out everywhere. The toilet bowl in the carriage also detached itself from where it was, spraying everything out of it, making the whole carriage as bloody and smelly as hell mixed with wails.

The only one who was safe and sound in the carriage was Zhang Tie. However, even Zhang Tie could not bear such a disgusting smell and atmosphere.

The door of such a carriage with condemned prisoners was different than that of carriages with regular soldiers. In order to

prevent these guys from escaping along the way, the door of this carriage was locked from outside. It could not be opened from the inside. Therefore, the moment these condemned prisoners recovered their senses, they gathered at the door and started to bang on it.

"Let us out of here, let us out of here..." Many of them started to shout at the door.

Nobody replied outside. However, Zhang Tie could faintly hear continuous, miserable wailing from outside.

"Ah...it's demons. It's demons!" someone's fearful exclamation drifted from afar.

Zhang Tie changed his expression at once as he forcefully lifted an ordnance box away from a poor guy's legs.

"Ah, thanks, thanks." The guy's face was twisted in great pain. Seeing Zhang Tie moving the box away from his legs, he burst out in tears at once.

Zhang Tie immediately tore open the box and drew a bundle of half length spears with the heads out of the box. After that, he ran to the side of the door as he shouted loudly, "Move aside..."

Those who were near the door hurriedly gave way to Zhang Tie. At this moment, Zhang Tie kicked and transformed the steel door instantly, revealing a gap from where a kitten could squeeze out. With another kick, the entire door was sent flying in the air, together with its lock catch.

The moment Zhang Tie jumped out of the carriage he caught sight of a massacre...

...

It was dawn. The long train was paralyzed on the riverside like a dead snake. Its head and last two carriages had fallen in the river. Some of the other carriages were still linked to the train, while some were not. Most of carriages had toppled over. Some armored

vehicles had rolled out of the carriages and were lying on one side of the railway.

Many human fighters, who were only slightly wounded, had just climbed out of their carriages in a flurried manner when their heads and bodies were split into pieces by a black swirl...

Chapter 532: The First Battle

Besides Abyan, this was Zhang Tie's first time to witness demon fighters which only existed in textbooks and the other books.

This was the most famous and terrifying main demon force——iron-armored demon.

Iron-armored demon was a black-scaled tall and strong monster which had two hands and two feet as well as a terrifying crocodile head. Its sharp teeth were exposed while its eyes were bloody. Additionally, there was a high rising tail like that of reptile on its spine.

The iron-armored demon was taller than 2.2 m on average. It has a great vitality and a destructive power. Its black scaled-armor was as defense as thin iron sheet, which could not be broken through by common arrows and some bolts of light crossbows from 100 m away.

When Zhang Tie jumped out of the carriage, he saw iron-armored demons waving their curved battle blades and tearing those human soldiers climbing out of the carriages into pieces as fast as constant black fatal cyclone.

Some iron-armored demons even drilled into those tilt carriages, causing a lot of blood sprayed out of the carriages constantly.

In front of 10-odd iron-armored demons, all the human soldiers in the train didn't even have a chance to counterattack. The whole train was like a prey being drawn to the riverside and surrounded by a group of fierce crocodiles. Fleshes and blood sprayed everywhere. Sometimes, battle-qi totem could be seen; however, all the battle-qi totems would disappear right away, black spider or huge centipede.

The moment Zhang Tie landed on the ground did he see a bloody iron-armored demon jumping out of the carriage in front of him

and charging at him with a shrill roar.

In the eyes of that iron-armored demon, Zhang Tie's carriage was undoubtedly a start of another bloody feast.

The moment those condemned prisoners followed Zhang Tie off the carriage did they see that iron-armored demon darting towards here. The shrill and terrifying roar was like that doomsday was coming.

Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes as he rapidly drew out a javelin from his hand and threw it towards that iron-armored demon.

Almost at the same time, the head of that iron-armored demon was exploded. Closely after that, a boom sounded in the air. The iron-armored demons kept running two steps forward before falling down.

Perhaps in the eyes of those iron-armored demons, LV 1 human soldiers and most of LV 8 human fighters could be easily killed by one or two slashes. Similarly, in Zhang Tie's eyes, most of LV 10 strong fighters and LV 1 common soldier could be easily killed by one javelin, not to mention those LV 9 iron-armored demons. That was an overwhelming advantage.

When a person broke through a limit, he could take all the people below that limit as weak as ants and worms. In Abyan's eyes, Zhang Tie was such a worm; so were those LV 9 demon fighters in Zhang Tie's eyes.

The javelin in Zhang Tie's hand was the most effective pesticide.

In less than a half second, Zhang Tie had thrown out 3 javelins, spurting the heads of 3 demon fighters who were executing massacre within 100 m.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie jumped onto the top of the train and ran towards the head of the train.

Zhang Tie's carriage was in the middle rear end of this train. Therefore, most of carriages were in front of Zhang Tie. On the top

of the train, he could have a good vision about the situations on both sides of the train. It was more convenient for Zhang Tie to kill those demon fighters with javelins.

Before Zhang Tie jumped onto the top of the carriage in front of him, he threw out another 2 javelins and killed 2 more demon fighters.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had killed 6 LV 9 iron-armored demons.

The rest iron-armored demons uttered jarring roars as they rushed towards Zhang Tie from all directions. Demon fighters were fiercer and dauntless than human fighters.

Zhang Tie threw out another 4 javelins in a wink, killing another 4 demon fighters' heads at once. At this moment, the final 3 demon fighters arrived at Zhang Tie's side.

With a sound, "Zra", a demon fighter torn the top of the carriage from the inside with its battle saber and hacked towards Zhang Tie's lower abdomen. Zhang Tie jumped away. Almost at the same time, the demon fighter jumped out of the broken top of the carriage and charged at Zhang Tie once again.

Zhang Tie moved closer to that demon fighter facing its sharp blade in mystical movements. Zhang Tie, who just reached the shoulder of that demon fighter in height and was half the weight of the demon fighter, punched on that demon fighter's chest, bursting its body into pieces immediately while spraying its flesh and blood everywhere...

The remaining 2 demon fighters uttered a weird shrill as they pounced at Zhang Tie at the same time. Before a demon fighter's saber touched Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had thrown himself against that LV 9 demon fighter like a mad ox, causing it sprout out a mouthful of blood like being crashed by a train and sending it flying backwards in the air from the top of the carriage.

The last demon fighter roared as its eyes were like being filled with blood. That demon fighter dropped off its big saber and directly charged towards Zhang Tie with its sharp claws. Zhang Tie faced its claws with his fists, causing it explode from the wrists to the shoulders and fall off the top of the train.

Zhang Tie closely followed that demon fighter off the top of the train. Before landing, he had forcefully stomped on that demon fighter. As a result, the two people hit the ground like iron hammers, causing a pit on the ground. That demon fighter exploded like a ripe tomato.

That demon fighter, who was sent flying back in the air, struggled to pick himself up from the ground. When Zhang Tie walked towards it, it was kneeling on the ground with one knee while spitting out blood.

Zhang Tie stepped on its tail while tightened its neck from its back with his right arm. The demon fighter then started to struggle forcefully as it caught Zhang Tie's arm with hands, wanting to split Zhang Tie's arm. At this moment, with a click, its thick neck was broken. Closely after that, it collapsed to the ground.

"Who else?" Zhang Tie roared as he glared around. He found no demon fighters anymore, but a lot of human soldiers and condemned prisoners who were watching him with an amazing look.

Watching those common human soldiers, Zhang Tie's killing intent gradually faded away. Since his fight with Abyan, the fury deep in Zhang Tie's heart was finally released.

Zhang Tie glanced at them and waved his hands towards them. Michel ran over here with an exciting look. When he arrived in front of Zhang Tie, he even glanced at that strong demon corpse before Zhang Tie's feet. Pounding his heart, he swallowed his saliva as he exclaimed inside, "F*ck, what the hell is this man?"

"Boss...what can I do for you?"

"Since these demons wanted to destroy the railway, they would not only destroy this track. Take some people and take a look at the other track over there. If there's a problem over there, set a warning in front of the road and block the train on the other track!" Zhang Tie sent the order. It was a multi-track railway. It's was too easy for a LV 9 fighter to derail the train. As an attack had just happened to the train on this track, it was hard to say that the train on the other track was safe.

After receiving the order, Michel became alert at once as he hurriedly ran towards the other track with some deft guys. As was predicted by Zhang Tie, less than 300 m after Michel ran away from the riverside, he had started to shout, "the track and the arm nuts of the foundation were loosened. The track was moved 10 cm outside..."

Closely after finding the problem had Michel started to set warning on the railway with the other guys...

A military officer with the rank of first lieutenant whose half body was tainted with blood walked towards Zhang Tie with some soldiers with a hesitating look. as he stammered, "Sir..."

If not Zhang Tie's javelins which boomed a demon fighter on this guy's side, this guy's head had long been chopped off.

On the military train heading for the frontier, a guy who could clean a small team of LV 9 demon fighters in a wink was qualified as a military officer. Based on Zhang Tie's fighting strength, he was at least a colonel.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't want to explain anything to them anymore. After glancing at the miserable scene over the ground, Zhang Tie slightly sighed, "First lieutenant, let's save people together..."

...

After that, Zhang Tie and all the movable people started to find wounded people and corpses one carriage after another and took them out of the carriages.

As the train was derailed suddenly, it caused a great casualty to the passengers in the carriages. The following mad massacre of demon fighters worsened this situation. Besides a lot of military materials, this train also carried 2000-odd soldiers from the Cross Star Commerce Alliance; however, less than 400 could still move while over 500 of them were heavily wounded and required timely medical treatment.

This was the outcome of the battle between a 2000-odd human regiment and 13 demon fighters.

The colonel of the 2000-odd soldiers was a LV 9 human fighter. The moment he came out of the train had he been tore into pieces by three demon fighters. If not himself, Zhang Tie was clear that none of the 2000-odd soldiers could survive.

Zhang Tie felt a bit gloomy. He finally understood that that this terrifying demon army had already toppled over the war mode of the former two holy war between humans and demons. In front of such demons, common human soldiers would be completely overwhelmed and be nothing different than those unarmed average people. In front of such a terrifying demon army, above 95% of human troops across Blackson Humans Corridor would be eliminated.

"So how to fight such a tough war?"

...

After pulling all the wounded people and corpses out of the carriages, they found a signal launcher in a carriage.

After a few minutes, a signal flare was emitted into the sky by high-pressure, causing a red flare at once.

1 hour later, a mini reconnaissance airship flew towards here

from north...

...

The accident only happened a bit more than 200 km away from Mocco City, which was closest to the frontier of Selnes Plain. It took Zhang Tie and the other guys 2 days to reach the frontier...

Chapter 533: Arriving at the Theater of Operations

Three cities across Selnes Plain between the north of Symbian Republic and Titanic Principality were under the control of humans, namely Mocco, Wolff and Sradic. The three cities formed a defense line longer than 500 km in the south of Selnes Plain from the west to the east.

At this moment, over ten corps and about 5 million human soldiers were gathering in the three cities and their surroundings. The population of logistics corps that served these people were twice this figure. Additionally, a lot of troops arrived here from rear to join this war.

In the north of Selnes Plain, the population of demon corps and demon puppets was also greater than 3 million. Besides, the demons' forces kept increasing.

At this moment, everyone across Blackson Humans Corridor focused on Selnes Plain. Three years since the beginning of the 3rd holy war, this was the first large-scale battle between human troops and demon troops.

When Zhang Tie and his followers arrived at Mocco City, they found that this city had become a ferocious battle field. The war airships flying across the sky were like a shoal of crucian swimming across the river. From the periphery of this city, Zhang Tie noticed that each one of them wore the same military uniform. Besides the men who were fighting here, all the women and kids across this city had been evacuated 4 months ago.

Various military materials were piling high on the station. For the sake of the defense, all the buildings nearby the railway station had been bulldozed.

Under the guidance of a lot of people, armored vehicles and tanks

were gradually driven out of the carriages of the train, then the railway station. The huge sounds of steam engines mixed with tones of tens of thousands of people from troops of different countries. With shouts and neighs, the entire railway station was much more boisterous than the most crowded vegetable market.

"No. 7 Imperial Heavy Armored Infantry Corps of Ducklin Empire, please gather on the No. 7 station...copy...No. 7 Imperial Heavy Armored Infantry Corps of Ducklin Empire, please gather on the No.7 station..."

A hoarse baritone drifted from an expensive alchemist's loudspeaker in the railway station, which covered all the other noises. After hearing this voice, a group of tough men with a huge metal box on their back, which was as large as half of their height, jumped off the train and rushed towards the No. 7 station. The others in front of them were pushed away by them rudely.

These tough men reminded Zhang Tie of iron-armored demons. Being same to iron-armored demons, all these tough men were higher than 2.2 m. They were like mountains. The bulging muscles on their arms were even thicker than the waists of thin men. The box on their back was also eye-catching. What was more impressive was that each of these tough men had a beautiful beard. Some men's beard was so long that it even reached their chests.

This group of people were the most attractive ones in the railway station. Therefore, they were very proud. When two of them passed by Zhang Tie, they glanced at Zhang Tie's bald jaw before raising their heads and displaying their long beard.

"Men in Ducklin Empire are proud of having beard. They are real fighters. The most powerful heavy-armored infantry across Blackson Humans Corridor come from Ducklin Empire!" Hillman, the old dog, stealthily slid to Zhang Tie's side like Zhang Tie's shadow as he whispered to him. After saying this, he looked at Zhang Tie's jaw before adding another sentence, "Of course, real fighters don't have to have beard!"

Zhang Tie touched his jaw; however, he felt nothing but some fine hair. He then smiled. At the sight of the banner of Cross Star Commerce Alliance over there, he summoned those survivors towards that place.

All the hundreds of survivors of Cross Star Commerce Alliance left the railway station without any morale.

"Hello. I'm Hobby, a major of the headquarters of Cross Star Commerce Alliance in Selnes Theater of Operations. I'm responsible for helping these people settle down. I've already known what happened to you on the way. General Cayne sent me to express thankfulness!"

After these people left the railway station, a major of the Cross Star Commerce Alliance stayed at the end of the team on purpose and sought a chance to whisper to Zhang Tie. Of course, Zhang Tie was not regarded as a deserter anymore at this moment.

"You're welcome. To be honest, I was just on my way to catch your train. In that case, nobody would ignore what happened here!" Zhang Tie explained frankly.

"May I know your name?"

"I'm Zhang Tie. I'm from Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country." Zhang Tie revealed his background.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Major Hobby blinked his eyes out of amazement as he swallowed his words back.

Besides settling down the troops from Cross Star Commerce Alliance, his another mission was to hook in Zhang Tie. General Cayne, the highest commander of Cross Star Commerce Alliance here was very interested in Zhang Tie. A guy who could clean a small demon team so easily was at least a LV 10 strong fighter. Such a fighter would be roped in by numerous forces wherever he was. Strong fighters were always urgently demanded.

Actually, less than 20 strong fighters were dispatched to Selnes

Theater of Operations from the Cross Star Commerce Alliance. Cross Star Commerce Alliance had done its utmost efforts to support the frontier. If Zhang Tie was of another status or came from other forces, Major Hobby might attempt to persuade him to join them with alluring conditions. However, after being told that Zhang Tie was from Huaiyuan Palace, a Chinese powerful family of famous Count Long Wind, Major Hobby felt it improper to invite Zhang Tie to join them anymore.

"Hmm, may I know what are you here for..." after knowing Zhang Tie's true status, Major Hobby looked more polite when he talked with Zhang Tie.

"To stay with my family members!" Zhang Tie replied straightforwardly. After seeing those airships from Jinyun Country, Zhang Tie knew that Huaiyuan Palace would not ignore this battle with demons in the Selnes Theater of Operations. Although he had arrived at the theater of operations, Zhang Tie didn't know where was Huaiyuan Palace's troops, "As I've just been in the theater of operations, I'm not familiar with the situation here. Can you tell me the encampment of Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace?"

"The troops of Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace are quartered in the Crystal Battle Fortress 40 km away from here!" Major Hobby replied at once.

"Ah, that's awesome!" Zhang Tie revealed a happy smile. "It seems that I'm in the right place." Zhang Tie thought inside. "Major Hobby, can you have someone drive me there?"

"Of course, no problem!" Major Hobby replied without any hesitation. After that, he rolled his eyes and asked in a low voice, "But...we have a small technical problem here."

"What problem?"

Major Hobby whispered in Zhang Tie's ear for a few seconds before watching Zhang Tie with a shameful look.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "Never mind. I'm just a passer-by. Of course, the achievement belongs to Cross Star Commerce Alliance. But I like those guys who were dispatched to the vanguards as cannon fodders. How about gifting them to me? I need them."

"How many people are there?"

"5!"

"I remember those guys have been killed by demons in the railway accident!" Major Hobby answered frankly.

The two men then glanced at each other for a few seconds before bursting out into laughter.

...

After half an hour...

"Hillman, fall out..."

"Michel, fall out..."

"Figo, fall out..."

"Dinar, fall out..."

"Frasier, fall out..."

Major Hobby read a name list loudly. After reading each name, he drew a line across the name. The five condemned prisoners came out of the team with a confused look.

Pointing at that military truck with a closed carriage in front of them, Major Hobby ordered, "Get on the truck..."

After their names being called, they all exchanged glances with each other with a confused look, except Hillman, the old dog, who became very excited and climbed onto the truck quickly. Seeing what the old dog was doing, Michel also hurriedly followed up.

After they all got on the truck, the truck left...

"Those whose names were called have to execute a special

mission. The rest of you, to the rear..." Major Hobby ordered when the truck had left 100 m away.

Hearing Major Hobby's words, two guys in the carriage even became a bit flurried, "Old dog, is he sending us to the frontier so fast?"

Since getting on the truck, Hillman was always closing his eyes with a bit flush on his cheeks. Until he was asked did he open his eyes and sighed, "We're already free!"

"Free?" the other guys didn't realize what did he mean.

Hillman silently walked to the front of the carriage which was linked to the cab. After that, he lowered his body and knocked at the rear window which could be opened.

The rear window was pulled open, showing Zhang Tie's smiling face.

...

Chapter 534: Becoming an Idol

With a faint smile, Zhang Tie turned around and looked at those guys in the carriage from the seat of the cab.

"I really appreciate that you saved me once again, your excellency. I promise I would play a bigger role on your side than in the vanguard!"

"Old dog is not suitable to this guy at all. He should be called old fox." Zhang Tie thought inside before revealing a smile, "Before the vehicle arrives at the destination, if any of you don't want to follow me, you can get off the vehicle for your own future at any time. From now on, you have about 1 hour to consider it! I'm not a big figure. I'm just a small figure. I bear grudges. Therefore, I can bear your ignorance about me; but I can not bear your betrayal. Have a good time considering about that!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie closed the rear window.

Basically, condemned prisoners were scumbags. However, not all of them were condemned prisoners. Zhang Tie found that these guys were not that bad. Therefore, he took them away. As for their future, they had to seek for blessings themselves.

Thinking of these guys' "bright experiences"—liar, thief, smuggler, counterfeiter and abnormal doctor who was especially responsible for castrating rapers, Zhang Tie wondered whether these guys would bring him a nickname "the king of douchebags" in the future.

"Never mind!" Zhang Tie just revealed a smile...

Zhang Tie believed in fate very much. Additionally, Zhang Tie knew that he didn't look like a king unless he disguised as a damn father. Therefore, he gave them some time to consider it. If they didn't agree, they could leave. That was not a big deal.

After closing the rear window, Zhang Tie didn't care about their

whereabouts anymore. Instead, he started to observe the situation in the Selnes Theater of Operations. On the way, Zhang Tie felt that the theater of operations was more like a work site than a military camp. Soldiers in military uniforms and battle armors could be seen everywhere. Armored vehicles were parking on the roadside one row after another. Besides, the peripheral fortifications outside the Mocco City existed everywhere which caused goosebumps all over Zhang Tie.

Over 10 km away from Mocco City, the erecting battle fortresses on the plain looked like steel forests. Those battle fortresses were distinctive in styles and sizes. All of them were filled with killing intent. Although it was daytime, the chimneys of the battle fortresses were smoking, making Zhang Tie feel like staying in a big industrial city. At this moment, the black smoke brought people a sense of safety.

As long as the chimneys were smoking, everyone knew that humans were still defending this defense line.

Over 5 million human soldiers really caused a great Qi field here.

After leaving Mocco City, the military truck kept driving towards northwest. The road in the wild had been covered with pits by the track-laying vehicles. Therefore, the truck ran slowly. After about 1 hour, the steel battle fortresses became sparse and a magnificent battle fortress appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie finally understood why the battle fortress of Jinyun Country was called Crystal Battle Fortress. Because this battle fortress was really too huge and magnificent. The 6 grim independent battle fortresses formed 6 supporting points and the skeleton of crystal battle fortress. The huge steel structure modules connected the 6 battle fortresses in the form of city walls and formed a huge, crystal-sized steel city. Erecting on the Selnes Plain, it displayed the power and magnificence of Chinese countries across Blackson Humans Corridor.

100 m away from this huge battle fortress was sentry posts and anti-tank trenches, which prevented vehicles from drawing closer.

"Sir, we've arrived at the crystal battle fortress of Jinyun Country! Our truck can not drive in!" the truck driver dispatched by Major Hobby watched that magnificent battle fortress in front of him with an admiring look.

"It's fine! Thanks. I will enter it myself!" after saying this, Zhang Tie opened the door as he waved his hand towards the driver.

Followed by the other guys in the carriage. Four of them stayed —Hillman, the old dog; Michel, the warehouse keeper; Figo, the vet and the counterfeiter whose nickname was Manager. Frasier, whose nickname was Black Shark had already gone on the way.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied to have 4 of them.

"Before Frasier left, he asked me to tell you, as you've saved him twice, he will appreciate you when there's a chance!" Hillman told Zhang Tie.

"Alright. Good luck to him!" Zhang Tie didn't mind it at all. After that, he took them towards that sentry post outside the crystal battle fortress. At the sight of the young Chinese looks, Zhang Tie felt intimate at once.

"I'm Zhang Tie. Please notice inside, I want to see the director of Huaiyuan Palace!" Zhang Tie spoke in Chinese. Given the shape of the crystal battle fortress, Zhang Tie knew that all the 6 families of Jinyun Country must have dispatched their elites here to participate in the war.

"You're from Huaiyuan Palace? Could you show me your certificate?" a Chinese fighter asked seriously. Judging from Zhang Tie's common clothes, he didn't believe in Zhang Tie's words.

Zhang Tie then took out his clan identification plate and showed it to the two fighters at the sentry post. All the elites of the 6 big clans of Jinyun Country had such a clan identification plate. At the

sight of the plate, the two soldiers knew that Zhang Tie was not bragging.

Below the crystal in the middle of the plate was Zhang Tie's photo. On the back of the plate was "Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace" engraved.

After telling Zhang Tie to wait here for a short while, a fighter immediately ran into the battle fortress.

When Zhang Tie talked with the 2 fighters, Michel and the other guys looked confused. Only Hillman revealed an amazement.

"You know Chinese?" Zhang Tie asked Hillman in Chinese.

"This is the popular language in the superb society of Waii Sub-Continent. It's the best reflection of one's culture and class. I understand it a bit." Hillman spoke in Chinese fluently.

After hearing that Hillman called Waii Sub-Continent instead of Blackson Humans Corridor the moment he came to the Chinese battle fortress, Zhang Tie sighed inside, "What a talent!"

After waiting here for less than 2 minutes, Zhang Tie saw an armored man running out of a gate of a battle fortress hurriedly.

"Ah...junior fellow apprentice Zhang Tie, that's you!" that guy became excited the moment he saw Zhang Tie.

"Long time no see, senior fellow apprentice Liu Xi!" Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could see his junior fellow apprentice whom he recognized in Hidden Dragon Island. Therefore, Zhang Tie also became spirited at once.

After glancing at Zhang Tie for a short while, Liu Xi heavily patted on Zhang Tie's shoulders, "I've not imagined that I could see you here. I deeply believed that you would not die that easily..."

Zhang Tie was startled by Liu Xi's words, "Ah, who told you I was dead?"

"Hahaha..." Liu Xi burst out into laughter, "They are just boring.

As you've not showed up for a long time in Hidden Dragon Island, plus some gossips, they thought you were already dead. It's good to see you back. They will shut up this time! Oh, who are they..."

Liu Xi's eyes fell on Hillman and the other's guys.

After recovering his composure, Zhang Tie replied, "Hmm, they are my retinue. I take them out to cultivate. A steward, a material keeper, a private doctor and a customs consultant!"

Liu Xi became silent for a second as he didn't think they fit their status given their military uniforms. He then pulled Zhang Tie's hands and walked inside, "Let's talk inside!"

Zhang Tie glanced at those guys, who hurriedly followed up.

"Oh, senior fellow apprentice Liu Xi, who's the director of the Huaiyuan Palace here?"

"Senior sister Xi!"

Hearing his answer, Zhang Tie almost fell down...

"What's wrong, junior fellow apprentice?"

"Ah, nothing." Zhang Tie swallowed his saliva and he hurriedly told a lie, "I was a bit shocked to hear that. I remember that senior sister Xi was just LV 9 when I left Hidden Dragon Palace. It's really out of my imagination that she could preside over the current situation here on behalf of Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Senior sister Xi is super talented as shiny as the sun and the moon. Senior sister Xi had reached LV 9 four years ago. After the battle in Heavens Cold City, senior sister Xi smoothly promoted to LV 10; after one and half years, she promoted to LV 11; 3 months ago, she was officially promoted to LV 12 and became the youngest great fighting master in the history of Hidden Dragon Palace. She's really our role model!" Liu Xi replied with an admiring look.

Being shocked inside, Zhang Tie had not imagined that Lan Yunxi could reach such a level in only a couple of years. Even if Lan

Yunxi was the pride of the God and enjoyed the rich resources of Huaiyuan Palace, her promotion speed was very terrifying, "You're right, senior fellow apprentice, senior sister Xi is indeed our role model!"

"Junior fellow apprentice, you're also not bad. Although you were not in Hidden Dragon Island these years, you had also become the idol of many brothers in Hidden Dragon Island. Your reputation could even match senior sister Xi!" Liu Xi sighed with full of emotions.

"What idol?" Zhang Tie asked with a surprising look.

"Haha, no disguising anymore, junior fellow apprentice." Liu Xi revealed an ambiguous smile which could only be understood by men, "We all thought that you were living a poor life in the barren place Blackhot City, we've not imagined that you could have over 40 lovers in that place. They all have their own features, some are enchanting, some are adorable, some are plump. How amazing it is! If they were not transported to Huaiyuan Prefecture, the brothers in Hidden Dragon Island might have not known your cool days in Blackhot City at all! If senior sister Xi has the greatest fighting force in Hidden Dragon Island, you must be the Love Affairs Number One in Hidden Dragon Island."

The moment Zhang Tie heard the nickname "Love Affairs Number One" did he feel a chilly sense...

Chapter 535: Meeting Lan Yunxi Once Again

This place gathered many elites of the 6 top clans in Jinyun Country, namely Zhang Clan, Lan Clan, Ou Clan, Dantai Clan, Wang Clan and Li Clan.

Besides those common soldiers who kept running the battle fortress, all the participants dispatched by the 6 clans were at least LV 9 elites. Over 1/3 of the soldiers who were only responsible for defending the battle fortress were above LV 6. The rest 2/3 were LV 4 to LV 5 warriors. Even the boiler firemen in the battle fortress were above LV 3.

There were over 25000 people in the crystal battle fortress in total. Each clan dispatched 4000 people to this battle fortress, 2-3% of which were not lower than LV 9, namely about 100 people. Although this number could not match that of the terrifying demon corps, Zhang Tie thought it was a great fighting force for sure. Few country across Selnes Theater of Operations could have over 600 fighters above LV 9.

Zhang Tie and his retinue settled down in two narrow rooms near the "city wall" of the battle fortress, the roof of which was covered with dense steam pipes.

Hillman and the other three guys' room was only a bit greater than 3 square meters in total. The four high-strength spring beds were fixed on the walls. Besides, there were only some hot steam pipes in the room. The inside of the room was 5 degrees higher than that outside. Because the battle fortress was transported here by air, for the sake of the weight in the air, all the thermal baffles were saved. This situation was acceptable in winter; however, it was as hot as a steam cage in summer.

Zhang Tie's room was independent, which was a bit better. However, it was far away from being comfortable. If it was a castle, its outlook and coziness would be considered; however, as a battle

fortress, it only had two aspects to consider with, namely its lethality and defensive power. Aesthetics and coziness was out of concern for the battle fortress designers.

Liu Xi fetched some clothes of Huaiyuan Palace's soldiers and gave them to Zhang Tie and Hillman to put on. Otherwise, their clothes would be too eye-catching.

Besides Liu Xi, there were 10 more senior fellow apprentices from Hidden Dragon Island in the battle fortress. However, Zhang Tie didn't even know their names. Out of curiosity, all of them ran here to take a look at Zhang Tie. They all wanted to see how Zhang Tie looked as the "Love Affairs Number One" in Hidden Dragon Palace. At the sight of their looks, Zhang Tie was unhappy; however, he could not lose his temper at this moment.

After entering the crystal battle fortress, Zhang Tie knew that there were over 16,000 human airships in Selnes Theater of Operations. With so many airships, humans took control of the air across the theater of operations. This advantage in the air was offset by the advantage of demon corps on the ground. As a result, humans and demons reached an impasse.

Human airships was carrying a very tough task, to stop demon corps from completing large-scale gathering in the frontier. As long as the population and density of demons reached a certain degree, they would be boomed by human airships. The airships mainly used two weapons to strike the land forces, one was the terrifying white phosphorous gel combustion bomb, the other was the powerful alchemist's bomb.

White phosphorous gel combustion bomb could burn the surface of any object that it adhered to, which could be hardly put out. It could burn even in water. If it adhered to the surface of living beings like animals, it could even burn the fat of the animals, causing new heat sources. Such combustion bombs were a huge threat to demon troops. Even LV 9 demon fighters would be heavily wounded if not killed by such combustion bombs. It was

said that only LV 14 demon fighters with protective battle qi could survive such bombs. All those below LV 14 would be killed for sure by this bomb.

White phosphorous gel combustion bomb was that powerful, not to mention alchemist's bomb. At the critical moment, alchemist's bomb could even kill a knight, not to mention average demons.

Liu Xi told Zhang Tie that countries had gathered over 1000 alchemist's bombs in Selnes Theater of Operations.

Three cities, hundreds of battle fortresses, a defense line that lasted hundreds of miles, over 1000 alchemist's bombs, over 16,000 war airships, over 10,000 armored vehicles and over 5 million human soldiers. All these sustained humans' morale in Selnes Theater of Operations.

The Selnes Theater of Operations was in a very sophisticated and fierce situation overall. Human airships were seeking for chances in the air to strike the terrifying demon airships while the terrifying demon corps were seeking for chances on the ground to break humans' Selnes defense line.

Of course, it was sophisticated only for big figures and outsiders. For those LV 9 elite fighters who usually broke in Selnes Plain to fight demon troops, this holy war was just collisions between sharp blades about life or death. Since the founding of the crystal battle fortress, Huaiyuan Palace had lost 20 LV 9 fighters and about 400 fighters below LV 9. The airship troops lost more than 3000 people. In this theater of operations, as long as the human airship was brought down by wing demons, no fighters inside the airship could survive back.

Selnes theater of operations was just a huge meat grinder.

At this moment, Lan Yunxi was the supreme commander of Jinyun Country's airship troops in Selnes Theater of Operations. Of course, she could not stay in the battle fortress every day. Actually, according to Liu Xi, Lan Yunxi rarely stayed in the battle

fortress. One week ago, she had her airship troop supplemented with some major materials in the airship base in the rear of Selnes Theater of Operations before returning to the battle field once again. If not threw 1/3 of those bombs to the demons, Lan Yunxi would not come back.

Since an airship base in Carlo Federation was destroyed by a small demon troop half a year ago, burning 500 airships into pieces, there were only three large-scale airship supplementation and maintenance bases in Mocco City, Volv City and Sradic City respectively across the entire Selnes Theater of Operations. Most of the airship supplementation bases were moved to the safer places in the rear. If crystal battle fortress was not so large and could protect the airships inside it, no airship dared to park in here for an overhaul. Airships from Jinyun Country just accepted short maintenance here by batches. They would not stay here too long.

Strictly, Zhang Tie was not a frontline combatants at this moment. Therefore, nobody assigned tasks to him. He didn't see Lan Yunxi until two days later on the evening of March 14th .

Under the guidance of lamp signals on the ground, a lot of airships started to land on the airport next to the crystal battle fortress. One airship directly landed in the crystal battle fortress, which was covered with some damages. One of its independent air sacs was flat. All the ground service members started to repair the body and air sacs of the airship quickly.

Those teams of LV 9 elite fighters in the battle fortress had already left the battle fortress silently and started to patrol and set invisible sentry within 20 kms circle of the battle fortress in case of being attacked by demon troops. A team of LV 9 fighters could cause a severe damage to a batch of airships on the ground in only a few minutes. In order to avoid from being noticed by demons, the airships here chose to land on the ground in dark.

One hour after those airships landed here, Zhang Tie met Lan Yunxi .

Lan Yunxi was in the airship which landed in the crystal battle fortress. Zhang Tie saw Lan Yunxi in the command module of the airship. She was surrounded by many people, who were all young elites from all the 6 clans and other senior military officers in the airship troop.

The military rank of the coxswain of a fury-level airship was captain who could command a squad of airships; the military rank of the commander of 8 fury-level airships was major; the military rank of the commander of 50 fury-level airships was Lieutenant Colonel. A colonel could command 200 fury-level airships. Lan Yunxi as the head of the air army could command almost 1000 fury-level airships.

When Zhang Tie was taken into the command module by Liu Xi, he saw Lan Yunxi sitting on the commanding chair and listing to a strong and tall man with the rank of colonel, "Although the gliders being released before airship strike could realize early warning and investigation to a certain degree, in front of wing demons, fighters who manipulated the gliders could barely survive themselves. This time, we lost 13 glider fighters. Now, the driver of each glider is selected by drawing lots. Fighters are of high morale. They all treat such a sacrifice as a great honor. However, it's not a sustainable way..."

Lan Yunxi had already seen Zhang Tie come in; however, she didn't even glance at him; instead, she just paid attention to the opinions of those people around her. Watching her cold face, Zhang Tie's heart started to race.

Excessive modesty was a sort of pride; similarly, Lan Yunxi, who had an expressionless look was most expressive in Zhang Tie's eyes.

As Liu Xi had a task in the evening, after taking Zhang Tie here and telling him about something, he then left. Sitting in an inconspicuous place of the command module, Zhang Tie waited for Lan Yunxi quietly. Meanwhile, he was thinking about how to talk

with her.

After about 4 years, Lan Yunxi had become more mature and beautiful. Besides, she looked more dignified like giving out a light, which was not easily touched by others, although being not stimulative to eyes. Her light even dwarfed Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie thought he had been low-key; however, he didn't know how eye-attractive was his common military uniform which was usually worn by LV 1 soldiers in this command module. Even if he didn't want to arouse others' attention, he failed to make it.

"Are you a soldier on airship? Don't you know about the rules? Are you qualified to be here? Roll out of here!" a 20-odd handsome major started to rebuke Zhang Tie with a frown.

When that major walked to the front of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie noticed that Lan Yunxi was glancing at him. However, she didn't say anything. It seemed that she just wanted to see how Zhang Tie was going to face.

"Are all women that narrow-minded?" Zhang Tie swore inside. He raised his head and glanced at that major. However, he still sat there. This guy had seen that Liu Xi brought Zhang Tie in just now. He didn't say anything at that time; whereas, he came here to find Zhang Tie trouble now. What did he mean?

The moment Zhang Tie saw those men's admiring look in front of Lan Yunxi did Zhang Tie know what did this guy mean. "F*ck, you want to seek the limelight in front of Lan Yunxi by taking me as the stepping-stone and prop? Damn!"

Receiving no response from Zhang Tie, that major's face turned red at once. With a furious look, he instantly lowered his body and his voice as he glared at Zhang Tie while gritting his teeth, "Roll out of here, am I clear?"

Zhang Tie picked wax from his ears before blowing it away. When that guy was almost driven mad by him, Zhang Tie

explained slowly, "Hmm, I'm sorry. I'm not a soldier in crystal battle fortress. Therefore, I don't know about the rules here. You're not holding a conference of war, why couldn't I be here?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, that major became stunned for a second, "You're not a soldier in crystal battle fortress, why are you here then?"

"I'm here for my wife!" the moment Zhang Tie finished his words, Lan Yunxi, who had a sharp auditory sense as a LV 12 fighting master, jumped her eyebrows. She could not maintain her calm look anymore; instead, she immediately glared at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter inside.

"Your wife is here?" the major realized it after a few seconds. After saying this, he looked around and found all the female dogrobbers had left. No female was here except...

"Yup!" Zhang Tie replied with a common look.

"Who's your wife?"

"My wife is..." Zhang Tie suspended on purpose, "You guess?"

Zhang Tie blinked and made a grimace.

The major was infuriated as he felt being cheated by Zhang Tie. The moment he wanted to beat Zhang Tie, he heard Lan Yunxi's voice.

"Junior fellow apprentice Zhang Tie, it's been 4 years no see!" Lan Yunxi walked towards them.

Zhang Tie stood up with another look, "Senior sister apprentice Xi, it's been 4 years no see, you look more beautiful!"

Hearing the frank talk between Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi, all the men in the command module focused on Zhang Tie, which almost turned Zhang Tie into a burning torch.

The major stood still as he almost swore all of Zhang Tie's ancestors and relatives in his mind, "F*ck, you're a junior fellow

apprentice of Lan Yunxi? Why do you look like this? Aren't you setting me up?"

Seeing that everyone focused their eyes on Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi revealed a big smile as she started to introduce to the onlookers very straightforwardly, "May I have your attention, please. I will introduce a person to you. This is Zhang Tie, my junior fellow apprentice, the number one lady killer among the young generation of Huaiyuan Palace. Before he became an adult, he already had more than 40 lovers. My junior fellow apprentice is more well-known than me in Hidden Dragon Island!"

"Killing intent, killing intent!" Zhang Tie's fine hair on his back stood up at once.

Chapter 536: Love Affairs in Battle Field

"Having over 40 lovers before becoming an adult?" after hearing Lan Yunxi's introduction, all the young, handsome guys from different clans threw their weird looks at Zhang Tie. If they were commoners, they might admire about Zhang Tie's "achievements"; however, all these were elites from the 6 influential clans of Jinyun Country. They were all born and grew in rich families. They could have 400 women, not to mention 40, if they were allowed.

Actually, these true Chinese rich and powerful families had very strict requirements on love affairs. They were instructed since they were young that a person being indulged in love affairs could only be confined in the clan as a birth machine; instead of becoming any influential figure in the clan.

Therefore, none of the true elites in Chinese rich and powerful families would indulge in love affairs. Meanwhile, they treasured their reputation on this aspect especially. If those elders and big figures of their clan knew that they had love affairs with women outside, it was nothing different than destroying their own future.

Through Lan Yunxi's introduction, Zhang Tie became a playboy in Huaiyuan Palace. Plus Zhang Tie's "whiteboard" military uniform, more people started to feel that Zhang Tie was just a birth machine. Otherwise, as Lan Yunxi's junior fellow apprentice in Hidden Dragon Palace who had awakened his ancestral bloodline, he should have some shining points.

Each powerful clan had some people like Zhang Tie. However, they didn't express their contemptuous looks for the sake of Lan Yunxi's face. However, given Lan Yunxi's ridicule, they knew that Lan Yunxi disliked her junior fellow apprentice. Otherwise, she would not have revealed Zhang Tie's nickname "Love Affairs Number One".

Of course, Zhang Tie admitted what he had done. After witnessing the miserable situation in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie felt that it was very timely and remorseless to pick the girls of Rose Association away from Blackhot City. Therefore, Zhang Tie looked very calm at this moment.

After Lan Yunxi's words, before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, another guy had burst out into laughter.

"Haha, senior sister apprentice Xi's words make us embarrassed. But I think that real men should have meritorious deeds in the battle field in this chaotic world. We should fight demons and defend humans on the battle field and tint our battle armors using demons' fresh blood instead of being indulged in love affairs in the moonlight. What do you think?"

All the others started to nod.

The one who talked was a toyboy, whose words were full of superiority. By participating in the holy war, he looked as righteous as a savior in the doomsday. Zhang Tie would not care about that in usual days; however, at this moment, this guy was showing off himself in front of Lan Yunxi, which made Zhang Tie very uncomfortable.

"F*ck, I'm talking with my wife. who're you? How dare you show off yourself in front of me?"

"Good talk! Senior fellow apprentice, your words really enlightened me!" Zhang Tie applauded as he watched that guy with a 'sincere' smile, "May I know your name, senior fellow apprentice? Which clan do you come from?"

"I'm Ou Hongyu from Chuixue Palace!" that guy replied with full of conceit.

Chuixue Palace was the official name of Ou Clan.

"Oh, it's senior fellow apprentice Ou from Chuixue Palace. It's my great honor to see you..." Zhang Tie revealed an 'admirable' look. "I

was told that all the great heroes in the ancient times aimed at eliminating enemies and defending their home. Senior fellow apprentice was so righteous at targeting and sweeping the demons, which really enlightened me a lot. I'm really dwarfed in front of you. I think senior fellow apprentice Ou must have the ambition of sweeping demons and defending our home. I really admire you, please accept my bow."

After saying this, Zhang Tie really gave a bow to this guy seriously.

"Erm..." after hearing Zhang Tie's words, this guy felt something was wrong. However, as he had just said that, he felt shameful to regret; therefore, he revealed a faint embarrassed look.

"Were you kidding just now?" Zhang Tie asked him with an 'amazed' look.

"Of course not!" that guy glared at Zhang Tie.

"You were just talking about it. Actually, you didn't think about sweeping demons and defending our home?"

Under the gaze of the onlookers, including Lan Yunxi, that guy could not swallow his words, "Of course not!"

"Good man!" Zhang Tie smiled as he forcefully applauded for a few more times, "As you've all witnessed that, senior fellow apprentice Ou Hongyu expressed his ambition of sweeping demons and defending our home here. That's really admirable!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie told Lan Yunxi with an embarrassed look, "I'm sorry, senior fellow apprentice Xi. Seeing so many senior fellow apprentices surrounding you, I thought they were all courting you; I've not imagined that this senior fellow apprentice Ou was so noble and so decisive. As this holy war would at least last 100 years, I know senior sister apprentice Xi would not marry until 100 years later when you become a old grandma, this senior fellow apprentice Ou was...alas...pitiful...pitiful!"

Zhang Tie shook his head as the face of Ou Hongyu turned pale. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie had dug a pit for him and buried him alive; additionally, Zhang Tie even matted down the soil and set a gravestone for him. As a result, Ou Hongyu had no chance to free himself at all.

At this moment, all the other guys in the room threw their sympathetic glances at Ou Hongyu. They all sympathized Ou Hongyu. With so many elites from 6 clans at present, Ou Clan would definitely force Ou Hongyu to be a 'martyr' for the reputation of Chuixue Palace; otherwise, Ou Clan would be derided by others.

Of course, with one less competitor for courting Lan Yunxi, some guys were happy inside. However, at this moment, nobody treated Zhang Tie as a 'birth machine' anymore. None of the senior fellow apprentices of Lan Yunxi was coward, even a playboy who was indulged in love affairs...

Seeing Zhang Tie's eyes lit up once again, all the guys' hearts pounded.

"Who else have the same thought as senior fellow apprentice Ou Hongyu?" Zhang Tie asked with a smile.

"Junior fellow apprentice Zhang Tie must be joking. Although junior fellow apprentice Hongyu's ambition is admiring, this holy war would last 100 years, even 1000 years. Facing the holy war, it's our responsibility to protect humans by killing demons on the battle field; however, it's also our responsibility to extend our clan bloodlines. If our generation could not sweep the demons, we will have our sons and grandsons clean the demons!" a 27-year old man with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel smiled with a mature look.

All the elites of the 6 clans were excellent in some aspects. Although Ou Hongyu fell into Zhang Tie's pit, how could the others be foxed by such a problem.

His words sounded much more reasonable, which formed a

resonance with Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then cupped his hands in front of his chest, "May I know your name, senior fellow apprentice?"

"I'm Dantai Yuya from Tuisi Palace!" that man replied politely.

"Is senior fellow apprentice also wanting to court our senior sister apprentice Xi?" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

"Ahem..ahem..." Dantai Yuya did not feel suitable to answer Zhang Tie's question. After glancing at Lan Yunxi and thinking about Ou Hongyu's outcome, he said euphemistically and bravely, "Gentlemen always court for fair lady. Senior sister apprentice Yunxi is as delicate as a orchid and as bright as the sun and the moon. It's my great honor to be favored by her, if possible!"

After hearing Zhang Tie talking about her private affair, Lan Yunxi glared at Zhang Tie.

"Ha...ha...don't be embarrassed, senior fellow apprentices. Our senior sister Xi is the most brightest star in Huaiyuan Palace and Hidden Dragon Palace. Numerous people are courting senior sister apprentice Xi. It's not strange for you to have such a desire." After hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody exchanged glances with each other before nodding inside.

"However, as our fellow apprentices in Hidden Dragon Palace had negotiated before, the men who could match senior sister apprentice Xi must be very excellent. If he was an average person, even though senior sister apprentice Xi agreed to marry him, we fellow apprentices of Hidden Dragon Palace would not agree. In the eyes of our brothers from Hidden Dragon Palace, men from other clans courting senior sister apprentice Xi were like buddies from other schools stealing away our school sweetheart. What do you feel about that?"

Everyone in the room nodded as Zhang Tie's words were very vivid.

"Therefore, anyone wanting to court our senior sister apprentice Xi has to pass our brothers in Hidden Dragon Palace, right?"

Lan Yunxi stared at Zhang Tie with a puzzled look. She didn't know what other tricks would Zhang Tie play. However, Lan Yunxi was moved by one point of Zhang Tie's words. She was bothered by a lot of men all day long. Sometimes, she was very bored about them. However, their excuses were about military affairs; she felt embarrassed to drive them away. Therefore, she wanted to see what method did Zhang Tie have.

"I wonder what do you mean by passing the brothers of Hidden Dragon Palace." Dantai Yuya asked calmly.

"It's very simple. If you could not match the talents of the brothers of Hidden Dragon Palace, you'd better be self-conscious and stay away from senior sister apprentice Xi. As a girl, our senior sister apprentice might be embarrassed to drive you away sometimes. Our brothers of Hidden Dragon Palace could help her select her pursuer.

"Match what?" soon after Zhang Tie's words was a lieutenant colonel's question. None of those confident men would retreat at this moment.

"Any item which is concerned with money or family background is not trustful as it's not your own talent. I have a good item. As we are in the first theater of operations, where all the men head for, we will match the number of wing demons we can kill. As senior sister apprentice Xi had mentioned, I am just a toyboy and her most coward junior fellow apprentice, let's bet with 3 months. Those who could not kill as many wing demons as me within 3 months would stay far away from senior sister apprentice Xi. A toad don't dream for eating swan. Within the following 3 months, unless military affairs, please do not draw closer to senior sister apprentice with those old excuses for the sake of the others' feelings. What do you think about that?"

Those men exchanged glances with each other before raising their heads like game fowls with unpredictable smile.

"Hahahaha, that's funny, that's funny. Guys from Hidden Dragon Palace are really funny..." a man laughed hysterically, "I will match with you, let's see whether I'm qualified to court senior sister apprentice Xi after 3 months. I'm Wang Hu. This junior fellow apprentice is really funny. Let's drink when there's a chance!"

A guy with whiskers walked here and patted Zhang Tie's shoulders before going away.

Dantai Yuya also smiled, "Junior fellow apprentice Zhang Tie is right. Let's match our fighting strength then. We will be relaxed after 3 months!"

After leaving these words, Dantai Yuya also left.

The rest of people exchanged glances with each other before leaving. Only Ou Hongyu glared at Zhang Tie before leaving.

In a wink, there were only Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi in the command module.

"What do you mean, junior fellow apprentice Zhang Tie?" Lan Yunxi glared at Zhang Tie as she accented the term 'junior fellow apprentice', "From when did you start caring about my private affair?"

Zhang Tie revealed a roguish smile, "Erm...as so many men were surrounding you...I'm afraid, I'm afraid to wear a [green hat](#)!"

Soon after he finished his words, Zhang Tie found Lan Yunxi's eyes turned green as she slowly moved towards Zhang Tie with an increasingly dangerous qi.

Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva as he moved back out of fear, "Argh...what..what do you want?"

"Green...green..." Lan Yunxi muttered while gritting her teeth. It seemed that she had been obsessed with a ghost as she glared, "You

b*stard!"

Soon after saying this, Lan Yunxi darted towards Zhang Tie in a high speed that Zhang Tie could not even catch her figure.

"Don't beat my face...argh..."

...

There is a story about wearing a green hat: a woman had an illegal love affair with a man. One day, when she was making love with her lover at home, her husband came back. Her lover just hid under the bed; however, a part of his clothes could be seen from outside the bed; at this moment, she saw a half watermelon peel on the table; in case of being found by her husband, she instantly put the watermelon peel on the head of her husband in excuse of sheltering sunshine for him which could rightly cover his eyes.

Chapter 537: Cultivation in the Airship

Zhang Tie left the airship with a bloody nose and swollen face and looked very embarrassed. However, he didn't feel depressed about that; instead, he felt a bit relaxed. He had a sense of relief after being beaten by Lan Yunxi. What he was afraid most was being ignored by Lan Yunxi.

Back in the battle fortress, Hillman and the other three guys were really startled by Zhang Tie's embarrassed look. They thought that Zhang Tie met demons on the way. Zhang Tie didn't want to explain it to them. He just let them have a good sleep and return to Jinyun Country together with him tomorrow.

"Argh, we will go back to Jinyun Country tomorrow?" Michel asked Zhang Tie with an amazing look.

"Hmm, of course, so you should go to bed early tonight. We will set out early morning!"

"Oh, thank god, I thought that we were going to fight demons here."

"Do you want to stay here? If you want, I will tell them to keep you here!"

"Argh. Don't do that! I'm just joking!" Michel hurriedly replied with a big smile.

Zhang Tie then entered his cabin and started to cultivate.

No matter how tense it was in the first theater of operations, as Zhang Tie had disappeared for three years, if he didn't return home to take a look at his family members and his friends, he would not be able to concentrate on fighting demons here.

To resist foreign aggression, there must be internal stability. His family members were still concerned about him. Additionally, he also cared about those girls of Rose Association and the God Blessing Brotherhood. It was righteous for him to just stay here in

the 1st theater of operations, however, Zhang Tie was not proud of it at all. No matter what, family ranked first in Zhang Tie's mind forever. If he lost his own family and those people whom he was concerned about the most, who was he fighting demons for?

It only took him about 20 days to return to Huaiyuan Prefecture and come back. Zhang Tie didn't believe that such a great theater of operations would collapse without him.

"Additionally, Lan Yunxi is still angry at him. It's tricky to manage her. Slow down." Zhang Tie finally understood that polygamy was not that easy.

At about 5 in the next early morning, Zhang Tie heard the knocks from outside the narrow room.

Having long prepared for it, Zhang Tie hurriedly got off the bed and opened the door. A second lieutenant in airship uniform was standing outside the door, "Are you Zhang Tie?"

"Yup!"

"Airship 086 is going to set off, my officer told me to take you onto the airship!"

"Fine!" Zhang Tie hurriedly knocked at the door next to his room. Hillman and the other 3 guys had long prepared for that. The moment they heard Zhang Tie's knocks did they come out hurriedly.

After walking out of the battle fortress of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie let them wait for a short while. He then rapidly ran towards the room of Liu Xi and knocked at his door. Liu Xi was not inside. Zhang Tie estimated that Liu Xi was still on duty. Therefore, he left a slip of paper in Liu Xi's room. Soon after that, he left with that second lieutenant.

In the airship base outside the battle fortress, Zhang Tie caught sight of airship 086, which was a fury-level war airship. Over 200 wounded soldiers were in that airship, who required medical

treatment in Huaiyuan Prefecture. Compared to them, Zhang Tie was just thumbing a ride.

The coxswain didn't know Zhang Tie's status. Therefore, when Zhang Tie boarded on the airship, the coxswain didn't show up. The crew of the airship also treated Zhang Tie as a coward of Huaiyuan Palace who hurriedly escaped away at the sight of the dangers in the frontier.

Zhang Tie didn't care about their thoughts. When a person was enough powerful, he indeed didn't have to care about others' feelings, neither would he show himself up in front of others. Zhang Tie estimated that he had killed tens of thousands of demon puppets, 13 LV 9 demons and 1 LV 14 demon from the accident in Heavens Cold City to now. He wondered whether this was a contribution that he had made to humans in the holy war or not. Therefore, he was very reassured about his current situation.

This time, 5 of them were allocated with 5 independent cabins. Although it was a bit crowded but it was better than that in the crystal battle fortress. Whereas, due to too many wounded soldiers were inside, the entire airship was filled with a smell of disinfected water.

Less than 10 minutes after they boarded on, the airship 086 had slowly suspended in the air under the guidance of the ground lamp signals. At the same time, the anchor chains which were used to fix the airship were also collected. Standing on the deck of the airship, Zhang Tie watched these battle fortresses. On the top of that battle fortress of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie saw a graceful figure who was watching this airship.

That was Lan Yunxi.

"Wait for me. I will be back soon. Wait for me back. I will kill all the wing demons and drive all those b*stards away!" Zhang Tie shouted towards that figure. After hearing Zhang Tie's exclamation, that figure directly turned around and entered the

battle fortress.

Touching his nose, Zhang Tie watched those fighters manipulating some defense weapons on the deck who were staring at him as if they saw an idiot.

"You can kill wing demons?" a tough Chinese soldier with the rank of sergeant first class asked Zhang Tie.

"Not yet. But I think it's not difficult!" Zhang Tie shrugged.

"Brat, don't talk nonsense. If you could kill a wing demon, I would call you grandpa!"

"Is wing demon that tricky?"

"Of course, they were LV 9 demons. As long as they reached the dead defensive corners of airship, one wing demon could tear all the major air sacs of a fury-level airship in one minute. In order to deal with wing demons, we've lost too many brothers."

"Does wing demons fly faster than airship?"

"Of course!"

"Are they faster than glider?"

"Almost!"

"Why not beat them by glider?"

"Brat, don't brag, glider is not like airship. It has limited weapons. There's only a driver inside. How to beat demons in the cockpit?" that sergeant first class stared at Zhang Tie.

"Do you have a glider on this airship?"

"Of course!"

"Haha, you will know how to beat them!" Zhang Tie smiled before leaving the deck.

...

"F*ck, this brat must have not been to the battle field!" a soldier

on the deck said after Zhang Tie left.

All the others nodded.

...

After leaving the deck, Zhang Tie directly returned to his cabin. He told Hillman to call him if the airship encountered an air attack. After that, he closed the door and started to cultivate.

Zhang Tie estimated it would take him at least 7 days by airship from Selnes Plain to Huaiyuan Prefecture of Jinyun Country. He could have a good cultivation in this period. Of course, if the airship met the attack of some iron-beak ibises on the way back, it would be awesome.

Zhang Tie sat with his legs crossed in the narrow cabin as he started to visualize the mysterious runes off 'Great Wilderness Sutra'. After that, he started to recite the endless true words of the Great Wilderness Sutra.

He had to recite the true words of endless Great Wilderness Sutra for 50 times before activating the second storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda. As long as the second storey was activated, Zhang Tie would have 5 Great Wilderness Seals and could manipulate all the LV 1 living beings. After that, Zhang Tie would prepare to see how powerful the soul-based animal controlling method in the "Great Wilderness Sutra" was.

As Zhang Tie muttered the true words one after another, mysterious tadpole-sized runes gradually formed in Zhang Tie's mind before drilling into the second storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda. Gradually, the second storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda started to shine.

Zhang Tie gently sped up. Gradually, each sentence of Great Wilderness endless true words jumped out of his mouth in the form of one syllable. As he read too fast, he only heard the sound "buzz"... "buzz"...later on, all of Zhang Tie's cells started to hum...

...

In cultivation, Zhang Tie forgot about time. When he felt hungry as his stomach sounded like a thunder, he instantly retreated from the state of reciting Great Wilderness endless true words. After that, Zhang Tie got off the bed. After moving his limbs, he opened the door and walked out.

"Argh, boss, you're out?" half-balded counterfeiter Abu let out a sigh immediately the moment he saw Zhang Tie coming out.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Boss, we were all concerned about you during the past three days. If you didn't come out today, Hillman would have called the captain to break your door by force!"

"Oh, I've cultivated 3 days?"

"You don't know how long have you cultivated, boss?"

"In cultivation, you would have a different time experience!"

"Oh!" Abu scratched his head. The world of senior fighters was too mysterious for these LV 2 or 3 soldiers.

"Have the airship been attacked by those flying beasts?"

"No!" Abu shook his head.

"Where's the canteen. I want to eat something!"

"Ah, good!"

Although there were too many food in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie didn't want to use Castle of Black Iron without any emergency.

On the way to the canteen, Zhang Tie found that Figo was dealing with wounds for those wounded soldiers as professionally as a doctor. It seemed that Figo had gained great respect from those wounded soldiers.

Zhang Tie was told that this guy was a surgeon before. Hillman

was playing chess with the coxswain. At this moment, Figo and Hillman were the most popular guys on the airship.

When Zhang Tie was eating food, Michel stealthily ran towards here and whispered to Zhang Tie, "Boss, I know where's the code case of the airship. Do you want to see what's inside?"

Zhang Tie almost sprayed out a mouth of soup...

"F*ck, what the hell are they?"

After hearing Michel's words, Abu also smiled in a bashful way, "Hmm, after observing their certificates these days, I found that it was very easy to counterfeit them!"

Zhang Tie took out of his clan plate and threw it to Abu, "Can you counterfeit this?"

After observing that plate for about half a minute, Abu replied, "I can make one with the same look. However, it's hard to completely counterfeit it. The special alloys on it could not be bought in the market. If they were replaced by other materials, they could be noticed by experts. The grains and fine holes on this plate form a very sophisticated machine three-dimensional identification code. Without the digital decoding formula, I could not pass the identification of difference engine. I need at least 40 parameters to decode this identification code. Additionally, I have to use the core programming card of the difference engine to completely backcast the digital decoding formula."

"You know difference engine?" Zhang Tie glanced at that half-balded guy.

"Doesn't a pig slaughter know how to polish a knife?"

"I forgot to ask you. What was your job before?" Zhang Tie asked the counterfeiter.

"Boss, I was a keypunch operator of a difference engine!"

"A keypunch operator?"

Abu explained for 10 minutes. After finding that Zhang Tie didn't understand what he said, he just looked at Zhang Tie with a helpless expression.

Zhang Tie didn't ask him anymore. He could understand the principle of abacus; however, he was completely confused about the steam calculator which was composed of numerous gears.

However, Zhang Tie also confirmed one thing, these guys were very useful.

...

In the later days, Zhang Tie kept cultivating quietly in his cabin. Fortunately, this airship didn't encounter any attack on the way because of its great threat or its better route in the air. As a result, Zhang Tie failed to meet his desire for having one more trouble-reappearance fruit in the travel by trying the glider on the airship.

After entering his 3rd meditation for some time, Zhang Tie felt the All-Spirits Pagoda suddenly started radiating countless golden light in his mind, among which, the shadows of various insects and beasts started to appear on the second storey of the pagoda. Zhang Tie realized that he had activated the second storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda.

Zhang Tie started to inject spiritual energy from the top of the pagoda. An octahedron-shaped Great Wilderness seal slowly formed into the second storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda.

Zhang Tie became thrilled, "Is this the Great Wilderness Seal that could manipulate all the LV 1 living beings?"

After forming all the 5 Great Wilderness Seals on the second storey, Zhang Tie felt a bit tired because of lack of spiritual energy.

Zhang Tie poured in a vial of all-purpose medicament as he heard someone knocking at his door.

"We're arriving at Huaiyuan Prefecture..."

Chapter 538: Family Members (I)

Being in the northernmost of Huaiyuan Prefecture, Taian City was adjacent to Shunjiang City of Lan Clan of Jinyun Country. After the 3rd holy war broke out, the entire Taian City became the northernmost military town of Huaiyuan Palace. Most of troops that left Huaiyuan Palace had to pass Taian City, not to mention airship troops. Now, Huaiyuan Palace set its airship base in Taian City. The airship No. 086 landed on a busy large-scaled airship port.

The airship arrived at noon while the sun was hanging high above head. Zhang Tie waited until all the wounded soldiers were carried away. The wounded soldiers bid farewell to Figo. When Hillman left, the coxswain even gifted him a box of collected chess. Because of the two guys, those airship crew's looked towards Zhang Tie while turning milder.

"Brat, remember what you said. Go back to the 1st theater of operations to kill wing demons. Don't be coward if you're a man."

Zhang Tie turned around and found that strong sergeant first class who talked with him a few days ago was shouting towards him while exposing his head out of the safety fence of the deck and waving his fist.

Zhang Tie smiled as he waved his hand towards this guy.

Soon after he passed the hatch door at the bottom of the airship was Zhang Tie stunned.

"Little Fruit..." Zhang Tie's mom rushed to him at once and embraced Zhang Tie. At the same time, she burst out into tears. After half a minute, she separated from Zhang Tie. Like checking a good, she checked Zhang Tie's body from head to toe. She even let Zhang Tie turn around. After that, she stopped sobbing, "It's good to see you safe...it's good to see you safe..."

Zhang Tie's eyes also turned red. When his mom rushed to him and embraced him, he genuinely sensed how his parents were concerned about him during the past 3 years.

His dad also came here. Wiping off his tears, he patted Zhang Tie's shoulders, "Remember to usually...usually send a message to us when you go out next time in case of your mom's concern!"

Zhang Tie wiped off his tears. He just nodded, "I know...this time...it's my mistake. I should not have made you and mom worried about me for such a long time!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie looked at his elder brother, who looked more mature and dignified than that when Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Prefecture. Zhang Yang had kept a mustache. On his side were standing some people. Zhang Tie's eldest sister-in-law Huizhen, who was holding a strong 4-5 years old kid in her right hand and a 2-3 years old little girl in her left hand. Both kids were adorable.

Besides the eldest sister-in-law were two women, both of whom looked like fair ladies and were more beautiful and dignified than the eldest sister-in-law. One of the two women was holding a 2-3 years old boy. The other woman who looked a bit plump was cradling a half-year old baby. Zhang Tie found that they were all similar to his elder brother.

"What a great elder brother!" Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside.

Besides more family members, Zhang Tie found everybody was wearing better, especially his three elder sisters-in-law, who looked noble. It seemed that their living standards had been greatly improved. After a couple of years, Zhang Tie's parents looked even better than before due to the effect of all-purpose medicament. They didn't look old at all. Furthermore, their cheeks were rosy. This made Zhang Tie reassured.

"Cheng'an, do you remember your uncle? Call uncle together

with your younger sister!" Wang Huizhen, the eldest sister-in-law touched the head of that 4-5 years old boy while telling him to hold the hand of the little girl on his side. Both kids then called Zhang Tie uncle in a naive voice with curious black eyes.

Zhang Tie then squatted as he touched their head and kissed their tender faces. Being not accustomed to that, the little girl was so scared by Zhang Tie's kiss as she directly hid behind Zhang Tie's mom, "Grandma, grandma..." all the family members then laughed about that...

"Shiyun, Huayin. Come out to greet Zhang Tie!" Zhang Tie's elder brother coughed, telling the two women on his side to greet his younger brother.

Zhang Tie stood up very officially, "Nice to see you, elder sisters-in-law!"

Zhang Yang then introduced the two women to Zhang Tie. The second sister-in-law's son was Zhang Chengxu, who's Zhang Yang's second son while the third sister-in-law's son was Zhang Chengze, who was just 5 months old. The eldest sister-in-law's daughter was Zhang Shiyu. That was to say, Zhang Tie's elder brother already had 3 wives, 3 sons and 1 daughter.

"That's awesome, elder brother. I have some nephews and nieces now. Since I came back in a hurry this time, I've not prepared any gifts for my nephews and nieces. How about this uncle bringing you some gifts next time?" Zhang Tie pinched the petite face of Zhang Chengxu.

"Thanks, uncle..." Zhang Chengxu replied as his mom that is Zhang Tie's second sister-in-law revealed a smile.

"Who are they?" Zhang Yang looked at Hillman and the other three guys on Zhang Tie's side.

"These are my subordinates. Elder brother, arrange someone to lead them to Jinwu Castle and settle them down there!" after

saying that to Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie said something to Hillman and the other three guys. After that, they were taken away by a subordinate of Zhang Yang by a car being not far from here.

"Let's talk inside home!" after they all recognized with each other, Zhang Tie's dad suggested on one side as all the others nodded.

"Let's go back home then?" Zhang Yang looked at Zhang Tie.

"Fine. Let's talk inside home. Chengze and the other kids are too young to stand such a heavy wind!" Zhang Tie also nodded, "Oh, how did you come here, elder brother?"

"By airship. Our home has already moved to Yiyang City!" saying this, all of them started to walk in one direction.

Right dozens of meters away from here, there was a very luxurious and beautiful streamlined medium-sized manned airship. After boarding on the airship, Zhang Tie found that this airship was much more comfortable than that he could imagine. There were servicemen, babysitters of Zhang Yang's kids and their bodyguards. It seemed that Zhang Tie's parents and eldest sister-in-law had been used to this living style. Zhang Tie was also amazed by the bodyguards' levels. 3 of the bodyguards were LV 9, 2 of them were LV 10. The level of the rest one was unpredictable as a 50-odd years old man whose existence could almost not be sensed.

They just sat on the cozy sofa in the passenger cabin and chatted for free.

"These bodyguards were employed through special channel when Jinwu Corporation reached a certain scale. They are all members of Zhang Clan from Huaiyuan Palace!" Seeing Zhang Tie glancing at them, Zhang Yang whispered to Zhang Tie.

"Jinwu Corporation?"

"I recruited a team of guards last year. Our firm also developed.

Therefore, our Jinwu Firm promoted to Jinwu Corporation!"

Zhang Tie nodded, "Elder brother is really an insightful person. I've predicted about the fast expansion of Jinwu firm with the business of all-purpose medicament."

"Tell me about you. Where have you been these couple of years? Don't you know how much your mom was worried about you?" Zhang Tie's dad glared at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie scratched his head as he didn't know how to explain to his parents.

"Put down your hands. The moment you scratch your head, it means you're telling a lie. That's a bad habit that you've formed since you were young. I know you well!" Zhang Tie's dad put it straightforwardly.

Under the curious looks of three elder sisters-in-law, Zhang Tie revealed an embarrassed smile as he put his hands on the knees, "Erm...actually, I was cultivating in the wild these years. As it was remote, I didn't even know that the 3rd holy war had broken out until recently."

Zhang Tie expressed his experience in a honest way.

"Cultivate? You're just a teenager. To cultivate what? Tell me, have you been LV 6? Don't think that you papa could be easily cheated by your nonsense!" Zhang Tie's dad condemned him.

"Dad, I'm LV 9 now!" Zhang Tie replied honestly.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, both Zhang Tie's dad and his elder brother were shocked.

"What?" Zhang Tie's dad thought he heard it wrong.

"LV 9! As I've already promoted to LV 9, I returned to an inhabited place and found that the holy war had broken out. I've not encountered any dangers these couple of years although I've not returned home. Don't worry about me, dad and mom!" Zhang

Tie comforted his parents. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Tie's mom looked much more relaxed.

"Then why did you come back by the war airship of Huaiyuan Palace?"

"As demon disasters exist everywhere, I could only come back through Huaiyuan Palace's airship in the Selnes Theater of Operations!"

"Well, it's okay, it's good to see my son back. Don't always talk with him so seriously. We're not interrogating a criminal!" Zhang Tie's mom urged. Zhang Tie's dad then became silent.

Meanwhile, Zhang Tie's mom cradled Zhang Shiyu, who was climbing on the ground, onto her knees as she revealed a benign look, "Little fruit, you're almost 20 years old. I will find a girl to marry you this time. You have to learn from your elder brother and give birth to some kids for the sake of the domestic undertakings. The domestic undertaking is growing too large. Your dad and I are even a bit afraid about that. As long as you have more babies, your dad and I will be reassured..."

Chapter 539: The Best Wish

When Zhang Tie's mom spoke, all the family members focused on Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie immediately felt a great stress. Especially facing his parents' desiring eyes, Zhang Tie didn't know what to say at all.

"Get married and give birth to a baby?" To be honest, Zhang Tie had thought about this before. However, it was still too early to consider it now.

"Don't worry, mom. I promise you that I will give birth to more grandsons than my elder brother. You and dad are my idols. As you and dad fell in love freely, you can not force me to accept a stranger. I will also choose a free love and bravely elope with my beloved one. Am I right, dad?" Zhang Tie looked at his dad with a grin.

"Of course, at that time..." the moment Zhang Tie's dad became excited and wanted to say something with a proud look did he become frustrated and smirk under the sharp gaze of Zhang Tie's mom.

Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law all giggled while covering their mouth with hand...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's casual look, Zhang Tie's mom sighed...

Zhang Yang hurriedly shifted the topic as he pointed at the layout inside the airship, "Zhang Tie, guess where was this airship produced?"

Zhang Tie looked at it for a while before replying, "It looks nice, is there anything special with it?"

"Do you remember that small airship manufacturing company where our dad worked in Jinhai City?"

"Argh, is this airship produced by that company?"

"Yes!" Zhang Yang revealed a smile, "Two years ago, I bought that company at the cost of over 400,000 gold coins. Now, that company has changed its name into Jinwu Airship Manufacturing Company. Dad became the boss of that company. That is to say, this airship was produced by ourselves. Its type sea swallow was even named by dad. Its endurance could not match large-scale airship. However, It's suitable to medium and short-range flight within 2000 kms. As it's smaller and faster than the fury-level airship produced in Huaiyuan Prefecture, it has good market sales!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his elder brother had the same thought as him. Previously, he had thought about purchasing that airship manufacturing company so as to please his dad and himself.

After Zhang Yang finished his words, Zhang Tie picked himself up from the cozy seat and took a visit around the airship. To be honest, this airship was really not bad. Its design and craftsmanship could reach middle and upper class. Additionally, it could move fast. It seemed that they had made it with heart.

"How much does such an airship cost?" Zhang Tie asked Zhang Yang.

"About 14,000 gold coins for an average one. It could be customized and decorated according to the demands of customers!"

"Can we match it with weapons?"

"There's only a small steam ballista in the airship! As it is for civil use, it's not matched with too many weapons; however, it could be extended with some weapon positions. As war demands were considered in advance, additional weapon positions had been left on the power package!" Zhang Tie's dad started to introduce this airship for Zhang Tie with full of excitement ahead of Zhang Yang. Seeing their dad being that spirited, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang exchanged glances with each other before grinning at the same

time—a man should have an undertaking so as to bring spice to his life.

...

It took them about 3 hours from Taian City to Yiyang City. After coming back to Yiyang City, Zhang Tie saw more airships in the sky than that a couple of years ago. At this moment, Huaiyuan Prefecture had not been influenced by the holy war; instead, it became more prosperous.

Being far away from demons disaster and being adjacent to the ocean, Yiyang City was the most important traffic hub in the entire Waii Sub-Continent. This place was also the trading center of the continents. From here, people could leave Waii Sub-Continent. With the surging population brought by war and the relevant developed trading and manufacturing, Yiyang City became more magnificent and grand.

The airship of Zhang Tie's family members didn't land in the airship port in Yiyang City; instead, it landed in a magnificent manor of Yiyang City.

After getting off the airship, Zhang Tie took a deep breath at the sight of those servants and babysitters who became busy because of the arrival of the airship and that faintly luxurious and grand building behind the woods.

"Let's go, we always keep your room clean. When you're outside, our mom would clean up your room each week and wait for you to come back!"

The whole manor covered more than 26000 square meters, which was twice that of Zhang's old mansion in Jinhai City. The qi field of this manor was much greater than that of Zhang's old mansion. Of course, this manor in Yiyang City was much more valuable and magnificent than that in Jinhai City.

At the sight of this place, Zhang Tie had understood his elder

brother's intention——just for the face of their dad.

Being followed by a lot of servants, Zhang Tie's family members arrived at the front of that building. Before that round pool outside the front door of the building, Zhang Tie caught sight of Miss Daina when a current spread over Zhang Tie's body from his spine, causing him quiver all over for a second.

Miss Daina was still that beautiful with brown hair and blue eyes. Her hair was shorter than before, yet she looked more womanly. Wearing a decent azury female western uniform, she was squatting in front of the pool and applauding towards Zhang Cheng'an and the other kids. With a hurrah, those kids ran towards Miss Daina.

"Miss Daina is now the private teacher employed by us!" Zhang Tie's elder brother threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie before explaining to him, "With the help of all-purpose medicament, his elder brother has been completely cured two years ago. He's now working for Jinwu Corporation!"

Miss Daina stood up as she looked at Zhang Tie with a smile while holding two kids. This scene was like a beautiful picture in Zhang Tie's eyes. After burying his thought in mind, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he walked over there, "Miss Daina..."

"I always wanted to extend my sincere thanks to you. But I had no chance. Although I didn't have your message these years, I believed that you were safe!" Miss Daina watched Zhang Tie.

Watching the blue mountain, Zhang Tie felt that his mind became pure, "Ha...ha...Miss Daina has taught two generations of Zhang family. That's your greatest thanks to us. I find that Cheng'an and Shiyu like you so much!"

"Actually it's a bit relaxed to teach kids. I'm also happy to stay with them!"

"Miss Daina meant I was naughty at school..."

Miss Daina replied with a smile...

...

Before supper, Miss Daina completed today's task and intended to leave. Zhang Tie accompanied her to the outside of the manor.

Walking on the shadowy path, they chatted for a short while at the beginning; however, they both became silent after a while.

They just walked and didn't know what to say.

After a long while, Miss Daina broke the silence, "Zhang Tie, thank you..."

"It's my pleasure, teacher. To transfer you out of Blackhot City is the most meaningful thing that I've done since I was born!"

"You knew that holy war was going to break out at that time?"

"Yes!"

Miss Daina became silent once again. After a few more steps, she suddenly looked at Zhang Tie and asked, "Before you came back to Blackhot City, you didn't know about doctor Bionne, right? Doctor Bionne told me that it was you who taught him to say that."

After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie watched Miss Daina, "Yes!"

They then stopped at the same time, Daina watched Zhang Tie with a sophisticated look. It was Zhang Tie's first time to watch Miss Daina with an unprecedented brave look. He could almost hear his own heart beats.

"Miss Daina...I...am already LV 9!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Miss Daina became a bit amazed. While blinking her eyes, she smiled as she hugged Zhang Tie and kissed his forehead slightly, "Promise me, be my best student, okay? I've met my beloved man in this city. I want to get married. If not, I will be really old. I'm always waiting for this chance to tell you about this!"

The kiss almost made Zhang Tie fly; however, her following

words made Zhang Tie hear something breaking in his heart.

After being silent for a few seconds...

"Ha...ha, I'm kidding. How come I become a bloody-scorpion fighter..." Zhang Tie burst out laughter at once with a cynical look. He even made a grimace towards Miss Daina, "All the students at school said that your appointment was fake. It seems that they were right. But I win a kiss at least. I'm so happy to know that you will get married, Miss Daina. That guy must be handsome!"

"Hmm, he's a handsome doctor. He's also considerate!" Miss Daina also smiled.

"Pitifully, I have to leave Huaiyuan Prefecture in a few days. Otherwise, I'd have definitely stayed to attend your wedding ceremony!"

"Do you still want to leave?"

"Hmm, I will go back to Selnes Theater of Operations..." Zhang Tie shrugged.

...

After having the driver of the manor send Miss Daina away, Zhang Tie just stood still outside the gate of the manor and seeing her off like a concrete sculpture.

A few minutes' gaze was like a couple of years for Zhang Tie. During this period, Zhang Tie understood that many nice things in one's life could not be gained!

If you got it, you would be happy; if you lost it, you would grow up.

No matter whether it was happiness or growth, it would be a wish!

"I'm not the God. The world would not circle around me. Try your best, man!"

Zhang Tie forcefully rubbed his face, making it as red as his eyes.

He wanted his tears back in his eyes. He then took a deep breath and forced a smile before returning to the manor.

"My parents are still waiting for me to eat supper."

...

Chapter 540: The Fruit of Plunder

Zhang Tie had not eaten supper with his family members for three years. His parents were very happy. The kids were running around the table, making a very boisterous atmosphere. No matter what, those elder sisters-in-law were at least kind with each other superficially. Therefore, they all had a happy meal.

After supper, Zhang Tie's eldest sister-in-law asked Zhang Tie about the current situation of Blackhot City. After hearing that Blackhot City had been deserted by Norman Empire due to demons disaster and all the residents had moved out of the city, she was shocked very much.

Even his dad and mom sighed for that.

When the eldest sister-in-law asked Zhang Tie about the situation in Blackhot city, the other two sisters-in-law only sat aside and listened to their talk. Eldest sister-in-law looked as same as before while the 2nd and the 3rd elder sisters-in-law smiled. Zhang Tie could sense the subtle relationship between three women.

The eldest sister-in-law's family background was very common. Her parents opened a tailor's store. The 2nd and the 3rd wives of Zhang Yang both originated from rich and powerful clans. Zhang Tie's 2nd elder sister-in-law came from an influential clan of Jinhai City, which ran a big ocean fishing company. Because they had business dealings with Jinwu Corporation, Lu Shiyun married Zhang Yang through the introduction of their family members.

Although the eldest sister-in-law and the 3rd elder sister-in-law shared the same surname Wang, their families were completely different from each other. The 3rd elder sister-in-law came from Shude Palace of Wang Clan, one of the 6 top clans in Jinyun Country. Although she was not very noble in Wang Clan, she belonged to the direct line of descent of Wang Clan. Since she was young, she had received a good education and had a broad vision.

Her father and brothers were all working as officers in Tianxi City, where the awarded prefecture of Wang Clan belonged to.

In such a case, Zhang Tie's eldest sister-in-law had a sense of crisis. She needed to seek for a chance to consolidate her position in Zhang Yang's family. Zhang Tie could understand it. Besides, he even coordinated with her very well. Zhang Tie always respected this very virtuous eldest sister-in-law who had been following his elder brother since in Blackhot City.

After chatting with each other for a while, as it was too late, Zhang Yang asked his wives and kids to go to bed first. Zhang Tie's parents knew that Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang had a lot to talk with each other after having separated for a couple of years. Therefore, they went to bed too.

Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang then came to Zhang Yang's study room from the parlor.

After entering Zhang Yang's study room, at the sight of the thick carpet and the rows of books on the book shelves, Zhang Tie nodded inside, "That's what a home should look like."

Zhang Tie casually threw himself onto the cozy sofa. Zhang Yang made two cups of tea and sat on Zhang Tie side as he passed one cup to Zhang Tie.

The special, dense fragrance and the glazed liquid in the tea cup were familiar to Zhang Tie, which reminded Zhang Tie of many things at once.

"Top Wild Spring from Eastern Continent!"

"You know that?" Zhang Yang glanced at Zhang Tie with an amazing look before letting out a sigh, "It seems that you lived well in the outside these years!"

"I drunk it once in the clan senior's room!" Zhang Tie smiled. He then added two cubes of sugar from the sugar cup into the tea cup and slightly stirred up.

"It's my first time to see the best drinking method of top Wild Spring! I will also have a try!" watching Zhang Tie's movement, Zhang Yang burst out into laughter as he also added two cubes of sugar into the tea cup. Zhang Tie also burst out into laughter. He finally could enjoy adding sugar into top Wild Spring tea water at home after 4 years.

What was progress? This was progress! The small cup of tea water indicated the power and social position of Zhang Clan.

"I know you have a lot of questions to ask. Go ahead. I will talk after you..." after drinking a mouth of sweet Wild Spring tea water, Zhang Tie's elder brother smacked his lip as he watched Zhang Tie.

"Where are those people that I brought here from Blackhot City?"

"After being told that you were not back together with them, I dispatched some powerhouses to pick you up in Blackhot City. When they arrived, they heard the news that Master Abyan was assassinated. His castle disappeared. Nobody knew what happened. Even you were lost. Closely after that, the holy war broke out. Those people waited for you in Huaiyuan Prefecture for one year. They were not used to living here; mainly because of language problem. Finally, many of them thought you were dead or could not stay in Huaiyuan Prefecture after encountering some accident; therefore, I sent them away from Waii Sub-Continent!"

"Where were they?"

"Eastern Continent!"

After being told that those guys of God Blessing Association and those girls of Rose Association had gone to Eastern Continent, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh inside. "That's good. They could at least live a steady life. Perhaps some of them thought that they would not see me again. I could only seek for a chance to explain it to them.

Zhang Tie knew that when he would see those girls of Rose

Association in the future, most of them would have their own families. The absurd experience between him and them would come to an end.

Waving his head, Zhang Tie forced a smile. "What a special day! It seems that all the familiar female came to bid farewell to me for the bygones today, including Miss Daina and those girls of Rose Association. My elder brother has increasingly more wives; however, I don't even have one. I'm afraid that I might not have a chance to see those girls of Rose Association anymore. I could only hope for them to live a happy life after leaving this continent."

Watching Zhang Tie's bitter smile, Zhang Yang also smiled, "Hoho, easy; actually, besides Miss Daina who stayed here for his younger brother's treatment, three women are still staying in Huaiyuan Prefecture who said that they would wait for you to come back."

"Three?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he felt something strange.

"Hmm, Linda, Beverly and Fiona. When I went to pick you up, I planned to take all of them; but considering our parents' feelings, I didn't notice them. You can give them a surprise!"

"Where are they?"

"Right in Yiyang City. They learnt Chinese very fast. They even opened a clothing store which has a good business. They are living together and looking after each other. I've already sent Beverly and Fiona's family members to the Eastern Continent and have people help them settle down there." after saying this, Zhang Yang even patted Zhang Tie's shoulders, "Hmm, these women are not bad!"

Zhang Tie drew in a deep breath as he controlled his impulse to find them. After that, Zhang Tie asked another question, "What about other people. Are they used to the language of Eastern Continent? I'm afraid that many of them couldn't speak Chinese. Is it okay to have them sent to Eastern Continent?"

Zhang Yang replied with a smile, "The size of the Eastern Continent is thousands times that of Waii Sub-Continent. Although it is predominated by Chinese, on the border of Eastern Continent, there are also some agglomerations of minorities who speak Hebrew. Each minority would have millions of people. Therefore, they would not have problem in communication over there."

After hearing Zhang Yang's words, Zhang Tie found that besides reading a travel note written by a foreigner about Eastern Continent when in Blackhot City, he knew very little about Eastern Continent. Therefore, he felt a bit shameful about that.

"How's Eastern Continent?" can you talk with me about that, elder brother. To be shameful, as a Chinese, I only know a bit about that continent." Zhang Tie asked.

"Fine. I started to know about Eastern Continent in business these years as I touched more and more people over there. Let me talk with you about that!" Zhang Yang slightly raised his head with a gleaming look, "There's only one country predominated by Chinese in the entire Eastern Continent, which is called Taixia. The country is very prosperous. It has numerous Chinese people and vacant territory. It has 9 divine provinces, 36 upper provinces, 72 greater provinces and numerous medium-and small-sized provinces and prefectures. It's the most prosperous land of human civilization, the ruling center of Taixia and the sacred land of Chinese. It's called Xuanyuan Hill. It was said that Xuanyuan Hill was the sacred item of the far-ancient Chinese and the jewelry that Chinese excavated from the underground world after the Catastrophe."

"Argh? Isn't Xuanyuan Hill a place? Then why was it excavated from the underground world?"

"Xuanyuan Hill is both a place and is excavated from the underground world. I've not seen it. However, I was told that Xuanyuan Hill was a huge mysterious cube, whose length, width

and height was about 100 km respectively. Its greater part is still buried underground!"

Zhang Tie became dumbfounded, "What about the Eastern Continent now? Are they still fighting?"

"The flames of war have not reached the Eastern Continent. If it reached the center of human civilization, Waii Sub-Continent had long been burned into ashes by demons. We would not be sitting and drinking tea here anymore."

Zhang Tie nodded. "Although the Waii Sub-Continent has been covered with flames of war, given its geographical position and its power on the human side, it is just the beginning of the holy war."

However, this had already brought Zhang Tie a great stress. He became a bit worried about the future; especially after witnessing the power of demon corps, Zhang Tie was clear that Waii Sub-Continent could not stand too long in this holy war. It was already 3 years since the beginning of the holy war; however, 1/4 of the territory of Waii Sub-Continent had collapsed. Numerous people had been killed. All the countries on the Waii Sub-Continent were ruined. Who knew what it would be here after 10 years. Zhang Tie was even not sure if humans could sustain 10 years here.

Zhang Tie then told Zhang Yang what he had witnessed in Selnes Theater of Operations and his judgment about the holy war. After that, he watched his elder brother seriously, "If our foundation could not be established here in the future, Waii Sub-Continent would completely collapse sooner or later. Therefore, from now on, elder brother, I hope you to prepare for moving our home to Eastern Continent as soon as possible. We need to take our parents, my elder sisters-in-law and the kids away from here. We have to lose some money for the future of our family!"

"Of course, I know. I've already started to prepare for this a couple of years ago. We have made more than 10 million gold coins by selling all-purpose medicament these years. Plus other incomes,

we can restart our business wherever we go!"

"It's too good if you think that way, elder brother. As long as we are alive, we can make ten more times, even 100 times more!"

"I find you are much more confident than before!"

"Haha, no kidding, elder brother. You've doubled the population of our family these years. After two decades, when those kids have babies, our family would be great!" Zhang Tie joked.

Zhang Yang glared at Zhang Tie, "Don't talk nonsense. If not dad and mom worried about you, I wouldn't have so many kids! Have you seen that our mom didn't smile until being surrounded by those kids? She was transferring her attention; otherwise, the moment she thought about you, she would drop tears silently!"

Zhang Tie finally knew why his elder brother gave birth to babies so crazily these years.

"This is an accident. I promise this will not happen again!" Zhang Tie explained with a bashful look.

After picking himself up, Zhang Yang took out of a silver box from a drawer and put it in front of Zhang Tie.

"What's this?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Take a look at it!"

Zhang Tie opened it and saw two fluorescent diamond crystal columns being wrapped with a rune metal structure. Each of them were in the size of three fingers in a bundle. They looked like an hourglass, "Argh, twin mirror crystals..."

"Since you disappeared, I've started to prepare this item. Later on, I got one set from Eastern Continent through Long Wind Corporation. This set is of top quality among long-distance communication equipment. It's very small. Although being rare, it's not sophisticated in use. You should take this and learn how to use it when you are free. Later on, no matter how far you will

walk, you can be in touch with me at any time. Give me a message when you're free for the sake of mom's concern!"

This item could only be available for regimental commander even in Norman Empire's Army. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that his elder brother could fetch one for him. Zhang Tie was not used to luxurious items. However, this time, as long as he could contact with his family members using it, Zhang Tie felt very worthwhile to have it.

Taking up one of them, Zhang Tie found it was linked with a firm metal chain for the sake of convenience. Zhang Tie took a look at it before wearing it over his neck. Zhang Yang wore the other one over his own neck.

"How much does this pair of item cost?"

"This pair of small top-quality item costs more than 300,000 gold coins. They could only be bought from Eastern Continent!" Zhang Yang then took out a brochure from the box and handed it to Zhang Tie, "Here's the user manual of this device. Take a look at it. We'd better make a set of key information or code so as to identify our real status when in communication!"

In the following 10 minutes, the two brothers solved this problem through a careful negotiation.

With the means that they could use to communicate with each other in the future, both Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang let out a deep sigh.

"I remember there was a communication device called mobile among numerous long-distance communication means before the Catastrophe. It only costed a bit more than 10 silver coins to have a mobile. But that mobile could not match my necklace which costs 200,000 gold coins." Zhang Tie thought.

"Oh, elder brother, what's your level now?"

"I'm just LV 6. I don't have a good talent like you. Additionally, I

put most of my efforts on business these years; therefore, I didn't spend too much time on cultivation. When money will not work, this home has to rely on you!" Zhang Yang told Zhang Tie seriously.

If the holy war didn't break out, Zhang Yang, as a LV 6 fighter, could serve as a small military officer in the city guards of Blackhot City. If so, he could already make his family members proud and satisfied. However, at this moment, an average LV 6 fighter who had not even awakened his ancestral bloodline was far away from showing off his talent and making others reassured.

Zhang Tie knew that his elder brother must have another more powerful and more respectable status besides being a rich businessman so that Zhang family could tide over difficulties even if Zhang Tie was dead. Their family required a double shelter.

This was the main reason for Zhang Tie to come back to Huaiyuan Prefecture this time.

"Elder brother. As you have gifted me a long-distance crystal; turn around and guess what I will gift you!" Zhang Tie joked.

"Haha, don't joke with me. If you have something, I must have seen it!" Zhang Yang thought that Zhang Tie was kidding him like what he always did in the childhood.

"I will perform a magic. Turn around. Elder brother. Let me keep a bit mystery!"

Watching Zhang Tie's serious look, Zhang Yang then turned around as he warned Zhang Tie, "I tell you, younger brother. Don't scare me with a toad or snake like what you usually did. We're adults now, don't play such a naive game anymore!"

After hearing that, Zhang Tie grinned. After his elder brother turned around, Zhang Tie used some spiritual energy and moved out a crystal red fruit which was much smaller than an apple out of Castle of Black Iron——Fruit of Plunder! That was a reward from

the small tree after Zhang Tie killed Abyan.

Zhang Tie held the fruit which was a bit bigger than a plum. A mysterious luster seemed flowing in the fruit, which was eye-catching.

"It's okay, elder brother. The magic is over. You can turn around!" Zhang Tie told Zhang Yang calmly.

Zhang Yang turned around and caught sight of that crystal fruit which radiated a mysterious splendor. He became stunned at once. Closely after that, he grinned, "Ho, you've hidden something with you. Is this your gift? It looks beautiful. Is it made of crystal?"

"This fruit is eatable; I especially brought it here for you, elder brother!"

"Eatable? It's a fruit? What a strange fruit! It's my first time to see such a fruit. Did you find it in the wild? Is it poisonous?" Zhang Yang joked as he held it and looked at it with a calm look.

"Elder brother. Can you promise me two things before eating it. Firstly, don't ask me where did I get this fruit. I don't want to lie to you. It's very complex. It's not a good thing if you know it. Let's take it as my secret. Secondly, don't tell anyone else that you've eaten this fruit!" Zhang Tie watched Zhang Yang with a solemn look.

"Ha, that sounds serious. Well, I promise you. I will not ask where did you get it or tell anyone else about this, even your elder sisters-in-law, how about that?" Zhang Yang still remained very relaxed.

Zhang Tie nodded very seriously.

"Then, let me taste it?"

"You'd better engulf it, including all of its juice!"

Zhang Yang replied with a smile as he didn't doubt that Zhang Tie gave him something bad to eat. Therefore, he engulfed it at

once. After chewing it for a while, he swallowed it directly.

"Hmm, it tastes a bit weird..." Zhang Yang smacked his lips, "It's a bit similar too..."

Before Zhang Yang finished his words, he had widely opened his eyes as he started to quiver all over. Right then, he felt numerous knowledge surged in his mind. Like he knew all of them, they became clear all of a sudden, including names of herbal medicines and plants, features and drug properties of animals, manufacturing methods of weird liquids and powders, familiar operating processes, genes sequences, formulas, manufacturing methods of medicament and pills, treatment of diseases and assessment criteria of pharmacists...

Zhang Yang panted and rolled up his eyes as his eyelids quivered. He cramped once and remained in this state for about an hour before he gradually recovered his composure...

He watched Zhang Tie, then his hands with a shocking look. Then, he muttered in an unimaginable and quivering tone, "Argh...what's wrong with me...I now...feel...I'm already an orange-robe pharmacist. I know so many knowledge, I've learnt manufacturing methods of so many medicament at once..."

Zhang Tie took a deep breath, "Elder brother, you're indeed an orange-robe pharmacist now. You've already grasped all the knowledge that should be mastered by an orange-robe pharmacist. With this status, you will be able to protect our home now..."

"That fruit..." Zhang Yang widely opened his eyes and gazed at Zhang Tie. It seemed that he had understood something at once. Zhang Yang felt that all the surprises that he had accumulated since he was born could not match 1/100 of his current surprise.

Zhang Tie slightly nodded.

Zhang Yang was too shocked to utter a word. He wanted to ask where did Zhang Tie get that fruit; however, he stopped at once as

he remembered what he had promised to Zhang Tie.

The room became quiet for 3 minutes before Zhang Yang recovered his breath. As he was intense, his voice became a bit trembling and hoarse, "After a few days...I will complete the authentication of herbal medicine apprentice in the Pharmacists Trade Union. This will not arouse others' attention..."

"Hmm, pass the authentication of herbal medicine apprentice first; before leaving here, you'd better promote to knapsack herbal medicine master. After that, you should complete the the authentication of orange-robe pharmacist within 10 years. You're already a top talent in others' eyes if you could make that in 10 years. It's not good if you promote too fast!" Zhang Tie explained calmly.

...

2 hours later, when it was later than 11 pm in the midnight, Zhang Tie stood in front of a door on the 3rd floor of an apartment building in a safe high-end community and consecutively pressed the doorbell for three times.

"Fiona, go take a look who's that..." a familiar, tender voice drifted out of the door.

"Argh, who knows..." with a sound caused by slippers moving on the floor, Zhang Tie heard, "That's too boring. We've been tired for the entire day. I've not cooked well my strawberry jam yet..."

Hearing the footsteps drawing nearer, Zhang Tie moved one step back. He then laid out his clothes and revealed a smile in front of the peephole on the door.

After a few seconds, the peephole was opened from inside, closely after a crashing sound caused by a plate falling on the floor.

"Argh, Fiona, what's wrong?" Linda's voice drifted from the inside of the room as she walked towards the door.

The door was opened. Fiona in pajamas burst out into tears. She

immediately threw herself into Zhang Tie's chest as she hugged Zhang Tie tightly. When Linda caught sight of Zhang Tie, she also became stunned at once. Covering his mouth with hand, she didn't believe what she saw as her tears also poured out at once.

...

Chapter 541: Family Members (II)

For many people, time was as cruel as a butcher's knife as it would turn beautiful things into vulgar and meaningful things into insipid. In front of such a butcher's knife, any beauties would grow old and any heroes would fade away.

However, sometimes this butcher's knife also become a brew master. Being fermented by this master, those raw or sweet fruits turned into fragrant, mellow and intoxicating drinks.

Zhang Tie was drunk over night.

The next morning, when Linda, Fiona and Beverly woke up on the bed in a sluggish and slightly fatigued manner, they found nobody else was on their bed. They almost thought that was just a dream. That was too illusory. At the same time, they heard chopping sound from the kitchen and faint aroma of dishes and food. This indicated that it was not a dream. It was real. That man truly came back.

Linda was the eldest and the most bashful one among them. When she woke up and saw Fiona and Beverly's looks, she hurriedly covered her body with the bed sheet and jumped off the bed rapidly to take up the night skirt and put it on.

Fiona and Beverly exchanged glances with each other and giggled. After that, they also got up and put on a skirt casually before walking towards the kitchen together.

When they came to the kitchen, they saw Zhang Tie cutting potatoes into shreds and boiling a fish in the kitchen. The whole kitchen was filled with the aroma of the fish soup.

Watching Zhang Tie cooking in the kitchen, all the three women felt something strange.

Linda walked there first and tightly hugged Zhang Tie's waist from his back. At the same time, she put her face on Zhang Tie's

back as she closed her eyes. It seemed that she was not sure that was the real Zhang Tie if she did not do this.

Zhang Tie turned around and slightly kissed Linda's forehead. He then revealed a smile, "We can have breakfast in a few minutes. I've not cooked for many years. Hopefully, my cooking skills didn't regress! After breakfast, you can take me to visit your store. After that, go back home with me!"

"Argh, go back to your home?" Fiona was amazed.

"Of course. Mom was still worried that I did not have a girlfriend when I came back home yesterday. I will take you back home today!" Zhang Tie said in a cynical tone.

All the 3 women got Zhang Tie's meaning from his reply. Fiona and Beverly exclaimed at once. Closely after that, they turned around and cleansed themselves. Zhang Tie felt Linda's body turned slightly stiff.

"Do...do I need to go there? You can just take Fiona and Beverly there..." Linda asked Zhang Tie in a low voice behind his back, "I've already been very satisfied about this!"

After cutting the last potato into shreds, Zhang Tie stopped and washed his hands. After drying his hands with towel, he turned around and pinched Linda's jaw, raising her beautiful and womanly face as he looked in her beautiful eyes, "What are you worried about?"

Linda dodged from Zhang Tie's eyes in a bashful way, "I...I'm much elder than you. According to Chinese customs, I...am a bit improper...!"

"What are you talking about? In Chinese, if woman is 3 years elder than the man, she would bring a gold brick to the man. As you are over 10 years elder than me, you can bring me a gold mountain for sure. I have to marry a mature woman like you. You can bring me wealth and manage the household well." saying this,

Zhang Tie put his arm around Linda's waist as he rubbed her plump and soft butts with her silk night skirt in between. After that, he bit Linda's ear slightly, "Woman with such butts could easily deliver a baby. You have plump breasts too. As my mom has sharp eyes, she will know that you can deliver a healthy baby at the sight of your figure. She will like you for sure. Come on, go cleanse yourself and put on a set of beautiful clothes. Baby..."

Hearing the word 'baby', Linda instantly blushed, even her ears turned red. It seemed that this word reminded her of many other things. After glancing at Zhang Tie bashfully, Linda nodded as her face shined. After slightly kissing Zhang Tie, she went to cleanse up and change her clothes.

...

Actually, when women dressed up themselves seriously, it would take them a lot of time. After half an hour, Zhang Tie had already cooked the breakfast; however, the three women were still in the room. Therefore, Zhang Tie entered their room.

"Beverly, does this purple skirt fit me? and the shoes? I like this pair of brown high-heeled shoes. However, the deep color of this pair of shoes seemed not matching the deep color of this skirt...It's a bit depressing..." Fiona was standing in front of a dressing mirror in only bra and underwear while holding a skirt in front of her.

The bed was covered with various clothes. All the wardrobes had been opened. Beverly was delving in her casket for something, "Argh, have you seen my crescent earrings that I bought last time?"

"It might be in the 2nd drawer of your dressing table!" Linda replied as she had already put on a red elegant skintight longuette, which displayed all of her beautiful lines. She was sitting on the chair and putting on her silk stockings.

Zhang Tie really enjoyed watching the three women changing clothes in the room. After a couple of years, Fiona and Beverly looked more beautiful and maturer. They had already become fully

mature at the age of about 20. Due to the effect of all-purpose medicament, Linda didn't look elder than that three years ago at all. Additionally, benefited from all-purpose medicament, they looked healthy and brilliant inside and outside—brighter eyes, shinier hair, whiter and finer skin without any defects, which even faintly brightened up.

Zhang Tie's elder brother indeed understood Zhang Tie. Even though Zhang Tie was not in Huaiyuan Prefecture these years, Zhang Yang still supplied enough all-purpose medicament, which was favored by noble women across Blackson Humans Corridor as the sacred medicine of youth, to the three women.

Beverly was the first one who found Zhang Tie was leaning against the door and watching them with gleaming eyes, "Argh, don't peep at us!"

"Haha, what are you afraid of? I've already seen everything on your bodies!" Zhang Tie grinned.

"Argh, go out...go out..."

Zhang Tie was then driven out of the room by Linda. Standing out of the door, Zhang Tie patted his head as he shouted, "The breakfast is ready..."

"We will come soon..."

After another half an hour, when Zhang Tie almost cooked the breakfast for the second time did the three women walk out of the room. At the sight of the three women, Zhang Tie's eyes brightened up. How elegant, beautiful, alluring, energetic, mature and charming women!

...

In the afternoon, Zhang Tie visited their store in a quiet and tidy avenue of Yiyang City. All the surrounding stores and buildings looked high-end and stylish. The clothing store covered more than 200 square meters, which was much larger than that Linda opened

in Blackhot city. However, the commodities were almost the same. Besides the 3 of them, they also employed four saleswomen and two highly skilled tailors and garment makers.

They sold middle-grade female clothes that they designed and processed themselves. Their business was neither too good nor too bad. Besides maintaining the expenditure of running the store, they could survive themselves. What was more was that they found some spice in this business.

Zhang Tie felt it was not bad. Not each woman in this world was like Lan Yunxi, who had brilliant look and overwhelming fighting skills than men; or Olina, who was extremely shrewd and could establish a great undertaking out of nothing. If all women were like them then men would be nothing but a birth machine.

Perhaps this thought was a bit radical which might even arouse the ridicule of those feminists, able women or tough girls. However, Zhang Tie really thought that an average woman only needed to dress herself well, maintain health and take care of her man and her family. If possible, she could also have her own undertaking. Women didn't need to think that much.

After visiting where they worked and knowing how they lived and killed time these years, Zhang Tie took them back home.

The three women became a bit intense. Beverly visited Zhang Tie's home and had already met Zhang Tie's parents in Blackhot City as Zhang Tie's "student". However, her status was different this time.

Additionally, Zhang Tie took three women back home at once. Thankfully, Zhang Tie had already informed his elder brother and his parents in advance. Therefore, Zhang Tie's parents were not surprised at the sight of Beverly, Linda and Fiona.

Instead, Zhang Tie's three elder sisters-in-law were shocked by the three women brought by Zhang Tie like seeing aliens. Whereas, Zhang Tie was shameless, who didn't care about their

response at all.

Since Zhang Tie's mom caught of Zhang Tie making love with those girls of Rose Association in Blackhot City, she had been prepared well for Zhang Tie's absurd action in some aspect.

After opening a clothing store and living in Huaiyuan Prefecture for three years, Beverly, Linda and Fiona could speak Chinese very fluently. They spoke Chinese fluently when they talked with Zhang Tie's parents, which satisfied Zhang Tie's parents very much.

What was out of the imagination of Zhang Tie's parents was the age of Linda, who was even elder than Zhang Tie's three elder sisters-in-law. However, Linda's kindness and beautiful look left a very good impression to Zhang Tie's parents; especially after being told that the three women had waited for Zhang Tie for three years in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Zhang Tie's parents didn't know what to say.

This evening, the three women slept in Zhang Tie's home...

...

"Are you serious?" Zhang Yang asked Zhang Tie when there were only two of the them in the room.

"How many three years do a woman have in their most beautiful age? I don't want to pursue for any ground-breaking love. I felt that these women had spent too much for me." Zhang Tie looked a bit moved while watching his elder brother, "I only feel that such women deserve my serious treatment. I feel very relaxed to be with them. I don't need to disguise at all. When we move to Taixia, we need to take them; as long as they don't live up to me, I will not live up to them!"

Zhang Yang watched Zhang Tie as he nodded seriously.

...

In the midnight, Zhang Tie got up and slipped towards their

rooms. Unexpectedly, all of their bed rooms were locked from inside. Even Zhang Tie called their name from outside the door, he still received no response. Finally, Zhang Tie could only return without any achievement. After cultivating for a few hours, he fell asleep.

...

The next morning, when Zhang's family members ate breakfast together with Linda, Beverly and Fiona, Zhang Tie's mom, who was drinking porridge, suddenly asked Zhang Tie, "Was there a stray cat in our home last night? I heard a stray cat scratching doors!"

After hearing her words, Zhang Tie's three elder sisters-in-law lowered their heads as they tried to not laugh out. Linda, Beverly and Fiona also glanced at Zhang Tie bashfully. However, Zhang Tie disguised in front of his mom, "Argh, is that true? I didn't notice that!"

"Of course it is!" before Zhang Tie's mom replied, Cheng'an, who slept with his grandma last night had raised his innocent face and said seriously, "Grandma said there was a big stray cat scratching doors last night. She said the cat was going to steal little golden fish. The big stray cat is too bad..."

"Pfttt..." Zhang Yang almost sprayed out a mouth of porridge after hearing his son's words. He hurriedly covered his mouth with napkin.

"Don't talk nonsense, Cheng'an. Hurry, eat breakfast..." Zhang Tie's eldest sister-in-law hurriedly fed her son although trying her best to not laugh out.

"I'm not talking nonsense. If you don't believe me, you can ask my uncle. My uncle must have heard that last night!" Cheng'an urged innocently before watching Zhang Tie, "Uncle, dad said you were great. Can you help me catch that big stray cat. I don't want it to steal our golden fish!"

Zhang Tie frowned as he nodded solemnly, "Trust me, Cheng'an, this uncle will beat its butt for you!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the people at the table burst out into laughter...

...

After having breakfast, the steward arrived. Lowering his body, he glanced at Zhang Tie and whispered something in Zhang Yang's ear.

"What's up?" Zhang Tie asked Zhang Yang.

"There's a deacon from Clansmen Pavilion and a vehicle. He wants to take you to Clansmen Pavilion..." Zhang Yang slightly frowned...

The moment they heard that the deacon from Clansmen Pavilion arrived did Zhang Tie's parents change their face. Deacons from Clansmen Pavilion were big figures. If not major events, they would not come here themselves...

"Argh, is there something wrong?" Zhang Tie's dad became worried as he was a bit afraid about the Clansmen Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace due to his elopement with his wife.

"It's fine, dad. I will take a look out there!" Zhang Tie cleaned his mouth as he stood up.

"Me too!" Zhang Yang also stood up and walked out of the dining room with Zhang Tie...

In the parlor of Zhang Tie's home, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang caught sight of that deacon from Clansmen Pavilion. That was a 50-odd years old man in a black robe who looked very dignified.

When Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang entered, that man glanced at Zhang Yang immediately before focusing on Zhang Tie. Like seeing a jewelry, he kept gazing at Zhang Tie, making Zhang Tie a bit scared.

"F*ck, is he a psycho?" Zhang Tie swore inside...

"Are you Zhang Tie?" that man asked.

"Yes! Who are you?"

"I'm Zhang Jin, a deacon from Clansmen!" saying this, the man took out of his clan identification plate and showed it to Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang.

After checking the plate, Zhang Yang nodded at Zhang Tie.

"May I know your intention here?"

"The clan elders want to see you..."

"The clan elders want to see me?" Zhang Tie was stunned at once...

Chapter 542: The Immortal Bloodline

The moment Zhang Tie thought that he had to visit the Clansmen Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace each time he returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture did he feel something strange.

"Why would the clan elders want to meet me this time?" Zhang Tie was always puzzled about this on the way. "If it was because of all-purpose medicament, the one who should contact me would be Long Wind Corporation, instead of the deacon from Clansmen Pavilion. It must be related to internal affairs of Zhang Clan. But why do these Clan elders focus on me, a small figure?"

Zhang Tie was confused. He inquired about the deacon, who just told him that he would know about it in Clansmen Pavilion.

"Is it because of Lan Yunxi? Are those Clan elders warning me that an ugly toad should not dream about eating the flesh of a beautiful wild swan? How gossipy they are! Lan Yunxi's dad has not even cared about that!" Zhang Tie thought.

"Oh, I've not yet seen Count Long Wind, the head of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace!"

As deacon Zhang said that the Clan elders only wanted to see Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang didn't come with Zhang Tie. Even if he came together with Zhang Tie, it was still useless. In Clansmen Pavilion, which gathered so many Clan powerhouses, nobody could stir up a trouble.

It was the same Clansmen Pavilion and the same lofty, solemn and old-fashioned building. At the sight of the people inside the vehicle, the soldiers outside the gate of Clansmen Pavilion just let them in without even checking it. After getting off the vehicle, deacon Zhang took Zhang Tie around the Clansmen Pavilion and finally arrived at a relatively tranquil independent small building which was called 'Ancestral Bloodline Pavilion'. Deacon Zhang didn't enter it; instead, he just bowed outside the small building.

"Clan elders, Zhang Tie is here!"

"Good, let him in!" a calm voice drifted from the inside of the small building. Deacon Zhang glanced at Zhang Tie and implied that Zhang Tie could enter. After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie walked in.

The special fragrance of burning sandalwood incenses filled the small building, bringing Zhang Tie a sense of tranquility. Zhang Tie recovered his composure at once.

After crossing the threshold, detouring the screen wall facing the gate and passing a courtyard, Zhang Tie saw some gray-haired old men sitting in a hall. Zhang Tie did not dare to show any disrespect to the Clan elders who had high positions in Huaiyuan Palace and unpredictable fighting strength .

Only after being glanced by them, Zhang Tie had felt being seen through. When they looked at him, the All-Spirits Pagoda in Zhang Tie's mind slightly vibrated while the surrounding spiritual energy gathered around it and covered the All-Spirits Pagoda at once. Zhang Tie had not imagined that All-Spirits Pagoda could have such a marvelous ability. As a result, Zhang Tie's heart slightly pounded.

"Zhang Tie, a descendant of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace pays a formal visit to Clan elders!" Zhang Tie bowed towards them. After seeing clearly the look of that Clan elder in the main seat, Zhang Tie knelt down in front of that elder and kowtowed three times loudly, "Zhang Tie wishes sixth grandpa good health on behalf of my father Zhang Ping!"

Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa was the most influential figure of Huaiyuan Palace in Golden Sea City. He was the head of Clansmen Pavilion. When Zhang Tie's family arrived at Huaiyuan Prefecture, without Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa's help, Zhang Tie's father might still be in the prison. Therefore, Zhang Tie's family appreciated this extremely dignified man very much.

Watching Zhang Tie's performance, all the Clan elders exchanged glances with each other before nodding slightly.

"Get up!" Sixth grandpa replied with a tender voice as he slightly raised his hand. Zhang Tie then felt an invisible, irresistible and tender strength lifting himself from his feet.

"Is this a knight's strength?" Zhang Tie was shocked. He wondered when could he have such a great strength.

Zhang Tie just stood there respectfully as he was confused why the Clan elders wanted to see him. He just behaved like a kid with a good discipline silently.

"What do you think, brother Murray?" A Clan elder asked Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa on his side with a smile.

"Just follow the rules in case of loopholes!" Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa said calmly.

"Fine!" that Clan elder nodded as he glanced at this side. Two deacons in robe then walked forward. One of them was carrying a very solemn box. After the other Clan elders nodded, the other deacon opened the box and took out of a crystal which was longer than 30 cm and thicker than 6 cm. The crystal was glittering blurred brilliance. In the middle of the crystal was a rolling drop of red blood.

When this item was taken out, Zhang Tie, who was close to it, instantly felt his qi and blood all over being restless.

The deacon held the crystal carefully in his hand before erecting the sharp topmost part of the crystal and telling Zhang Tie, "Put your finger on the top of the bloodline crystal and pierce it!"

As it was not proper to ask why at this moment, finding that these Clan elders were not malicious about him, Zhang Tie put his finger on the sharpest point of the crystal. After slightly pressing his finger, Zhang Tie forced a drop of fresh blood to flow off his finger. Under Zhang Tie's gaze, the drop of fresh blood started to

penetrate into the crystal like how plants rooted in the ground. At the same time, the fresh blood in the crystal also started to be restless. When the two drops of blood touched, the entire crystal glittered red brilliance for over 10 seconds.

"Your excellency, Clan elders, based on the test of the bloodline crystal, his fresh blood resonates the fresh blood of Lord Huaiyuan and glitters brilliance without causing any abnormal phenomena, this man is indeed the descendant of Lord Huaiyuan instead of being disguised by shadow demon!" that deacon being responsible for testing Zhang Tie with the crystal reported.

After hearing this report, Zhang Tie immediately oozed cold sweat all over. He finally understood the purpose of this test. If he could still transform into a shadow demon due to the genes of shadow demons, Zhang Tie did not dare to imagine how the crystal would look.

All the Clan elders nodded. The two deacons then put the crystal back into the box and moved back.

Finding that Zhang Tie slightly changed his face, Zhang Murray and Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa revealed a smile, "Take easy. This is just a rule of Huaiyuan Palace. Almost each apprentice of Huaiyuan Palace entering here has to pass this test. Each Clan has such means to maintain the purity of its Clan bloodline and the reliance of its key figures in case of being violated by outsiders and demons. We're not especially targeting at you."

After hearing the words of his sixth grandpa, Zhang Tie recovered his composure.

"Please forgive me. I've not heard about such a testing method before. Therefore, I was just a bit shocked!" Zhang Tie replied.

"Hmm, take easy. We want to know something about you!" Zhang Murray opened his mouth.

"What do you want to know, your excellency? I will answer

honestly!"

"Did you awaken an ancestral bloodline several weeks ago?"

Zhang Tie knew that Huaiyuan Palace was able to know which apprentice of Zhang Clan had awakened an ancestral bloodline recently. Therefore, he was not amazed by this question. After knowing their purpose, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh at once.

"Yes, I've awakened an ancestral bloodline several weeks ago!"

"What's the function of this bloodline?" before Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa continued, another Clan elder couldn't wait to ask.

"Erm..." Zhang Tie became a bit hesitated as he looked around.

"Don't worry. Nobody else is allowed to enter Ancestral Bloodline Pavilion without our consent. Additionally, there are lots of rune settings here. Nobody could hear your words besides the Clan elders in the hall!" that Clan elder added.

Zhang Tie thought for a while and replied, "How to say, I can transform my look with this ancestral bloodline!"

"Argh, transform your look?" the moment they heard this did the three Clan elders become excited. The quick-tempered one who asked Zhang Tie instantly picked himself up. After glancing at the other two elders, he took a deep breath and sat down.

Zhang Tie didn't know why they were so thrilled.

"Can you show us your ancestral bloodline?" Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa asked kindly.

"Yes, I can!" after saying this, Zhang Tie started to transform his look. His hair gradually turned red; his eyes turned dark green; his skin turned as black as that of Bagdad. It took him over 10 seconds to complete his transformation. After that, Zhang Tie almost became another human race.

All the three Clan elders were shocked. The hand of the one who asked Zhang Tie even quivered on the chair.

After this look was maintained for more than 10 seconds, Zhang Tie's hair started to turn brown; his eyes turned light golden; his skin turned that of Hebrew people. Except for his height and his figure, Zhang Tie changed into another human race.

Finally, Zhang Tie recovered his original look.

"How long can you keep the two looks respectively?" Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa's voice quivered slightly.

"Erm, maybe as long as I want to keep them. I feel natural to transform my look!" Zhang Tie scratched his head.

"Hmm...how many times can you use this ability one day?" another Clan elder asked Zhang Tie while fixing his eyes on him.

"Erm, I've not tried. But I feel it's as easy as breathing. It should be limitless!" Zhang Tie replied while changing his eyes colors alternatively into red, yellow, blue and green easily.

"Immortal bloodline, immortal bloodline, unique immortal bloodline..." that Clan elder who asked Zhang Tie instantly sprung up from his chair as he raised high his hands with an extremely excited look. The other two Clan elders didn't stand up; however, they both looked spirited as their cheeks blushed...

Zhang Tie watched these Clan elders with a confused look, "It's just an ancestral bloodline, why are you so happy?"

Chapter 543: The Origin of Zhang

The excited Clan elders had not noticed Zhang Tie's confused look at all. Until Zhang Tie slightly coughed and asked "Sixth grandpa?" did the other two Clan elders take a deep breath and recovered their composure.

At this moment, Zhang Tie found that the three Clan elders were watching him like watching a gold baby being dug out of the ground, making him a bit uncomfortable.

"Ahem...ahem...did anyone else know that you've awakened this ancestral bloodline?" a Clan elder asked Zhang Tie.

"No, I've just awakened it a few days ago. I've not told others yet!"

"Don't mention it to others in case of troubles, even in Huaiyuan Palace. What you revealed today will be listed as a top secret. Less than 10 people across Huaiyuan Palace would know your secret including the Clan elders in this hall. Therefore, you need to be careful!" that Clan elder warned Zhang Tie.

Although Zhang Tie thought it was unnecessary to show off this talent, after realizing that these Clan elders were so serious, Zhang Tie became a bit surprised, "What's the reason?"

"Do you know what is immortal bloodline?" that most excited Clan elder asked Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie shook his head.

"Do you know the origin of Zhang? Have you ever thought about why the Chinese family name 张 (Zhang) is composed of '弓' and '长'?" Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa asked.

Zhang Tie became confused as he shook his head once again. Although the three questions looked simple, it was hard to answer.

"The family name '张 (Zhang)' is an influential Chinese family name. Zhang people is the direct descendant of Xuanyuan

Emperor. When gods and demons fought, the ancestor of Zhang clan produced the most powerful crossbow in the world with his great strength and made a meritorious deed by sweeping all the demons. In order to commend him, Xuanyuan Emperor awarded him with the family name Zhang (张), namely the one who was excel at using crossbow in the war between gods and demons. Our family name contains the honor of our bloodline!"

Speaking of the history of the family name Zhang, Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa and the other two Clan elders all looked proud and honorable.

"Is this why the most powerful ancestral bloodline of Huaiyuan Palace is related to archery and rune equipment methods?" Zhang Tie was shocked inside as he understood it at once.

"Right!" Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa nodded, "Besides Zhang, Xuanyuan Emperor had many other descendants with distinctive abilities, who also made meritorious deeds in the war between gods and demons. Therefore, numerous ancestral bloodlines were inherited. After Xuanyuan Emperor, many Chinese emperors were also awarded new surnames. It could be said that each Chinese surname has its brilliant history and contained at least one powerful ancestral bloodline at the beginning! For instance, Ouye(欧冶) Clan is famous for its sword casting skill; Dong(董) Clan originated from Quanlong(拳龙), who was good at taming dragons in the war between gods and demons. Therefore, Dong Clan's animal taming skill is unrivaled."

Zhang Tie became stunned. "There are so many Chinese surnames. If one surname contains one ancestral bloodline, there will be over one thousand Chinese ancestral bloodlines." Zhang Tie asked.

Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa nodded, "Right, actually more than that. Honestly, we cannot count them even in three days. The knowledge about various ancestral bloodlines of surnames was very extensive and profound. It's called the Learning about

Ancestral Bloodlines. It's a secret knowledge which could not be easily touched by commoners! Ancestral bloodlines are closely related to the prosperity and fate of a powerful clan. It has to be treated seriously."

"What is immortal bloodline then?"

"There are numerous Chinese ancestral bloodlines which could be divided into eight ranks; heaven, earth, black, yellow, space, time, flood and wilderness. Your precise throwing ability belongs to wilderness. Immortal bloodline is out of the above eight ranks, which has not appeared before!"

"Erm, I feel this immortal bloodline is useless. Its effect could be achieved by common disguising medicament!" Zhang Tie shrugged.

"You know what?" the most excited Clan elder glared at Zhang Tie like watching an idiot who treated gold as common pyrite, "How can you match the effect of this immortal bloodline with that of external forces? No matter how much do you make with your all-purpose medicament, it's nothing to do with Zhang Clan. Zhang Clan will not interfere with your business even if you are the top rich in the country. However, do you think your immortal bloodline is just your private affair? Those clans without awakening ancestral bloodlines would finally disappear in the long river course of history no matter how brilliant they were. However, if an immortal bloodline is awakened in a clan, it indicates that this clan has a very excellent bloodline. The clan with an immortal bloodline might awaken a unique ancestral bloodline and have a distinctive ability. This would bring a great cohesiveness and influence to the clan. The clan's social status would rise. Do you think that could be brought by disguising medicament at the cost of a few gold coins? You will know about it sooner or later that the true valuable things could not be measured by money!"

Zhang Tie hurriedly behaved modestly.

After giving Zhang Tie a lesson, that elder turned around and asked Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa, "Brother Murray, has Zhang Tie gotten married?"

"Not yet!" touching his gray mustache, Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa smiled.

"How about arranging him to leave Huaiyuan Prefecture for the Eastern Continent with the next batch of clan apprentices?" another Clan elder suggested.

"Hmm, not bad. It's really a bit dangerous to for him to stay here." Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa nodded.

"When he arrives there, we'd better arrange his marriage. He needs to give birth to babies as soon as possible!"

"That's reasonable!"

Zhang Tie finally could not wait to interrupt them as his heart pounded.

"Hmm, your excellency...I want to say something!"

"Hahahaha, don't worry. We know that. The Clan will not interfere with your marriage too much. You will have a great autonomy. The Clan will provide you with some proper girls. You can choose at your will. After that, the Clan will host a wedding ceremony for you. It is obligatory for you to do that for the Clan. Additionally, the Clan will not stop you from marrying other women. You can marry as many as possible if you like." Zhang Tie's sixth grandpa explained.

After hearing his words, the other two Clan elders laughed.

"Erm...I...I cannot leave Waii Sub-Continent now!" Zhang Tie plucked up his courage.

"You cannot leave Waii Sub-Continent?" all the Clan elders frowned slightly, "Why?"

"I've promised others...to not leave Waii Sub-Continent until it's

completely collapsed!" Zhang Tie gritted his teeth.

"Fart!" the most excited Clan elder smacked onto the table in front of him, crushing it into powders at once...

The atmosphere in the hall froze immediately...

...

Chapter 544: Being Imprisoned

After leaving the Ancestral Bloodline Pavilion, Zhang Tie was escorted into an underground prison of Clansmen Pavilion by two serious deacons.

The two deacons looked as stiff as a piece of iron in front of Zhang Tie who dared to disobey the order of Clan elders. Zhang Tie had thought about refusing by force; however, given his current ability, he would definitely struggle in vain if he dared to stir up trouble in Clansmen Pavilion. Therefore, he just entered the prison with a glassy-eyed look.

"Bang..." after the door of the prison was shut up, Zhang Tie was left alone inside.

Until then did Zhang Tie start to look around this prison. It was a small room which covered over 10 square meters. The walls were made of caesious stones. There was a plank bed, a toilet bowl and a water pipe. There was a row of pores on a wall which were used to ventilate. As some sunlight penetrated through the pores, the room didn't look too dim. However, it was impossible for Zhang Tie to escape unless he turned into a mouse.

Every nation has its own laws and every family has its own rules. Huaiyuan Palace was now executing family rules on Zhang Tie. Being capricious and disobeyed the order of Clan elders at the cost of the benefit of the Clan. Zhang Tie knew that he had made a very severe crime. However, he really could not make it if he was forced to leave Waii Sub-Continent. Because Zhang Tie had promised those people in the Ice and Snow Wilderness who had a great hope on him that as long as one Slav fighter was still defending the Ice and Snow Wilderness, he would not abandon them.

What irritated the Clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace most was Zhang Tie's stubbornness. Two Clan elders were so infuriated that they directly left with a flick of their sleeves. Even Zhang Tie's

sixth grandpa's face turned green. Finally, he had to have Zhang Tie imprisoned.

If not considering Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie felt that Huaiyuan Palace truly had considered well for him. The Clan's arrangement was human friendly. As long as he agreed to leave Waii Sub-Continent, he would immediately have women, money, safety and an influential status in Zhang Clan. This was a special 'Panda-type' treatment given by the Clan after he awakened the immortal bloodline. Commoners could not even have it. Therefore, Zhang Tie became capricious in the eyes of the Clan elders.

"Should I make a choice?" at this moment, Zhang Tie could only make a choice between his promise and the expectation of Zhang Clan.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could have such trouble by awakening the bloodline called transformation.

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile as he knew that his relationship with Huaiyuan Palace would break for sure if he didn't compromise this time. When in Heavens Cold City, his relationship with Huaiyuan Palace had become stiff, this time, he would be marginalized for sure in Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie didn't know whether he could remedy this relationship. Of course, Zhang Tie didn't think that Huaiyuan Palace could implement any mandatory measures on him. Perhaps these Clan elders were a bit old-fashioned and prioritized the interest of Zhang Clan too much, they should have a high morality. They would not treat him too bad.

After standing there for a short while, Zhang Tie threw himself onto the plank bed and started to cultivate. It would be too boring if he just stared at the icy walls.

As Zhang Tie didn't know how long would he be imprisoned there, he could only kill time by cultivating.

Shadow Demon Backroom——Mental Arithmetic——the 3rd floor of All-Spirits Pagoda——as Zhang Tie didn't know how to light surging points after LV 9, he could only cultivate himself between the three sides alternatively.

The narrow cell was too quiet. Nobody came to see him. Each day, only a cold steamed bun was put inside through the window of the door, by which Zhang Tie could keep alive and identify how many days have passed.

When the 7th cold steamed bun was put inside through the window, Zhang Tie had recited the sutra of the 3rd floor of All-Spirits Pagoda for over 400,000 times. Zhang Tie could still stand less than 6 seconds in the Shadow Demon Backroom; however, it was about 0.2 second longer than before. Through practicing mental arithmetic, Zhang Tie also improved his spiritual energy a bit.

When Zhang Tie thought that he would get his 8th steam bun here, the door was opened with a crashing sound. Someone entered. Zhang Tie opened his eyes and saw his 6th grandpa was standing in front of him. Zhang Tie hurriedly got off the bed and bowed towards him.

"Have you thought through these days?" Zhang Tie's 6th grandpa asked Zhang Tie with a calm voice.

"I'm sorry, 6th grandpa, I could not accept the Clan's arrangement. I will not leave Waii Sub-Continent until the continent collapse. I know what does this mean. I also understand the hope and concern from the Clan. Whereas, each one has his own persistence. I think that even Lord Huaiyuan doesn't expect that one of his descendants eats his words!" Zhang Tie replied frankly.

Zhang Tie's 6th grandpa moved his eyebrows as he glanced at Zhang Tie with a sophisticated look. He then sighed, "Alright, I know, you can leave now!"

Zhang Tie was so happy that he had not imagined that he could pass it so easily, "Thank you, 6th grandpa!"

"You're welcome. Now that you have your own choice, you should shoulder the corresponding responsibilities. Before leaving this place, hand out your clan identification plate. Hidden Dragon Palace doesn't fit you anymore. A person who has awakened his ancestral bloodline yet doesn't wish to contribute to the Clan is not suitable to stay in Hidden Dragon Palace anymore!"

Zhang Tie felt sad inside. He knew that Zhang Clan was driving him out of Hidden Dragon Palace. From today on, he would be nobody but a commoner. His future in Huaiyuan Palace also came to an end.

In this world, you could not make a choice at no price.

Zhang Tie took out his clan identification plate of Huaiyuan Palace and submitted it to his 6th grandpa. Holding it, his 6th grandpa forcefully pinched it into ashes.

"Take care of yourself. Do not do evil things in the name of Huaiyuan Palace. Otherwise, I will let you know the taste of home rules!" after warning Zhang Tie, he left.

"Let's go!" a scowling deacon of Clansmen Pavilion watched Zhang Tie, implying him to leave.

...

After walking out of the gate of the Clansmen Pavilion, Zhang Tie felt a bit dazzling by the sunlight. Therefore, he put his hand on his eyes for a few seconds. After being adapted to the sunlight, Zhang Tie looked back at the Clansmen Pavilion. He knew that he probably had no chance to come here again in the future while many Zhang commoners would have no chance to visit here in their whole lives.

Zhang Yang strode towards Zhang Tie and tightly hugged him. He then checked Zhang Tie from his head to toe, "Is everything

okay?"

"It's okay!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "How do you know that I would be released today?"

"Let's talk about it in the vehicle!" Zhang Tie muffled.

Zhang Tie nodded before getting on the vehicle.

Sitting in the back seats of the sedan and watching the suddenly strange streets and the crowd on the streets, Zhang Tie told his elder brother about his current situation. He was told that his elder brother ordered Jinwu Castle to suspend its cooperation with Long Wind Corporation during these days when he was imprisoned. During the 7 days, Jinwu Castle didn't provide even one vial of all-purpose medication for Long Wind Corporation.

Hearing his elder brother's words, Zhang Tie felt so moved inside. He knew that his elder brother had to bear a great risk and stress by delivering such an order. If not his elder brother's decisive attitude in the outside, this event could not be solved so easily.

"As long as you're safe, the undertaking is nothing serious. Our family could even survive that tough living environment in Blackhot City, I don't think that we cannot survive without all-purpose medicament. The worst scenario is to sell rice brew again! To the final analysis, Zhang Clan need all-purpose medicament more than us."

Zhang Yang said this with a smile like talking something trivial. After talking about that, the two brothers looked at each other with a big smile. Compared to the lives of their family members, this small frustration was nothing serious at all.

"Oh, if the Clan drives you out of Hidden Dragon Palace, will it pose any influence to you?"

"Although I've been LV 9, I don't know how to light surging points in the next. Previously I planned to exchange for some

secret knowledge about promoting from LV 9 to LV 10 in the Hidden Dragon Palace, I also wanted to inquire something about cultivation. After being driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace, I have to abandon this plan!" Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile.

"Can we buy the secret knowledge about cultivation after LV 9?" Zhang Yang asked.

"It's hard!" Zhang Tie shook his head, "I attended some auctions; yet I didn't see any cultivation methods after LV 9. It seems to be a taboo, which is strongly restrictive in humans. Nobody dare to break it easily!"

Zhang Tie believed that Zhang Yuan, his master, could help him. However, he had completely lost his contact with that old man. Zhao Yuan might have thought that he was dead. It was as difficult as finding a needle in the ocean if Zhang Tie wanted to find such a superb powerhouse.

Seeing his elder brother frowning, Zhang Tie laughed, "Elder brother, don't worry about this, it's just a small problem. I have other methods. It was just a matter of a few days!"

Zhang Tie remembered the Huge Bear Tribe, the most powerful tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. He didn't believe that a tribe that could cultivate knights didn't have the cultivation methods after LV 9. His puzzle would be solved as long as he returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Zhang Yang relieved his frown, "These days, dad and mom were worried about you so much. After knowing that you're safe, they will be reassured!"

"Elder brother, you'd better arrange our family members to leave out of here as soon as possible!"

"I'm preparing for that. We will leave out of here in 2 months!"

"When you arrive at the Eastern Continent, remember to find Donder and root in a proper place. The world is growing more and

more chaotic. Our parents are old; they could not stand too much tortures anymore. My nieces and nephews are still young. They need a good growth environment. My elder sisters-in-law could not stand too many difficulties in the chaotic world. We have to take care of them!"

Zhang Yang nodded, "I know, don't worry. I will treat it seriously!"

"Oh, elder brother. I have to trouble you to purchase an airship for me. After a few days, I will go to the 1st theater of operations. It'd better be a fury-level battle airship. It should be matched with some gliders and a batch of experienced volunteers who would like to fight demons in the 1st theater of operations with me!"

"When do you need them?"

"The faster the better!"

Zhang Yang forcefully nodded, "No problem!"

...

Zhang Tie had actually a very sophisticated mood at this moment. He didn't know whether he should feel lucky or worried about being driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace. He felt lucky because he got rid of the restriction of the Clan and felt relaxed; on the other hand, he started to worry about something.

He was worried more about Lan Yunxi than the cultivation methods after LV 9 or his future. After being driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie was clear that the development of the relationship between him and Lan Yunxi would be greatly impeded by Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie wondered what Lan Yunxi would think after knowing that he was driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace.

A deserted young man who was driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace wanted to marry a princess of Huaiyuan Palace. If this really happened, many people's faces would be slapped. Of course those

people didn't want this event to happen.

...

Watching the vehicle returning to home, Zhang Tie hid his concern as he revealed a sunny smile in case of his parents' concern.

When Zhang Tie was imprisoned, Linda, Beverly and Fiona just accompanied his mom at home which made his mom a bit reassured. After this event, Zhang Tie found that the relationship between Linda, Beverly and Fiona and his family members furthered developed. It seemed that he didn't need to worry about something anymore.

When Zhang Tie returned home, the entire home was filled with joy again.

...

When it was late, they all went to bed. After returning to his bedroom, Zhang Tie took a bath and slept on the bed in dark. He just waited there silently with his hands crossed on his head, leaving his door unlocked. The door could be opened from outside by slightly pressing the handle.

In less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie heard a low sound as someone pushed open the door and slipped in. It was Fiona.

After entering in the bedroom, Fiona immediately drilled into Zhang Tie's quilt with a grin.

In another 10 more minutes, Beverly slipped in. Being quiet, she fumbled all the way to Zhang Tie's bed before drilling in his quilt too, where an exclamation sounded when the two women saw each other...

What a cool experience! Zhang Tie still laid on the bed with his hands crossed under his head, waiting for the arrival of the 3rd woman.

In 5-6 minutes, the door opened for the 3rd time when Linda with a faint blush slipped in with her fascinating body fragrance as a mature woman.

When the 3 women met and exclaimed in Zhang Tie's quilt in unison, Zhang Tie finally burst out into laughter...

Chapter 545: Zhang's Osmanthus Tree

On the next day, Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and their dad went to visit grandpa. They previously planned to do that on the 3rd day since Zhang Tie returned home; however, Zhang Tie was suddenly called away by Clansmen Pavilion. Therefore, they could only visit him.

As the old saying went, if one was poor, even if he was in the boisterous city, he would be ignored; however, if one was rich, even if he was in the deep mountain, he would still have frequent visits from distant relatives. Similarly, as Jinwu Company gradually developed, the relationship between Zhang Tie's family and his uncles and aunts became much better.

With a prosperous domestic undertaking and two successful sons, Zhang Tie's parents became less concerned. As a result, they got along well with Zhang Tie's uncles and aunts.

During the couple of years when Zhang Tie disappeared, the grandpa always asked about Zhang Tie and had dispatched people to Norman Empire to search Zhang Tie. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to pay a visit to him.

When they arrived at the old mansion of Zhang family, although there were fewer people compared to the last time, Zhang Tie felt a much better atmosphere in the old mansion. Not only those Zhang family members, even those servants smiled more sincerely towards Zhang Ping, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie.

Even grandpa's first wife treated Zhang Tie as her direct grandson as she pulled Zhang Tie's hands and cared about him casually. She even started to concern about Zhang Tie's marriage.

It was not proper to describe it with the word 'utilitarianism'. Because even when Zhang Tie's family returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture with an extremely poor look several years ago, these family members in the old mansion also took care of them a lot;

even though someone didn't like them, they didn't show it on their face at least.

However, as they were in the real society, if they could cooperate with each other to maintain the honor of this big family, they would share a greater energy. At the critical moment, if they could have more human relationships to use, they could always gain more respect and smiles from outsiders. Facing such an overall benefit, what happened was not important. When in emergencies, Zhang Tie's family could only rely on the family members of Zhang Tie's uncles and aunts. After all, they had ties of kinship. Some things were decisive.

Zhang Tie's elder brother managed Jinwu Corporation with the help of Zhang Tie's two uncles' family members. After these years, Zhang Yang genuinely felt that it was much easier with the help of family members.

Huaiyuan Palace was really too big for Zhang Tie, which contained complex human relationships. Zhang Tie's family only had a feeling on the relatives on the grandpa's side.

Zhang Tie's family came here in the daytime without any notice. Therefore, they just saw grandpa and his wives in the old mansion.

After a meal in the old mansion, grandpa led them in a tranquil pavilion in the backyard garden and chatted with them.

Being covered with osmanthus, this pavilion was a good place for taking rest and chatting.

Zhang Tie's dad then talked with grandpa that his family members were going to migrate to the Eastern Continent in the recent couple of months. This was also one of their targets here today. As it was a major event, they had to notice grandpa's side in advance.

After hearing Zhang Ping's words, grandpa slightly closed his eyes for awhile before opening his eyes, "It's fine. After all, Waii

Sub-Continent is a remote place. It could not match the prosperity and stability of the Eastern Continent. We need to find another way to survive ourselves. Last year, I told Zesheng to pave a way for our family in the Eastern Continent with some juniors. When you arrive at the Eastern Continent, you can contact Zesheng first. He will give you a hand. I will give you Zesheng's address after awhile. Zesheng is now in Yingzhou Province, one of the 72 major provinces in Taixia. Many years ago, Huaiyuan Palace had been rooted in Yingzhou Province. We have a city there called Huaiyuan City. All the family members could seek for shelter in Huaiyuan City."

Zesheng was one of grandpa's sons and a brother of Zhang Tie's dad, who had different mothers. Therefore, he was Zhang Tie's uncle. They had met each other last time, although not being very impressive. After being told about Huaiyuan Palace's undertaking in Yingzhou Province of Eastern Continent, Zhang Tie was shocked as he had not imagined that Huaiyuan Palace could have a private city in Eastern Continent.

Zhang Yang was also very surprised as he put it straightforwardly, "Argh, I've not imagined that Huaiyuan Palace could have a city in the Eastern Continent."

"Huaiyuan Palace originated from Zhang Clan in Taixia Country. It's nothing strange for it to have a city in Eastern Continent. In case of your fickleness, we don't reveal it to the outside. Therefore, average people don't know about that. Not only Huaiyuan Palace, even the other influential clans in Jinyun Country had their own territory in Eastern Continent. Eastern Continent is the root of all the big clans and the sacred land of Chinese. Everything here is just twigs and leaves which takes in sunshine and rain dew. When the holy war breaks out, the autumn wind blows, the fallen leaves would finally come back to its root." Grandpa signed with full moods while he made a pun.

After hearing about that fallen leaves would finally come back to

its root, Zhang Ping and his sons became confused. Grandpa watched Zhang Tie and smiled, "Life or death, it depends. If I die, my ash would also be carried back to the Eastern Continent and buried there. As a Chinese, I have to go back for my root. I've been managing shipyards for my whole life and busy working for business every day. However, I have no achievement in cultivation. Therefore, I could only live for about 100 years. I'm 70 years old now. There are 2 or 3 decades left. As you and your cousins have entered the Hidden Dragon Palace and would have a great achievement in the future and Zhang family's undertaking develops well, our family gradually looks like a big clan. We might have a shrine later on. Therefore, I will have no regrets anymore."

After hearing grandpa's words, Zhang Tie became bashful at once. He thought that grandpa would know about this sooner or later. Therefore, he'd better tell him now, "Hmm...I am not a member of Hidden Dragon Palace anymore since yesterday."

Grandpa asked Zhang Tie while slightly changing his face, "What's wrong?"

Zhang Tie briefed the reason. Additionally, he said that he had awakened another ancestral bloodline. However, he didn't tell grandpa about the concrete ability of this ancestral bloodline.

Actually, the Clan elders had considered well for Zhang Tie. Even though Zhang Tie wanted to stay in Waii Sub-Continent for some reason, the Clan elders suggested to dispatch a powerhouse to protect him. When Zhang Tie finished his thing on Waii Sub-Continent, that powerhouse would escort him back to the Eastern Continent. However, Zhang Tie finally refused this suggestion.

As long as the Zhang Clan dispatched a powerhouse to protect him, Zhang Tie's secret would be exposed. That powerhouse who was confident to take him away even when the entire Waii Sub-Continent was collapsed by demons was undoubtedly much more powerful than Zhang Tie. He probably be a battle demon or a battle spirit. In front of such a sharp person, Zhang Tie would have

no chance to play any tricks. He might be under the gaze of that person around the clock. In such a situation, he would have no chance to disappear in front of that person and enter Castle of Black Iron to eat fruits. This was a great obstacle for Zhang Tie, which even completely blocked his way of cultivation.

Additionally, as long as he returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness, more secrets would be exposed to those big figures of Huaiyuan Palace. If so, how could he interpret what he has done in Ice and Snow Wilderness such as the so-called God's manifestation and those exotic seeds? If so, he would fall into a deeper mire. Zhang Tie didn't want to expose all of his secrets to the the members of Huaiyuan Palace.

Therefore, Zhang Tie finally infuriated those Clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace...

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, grandpa didn't look disappointed like what Zhang Tie had imagined. Instead, he just watched Zhang Tie with a weird look. After a long while, he smiled casually and said, "It's okay. After all, there are so many Zhang members in Hidden Dragon Palace. The greater the Clan is, the more rules there will be. Sometimes, big clan would be too utilitarianism. As long as you're enough talented, those clan rules will be as nothing but waste papers. You can crumple them into a ball and throw them into a toilet bowl. Some people would even applaud for you. Therefore, you don't need to care about this!"

Grandpa comforted Zhang Tie with intelligent words, which shocked Zhang Tie inside. At this moment, Zhang Tie remembered Lan Yunxi as he understood it at once. "Yes. If I'm an alchemist master and as talented as my master, the conversion demon, as well as a knight who has the three-in-one power mentioned by my master, will anyone of Huaiyuan Palace dare to say that I'm not qualified to marry Lan Yunxi?"

"To the final analysis, if I'm enough powerful, all the problems and obstacles would disappear."

Zhang Tie became open-minded at once...

...

After chatting with grandpa, Zhang Tie's family left. Grandpa then started to drink tea leisurely in the pavilion. The eldest grandma took here a plate of fruits and sat besides the grandpa. She started to flap a fan for him.

Grandma felt that grandpa was very happy today through his look. Therefore, she also aroused a topic.

"It's good to know Zhang Tie is safe. He's already 20 years old. He should get married. You've met Liangying before. Her dad took her here last time. She's my granddaughter and looks beautiful and virtuous. How do you think about them? It will be great if they can get married."

Grandpa glanced at his first wife with a smile, "Don't worry about Zhang Tie. He has his own plans!"

Grandma also replied with a smile, "Well, at the sight of Zhang Tie today, I find he's different than that last time. Which one is better; Su'er or Zhang Tie in your eyes?"

"Su'er is steady and bold. As he has experience in Hidden Dragon Palace, he has both human relationship and ability. As the eldest grandson of my eldest son, he could carry forward this undertaking and have a great achievement for sure!" grandpa touched his mustache with a smile.

After hearing the comment of his husband about his grandson, grandma revealed a satisfied smile, "What about Zhang Tie?"

"Zhang Tie..." grandpa suspended for a second before watching his first wife with a solemn look, "This grandson will be the pillar of Zhang Clan for sure. After my death, he might be able to build a shrine for Zhang Clan!"

After hearing his husband's comment about Zhang Tie, grandma became shocked as she had not imagined that her husband could

give such a high confirmative comment about Zhang Tie, "Argh, how can that be?"

"Zhang Tie has been expelled out of Hidden Dragon Palace by the Clan elder yesterday!" grandpa replied calmly.

"Why do you comment about him in this way then?" grandma could understand the comment about her eldest grandson of her eldest son who was famous in Hidden Dragon Palace; however, it was out of her imagination that a person who was expelled out of Hidden Dragon Palace could gain a better comment from the grandpa.

Grandpa didn't explain. Women could not understand some domestic affairs. He just watched the grandma, "I will not tell you why. But remember, Su'er and Zhang Tie are cousins. If they treat each other kindly, it would be a happiness for Zhang Clan. The undertaking of Milky Way Shipyard belongs to us. Zhang Ping's sons are not interested in this undertaking at all. As an elder, you need to keep the family in harmony. Am I clear?"

Grandma lowered her head respectfully in front of the dignified look of grandpa, "I know."

"Hmm, go and take a rest then. I will sit here for awhile!"

Grandma then left...

Sitting in the pavilion, grandpa drank tea and watched the tall osmanthus trees which shivered their twigs and leaves in the wind. He entered meditation. Not a single young man at his 20s dared to say no to the Clan elders over hundreds of years. Even grandpa dared not do that at the age of Zhang Tie; his sons dared not do that at the age of Zhang Tie; his eldest grandson of his eldest son dared not to do that. However, Zhang Tie dared.

Zhang Tie truly had a reason to be thought highly of by the Clan as he was also bold and responsible enough to refuse the Clan's order. If grandpa could not see the potential of his grandson, he

must be blind.

"Is anyone going to establish shrine for Zhang Clan in the future? There really seems to be an [osmanthus tree](#) that could brighten up the Zhang ancestors in Zhang Tie's generation..." grandpa thought.

...

Osmanthus tree, Zhang Tie was compared to a osmanthus tree with fragrant osmanthus blossoms.

Chapter 546: Coming to Hidden Dragon Island Once Again

After leaving Zhang's old mansion, under the guidance of Zhang Ping, Zhang Tie paid visit to his elder uncle's home. As he didn't see him before, he needed to pay an official visit to him out of courtesy.

Zhang Tie's elder uncle's family lived in Xince City. Previously they had difficulties in living; with the help of Zhang Tie's family these years, their living standards had been greatly improved. Zhang Tie's mom suggested to take Zhang Tie's elder uncle's family away from Xince City to the Eastern Continent after negotiating with them.

Of course, Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang had no objection about that as it could please their mother.

The group of three ate supper at Zhang Tie's elder uncle's home. Even if they traveled by airship, when they arrived at home in Yiyang City, it was already dark.

Zhang Tie estimated that 11 days had passed since he returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture on March 15th from Selnes theater of operations. Time flew. In a wink, it was already the beginning of April.

"I have to return to the Selnes theater of operations before April; otherwise, the bet between I and those guys in the airship would become a laughing stock. I have to go back there for both Lan Yunxi and myself." Zhang Tie thought.

As Linda, Beverly and Fiona felt inconvenient to live in Zhang Tie's home for long time, they returned to the apartment which they rented on the second day since Zhang Tie returned home from Clansmen Pavilion when Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang and Zhang Ping was paying a visit to Zhang's old mansion. Of course, after

returning home from Xince City in the evening, Zhang Tie told his mom about his schedule in the next two days before going to the three women's apartment. Zhang Tie's dad and mom just pretended to not know about that.

In the apartment of the three women, Zhang Tie had fewer constraints. Of course, he was indulged in making love with them over night. Zhang Tie would like to spend more time with them during the rest days in Huaiyuan Prefecture. He didn't know how long could he spend with them after he left Huaiyuan Prefecture.

...

On the next early morning, Zhang Tie came to the wharf of Yiyang City with the three women. When they arrived there, they started to sense the influence of the holy war. Their vehicle could not move in the crowded place.

Right outside the wharf, those who queued up to purchase tickets were sleeping in simple tents on the streets. The line was miles in length. Many more people were wandering outside the wharf and were seeking for chance to leave here.

Besides Chinese, most of them were Hebrews. Many women and kids were standing on the roadside while raising all sort of brands with Chinese or Hebrew on them——

"I'd like to be a slave, only for a boat ticket"

"Please take me away, my master!"

"I will be your best servant!"

"I wish to be a slave, please take me away!"

These people were all refugees who escaped to Yiyang City due to demon disasters. Many of them were unable to purchase boat ticket to leave Waii Sub-Continent; therefore, they sold themselves as a slave for a chance to leave out of here!

After staying in Huaiyuan Prefecture for a few days, Zhang Tie

felt that Huaiyuan Prefecture became more crowded than before. Some refugees poured in. However, it was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that the wharf could be so crowded. After seeing an old woman and a 5-6 year old girl raising a board and selling themselves as slaves, Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

"Argh..." Fiona exclaimed out of scare as she drilled into Zhang Tie's chest when a wrinkled face pasted on the window and watched them who were in nice dress in the car. At the same time, she kept patting the glass. As she was so close to Fiona, her grubby brown hair scared Fiona a lot.

"Mr...Mr...please take my daughter away. As long as you take her away, you can let her do whatever you want...my daughter is very docile..." a man shouted as he drew a 13-14 year old girl to the window side forcefully, enabling Zhang Tie to see clearly that girl's face.

That girl just stared at Zhang Tie with a flurried look. At this moment, that man on her side shouted, "Tess, hurry up, say some Chinese...you've just learned it..."

However, the little girl was so scared that she could not even utter a word.

Before Zhang Tie spoke, all the windows of his vehicle had been covered with numerous faces and palms. They were shouting outside the vehicle and would not like to leave no matter how much the driver pressed the trumpet. Many people were surging over here. As the vehicle slowly moved, the man and his daughter were pushed to one side by others at once.

"Please take away my daughter..."

"Please take us away..."

"Please take me away, lord, I can do whatever you like..."

"Please take away my sisters. We can serve you on bed..."

Linda, Beverly and Fiona were so scared by this that their faces

turned pale. Holding Zhang Tie, their hands kept quivering. They had not seen such a scene before.

Zhang Tie hurriedly drew the curtains. The driver kept pressing the trumpet. At the same time, Zhang Tie saw some policemen running over here while blowing whistles and waving sticks to drive away those who stuck to the window side.

It took them half an hour to finish the 2 km's travel in the wharf. On the way, Zhang Tie found that a fat guy on the vehicle in front of his vehicle picked four women and drew them into his vehicle like picking vegetables in the market without even spending one gold coin.

Seeing this, Linda's hand became icy although holding Zhang Tie tightly. All the three women on Zhang Tie's vehicle looked bad. Zhang Tie also became a bit regretful. If he knew the current situation in the wharf, he would have chosen to go to Hidden Dragon Island by airship for the sake of convenience. Previously, he thought that the three women had not traveled by sea after arriving at Huaiyuan Prefecture, he planned to travel with them by sea. However, it was out of his imagination that the situation in the harbor could be so worse.

Zhang Tie was also greatly shocked. If it became so worse in the territory of Huaiyuan Palace, he could imagine how worse the other places in Waii Sub-Continent would be.

The vehicle parked beside a 3000-ton private luxury yacht of Zhang's family. Zhang Tie, Beverly, Fiona and Linda then got off the vehicle and boarded on the yacht.

This yacht was produced by Milky Way Shipyard. It was gifted to Zhang Yang by grandpa when Zhang Yang married Lu Shiyun, his second wife. Although it cost hundreds of thousands of gold coins, given the relationship between Zhang Tie's family and Zhang Tie's uncles and aunts, it was worthwhile.

After Zhang Tie and the three women reached the rest room on

the top of the yacht, standing on the deck outside the rest room and watching Yiyang Harbor disappearing in their eyes, the three women slowly looked better.

Linda leaned against Zhang Tie's shoulder in a tender manner, "Those people were really frightening. I wonder whether I would also look like them without you. Perhaps I would be more miserable than them. Promise me, do not leave me, okay?"

"Idiot, what are you thinking about? Even if I'm not with you, I will not let you suffer like that!" Zhang Tie kissed Linda's face.

"Those people are really poor!" Beverly also let out a slightly sigh.

"Don't think too much, we should not waste time!" Fiona said with a naive look and plump breasts, "How long will it take us from here to Hidden Dragon Island?"

"About 7 hours?" Zhang Tie answered.

"You only belong to us in the 7 hours!" Fiona yelled as she rolled her eyes and watched Linda's charming and sexy figure with a mischievous smile, "Sister Linda is still a bit shameful each night. She's not mastered some skills yet. Let Beverly and I teach you this time, how about that, Beverly..."

"Nice!" Beverly also grinned...

"Argh, now?" Linda blushed right now as she looked around shamefully.

"What are you afraid of? There are only four of us. Nobody else!" Fiona urged as she pushed Zhang Tie onto a lunge beside the swimming pool. After that, Fiona sat on Zhang Tie's lower abdomen and showed a pair of snow-white legs as she looked at Zhang Tie in a womanly way. She then bit Zhang Tie's ear as she drilled her tongue into Zhang Tie's ear, "My Lord Magical Beast. Can I borrow some of your organs as sister Linda's props in these hours?"

Zhang Tie said righteously, "No problem. Just take it. I like to

help others. You don't even have to pay if you break them."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the three women burst into out laughter's as they forgot all their sorrows...

...

7 hours later, Zhang Tie caught sight of Hidden Dragon Island...

Although a few years had passed, the Hidden Dragon Island remained unchanged.

After landing on the wharf of Hidden Dragon Island and passing by the White Dragon Town, Zhang Tie was frightened by the boisterous scene in Jinwu Castle...

Chapter 547: Encountering an Old Friend

When Zhang Tie and the three women caught sight of Jinwu Castle, it was a bit later than 3 pm. It was the most boisterous time in Hidden Dragon Island, especially in Jinwu Castle.

At the foot of Yunju Mountain, the road from Jinwu Castle to White Dragon Town was crowded with sorts of peddles on both sides. The entire road was crowded with people. The closer it was to Jinwu Castle, the more people there would be and the more advanced the commodities would be.

Zhang Tie remembered that the land covering hundreds of thousands of square meters being close to Jinwu Castle was bald when he left Hidden Dragon Island previously. However, it was now covered with buildings, hotels, shops, workshops and markets with unified styles, just like a downtown in the city.

Jinwu Castle was located in the center of those buildings like landmark. What surrounded Jinwu Castle was a beautiful fountain square.

If not the two brilliant words 'Jinwu Castle', Zhang Tie even dared not believe that this was the exact place he had been familiar with.

"Wow, I've not imagined that there's such a beautiful place in Hidden Dragon Island. I thought this was the wilderness where fighters would cultivate." Fiona exclaimed at the sight of all of this.

The three women were always living in downtown, where they could touch beautiful clothes, cosmetics, yummy food and daily commodities. However, the sorts of medicament, medicine, potions, armors, weapons, special ornaments, survival tools and items that were made of special body parts of underground demon beasts widely broaden their vision, making them feel like entering

another world.

All the three women became thrilled.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie didn't enter Jinwu Castle; instead, he just wandered through those shops and booths outside Jinwu Castle with the three women.

"Argh, what's this?" Beverly saw a string of brilliant necklace with decorative patterns as her eyes glittered at once. Fiona and Linda also stopped to look at it.

"Lady, you really have a good taste. This is the fire-dragon crystal necklace that we've just polished. It must fit you very well!" a female clerk of 16-17 years old hurriedly walked here and introduced it to the three women.

When that female clerk walked over here, Zhang Tie threw a glance at her. Her age and personality immediately reminded Zhang Tie of those junior sister apprentices who worked in Zhixing Department.

The female clerk also glanced at Zhang Tie, a 16-17 year old teenager who was embracing three foreign beauties. Additionally, Fiona, Beverly and Linda didn't look like fighters who came here for promoting their fighting skills. Very few commoners dared to come here for a travel.

After sleeping in Castle of Black Iron for three years, Zhang Tie's look remained unchanged. However, Fiona, Beverly and Linda looked maturer. Therefore, Zhang Tie looked too young compared to the three beauties on his sides. He was completely like their younger brother. Linda could even be Zhang Tie's aunt. However, all the three women behaved like Zhang Tie's lovers, creating a powerful qi field for Zhang Tie.

"Argh, what's fire-dragon crystal?" Although the three women could speak Chinese very fluently after staying in Huaiyuan Prefecture for three years, they were still strange about some

special terms.

Before that female clerk opened her mouth, Zhang Tie had already walked to their side and started to explain it to them with a smile, "This fire-dragon crystal is just a crystal formed by a special species in larva after condensation in the underground world. It's not very precious; however, the LV 8 king snake had always engulfed it. After a long time, it became fire-dragon crystal in the king snake's stomach, which is precious."

"Why would the snake engulf it?" Linda asked out of curiosity.

"King snake is a cold-blooded demon beast. Like other snakes on the ground which could drill out of dark place for sunshine so as to supply heat with them. As king snake could not get sunshine in the underground world, it would engulf this crystal. It's said that this crystal would make king snake feel warm like basking in the sun. While some people said that king snake used crystal to gather energy as a form of cultivation. After hunting the king snake, people would obtain this crystal from its stomach. With this crystal, you would feel calm. After wearing it, you would feel cool in the daytime and warm in the evening. After sensing the qi of this crystal, those insects on the ground dared not to touch the wearer at all!"

"Wow. Is it something in the body of the king snake? Why is it called dragon?"

Zhang Tie smiled, "This is a traditional Chinese culture. Some times, snake is called small dragon in Chinese. In Chinese legends, dragon could be evolved from snake!"

The three women became clear at once. Watching the three women's looks, Zhang Tie knew that they like it. Therefore, without asking the price, Zhang Tie directly told the clerk, "I want three top-class fire-dragon necklaces. Don't take out of the necklaces in the counter. I know that you always keep the good fire-dragon crystal necklaces for the insiders!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, that clerk threw another amazing glance at him before turning around to the inside of the counter and whispering something to another clerk in the shop. After that, she walked in and took out of a tray with three bloody, brilliant fire-dragon necklaces on it in half a minute.

Compared to those fire-dragon crystal necklaces in the counter, the new fire-dragon crystal necklaces looked much more advanced.

Zhang Tie directly picked up the fire-dragon crystal necklaces for the three women and then asked, "How much?"

"200 gold coins for each, 600 gold coins in total!"

Zhang Tie put his hand into his pocket and took out a gold note that was worth 1000 gold coins in Golden Roc Bank and passed it to the clerk.

That clerk carefully took over the gold note as she said, "Please wait for a second!"

"Fine!"

The clerk then asked another little girl to invite someone to authenticate the gold note from outside.

Linda, Beverly and Fiona then watched the other items in the store.

After waiting for less than 1 minute, a 30-year old man walked in. After taking over the gold note, he carefully authenticated it before nodding towards the clerk. After that, he exchanged ten gold notes for her, 100 gold coins for each before leaving.

The clerk then gave Zhang Tie four gold notes, 100 gold coins for each, which was the minimal par value of gold note. Soon after Zhang Tie took the gold notes and walked out of the store with the 3 women did they encounter a woman outside the door.

"Argh, younger sister Guo, what a coincidence..." Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he greeted that woman.

"Zhang Tie!" Guo Miaolu widely opened her eyes like seeing ghosts in the daytime.

"Hahahaha, long time no see. Junior sister Guo, you look more beautiful!"

Guo Miaolu was much taller and more plumper than that four years ago. In beautiful black female warrior's uniform, she had short hair, lifted breasts, slim waist and long legs. She looked healthy and shrewd. Guo Miaolu was the head of a group of girls four years ago; now, she looked more like an able woman, which was far from that innocent look when she was in Zhixing Department.

"Is that you?" at the sight of Zhang Tie, Guo Miaolu was really shocked, especially by the same look and his bad smile. She then stretched out her hand and pinched Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie didn't move.

"Haha, long time no see, you became much bolder. Previously, you even did not dare to touch me. Now, you dare to pinch my face. Are you falling in love with me?"

Guo Miaolu blushed at once as she hurriedly drew her hand back. She finally confirmed that he was Zhang Tie, the one who disappeared three years ago. She wanted to say something; however, after noticing the three beauties beside Zhang Tie, she swallowed what she wanted to say about the gossips and changed it right away, "D**chebag, you're still so nasty!"

Zhang Tie waved his hand, "Well, I know you all want to beat me. Just keep this chance until this evening. Sorry to trouble you, junior sister Guo, you can call all those who want to beat me in Hidden Dragon Palace. I'm waiting for you in Jinwu Castle tonight!"

"You want me to do that for you? Why not call them yourself?" Guo Miaolu glared at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie rubbed his nose with an embarrassed look, "Erm...I will tell you in the evening. In one word, I will not enter Hidden Dragon Palace now! I have to enter Jinwu Castle and have them prepare it for you..."

"Okay then!"

Zhang Tie then waved his hand towards her before taking Linda, Beverly and Fiona away. Before Fiona left, she even looked back at Guo Miaolu.

...

Chapter 548: My Castle

After Zhang Tie left with Beverly, Fiona and Linda, that clerk who sold them fire-dragon crystal necklaces greeted Guo Miaolu sweetly, "Senior sister apprentice Guo!"

"Hmm, junior sister Song, why were they here?" Guo Miaolu watched Zhang Tie's back with a sophisticated look.

"That man bought one top-quality fire-dragon crystal necklace for each of the three women..."

After hearing that, Guo Miaolu forced a bitter smile.

"Aww, senior sister Guo, you called that man senior brother apprentice. Is he from Hidden Dragon Palace? But I've not seen him before!"

"Of course you've not seen him. That asshole has left Hidden Dragon Palace for almost 4 years!" Guo Miaolu replied with a complex look.

"Argh, no way! Given his look, he's just 16-17 years old like me. Did he join Hidden Dragon Island at the age of 12? That sounds great. He should be very famous in Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Humph, that guy does not look old at all!" Guo Miaolu said as she touched her own face, "Didn't you always want to see the top one on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List? You saw him!"

"Argh, it's him..." junior sister apprentice Song's eyes soon glittered, "He's too great. I've not imagined that the senior brother is so young and so handsome..."

"Hmm, junior sister Song, you've forgotten one point. This guy is the most lascivious one in the world! You junior sisters have to take care of yourself in case of being cheated by this guy's look. Do you know how many girlfriends does he have?" Guo Miaolu asked full of fury.

"Three?"

"More than 40. This guy is the idol of many people in the Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Wow!" the junior sister apprentice exclaimed as she kept watching towards the leaving direction of Zhang Tie with a curious look...

...

Zhang Tie walked towards Jinwu Castle together with Linda, Beverly and Fiona.

"Is that beautiful Chinese girl your junior sister apprentice?" Fiona asked Zhang Tie in a low voice.

"Hmm! She's a junior sister apprentice that I met here before!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Your junior sister apprentice really has a nice figure. She's also beautiful and special!" Fiona continued. At the same time, she silently drew a circle in Zhang Tie's palm as she whispered to Zhang Tie, "Have you f*cked her, like how you did to those girls of Rose Association?"

"What are you talking about?" Zhang Tie blushed as he glared at Fiona, "Am I that kind of a person? Am I just a lady killer in your eyes? Do you think that I have to make love with all the beautiful women around me?"

"Why don't you ask Beverly and Linda whether you're a lady killer or not?" Fiona urged.

"What do you think?" Zhang Tie then watched Beverly and Linda.

After exchanging glances with each other, Beverly and Linda giggled and replied in unison, "Yes!"

Zhang Tie stared at them with his widely opened eyes before bursting out into laughter...

After passing by the suspension bridge and entering Jinwu Castle, Zhang Tie found the barbican of Jinwu Castle which was more boisterous. Additionally, the commodities being sold in the barbican were more advanced. The rows of stores in the barbican made it as prosperous as the Bright Avenue in Blackhot City. What Zhang Tie conceived about Jinwu Castle had completely become a reality.

"Castle Lord..." a loud voice sounded in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie looked front and found Runo, the captain of the guards of Jinwu Castle was looking at him with a thrilled look.

Runo was tall and wearing a set of excellent full-body armor while a double-hand long sword was hanging over his waist. He looked very dignified. After a few years, this Spirit soldier had become far from slave and grown more confident and powerful.

After feeling Runo's qi, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Fine, you're already a LV 6 fighter now. I'm very happy to have you with me!"

According to the appointment between Zhang Tie and those Spirit soldiers, as long as these people reached LV 6 in Jinwu Castle, they could have their freedom back. Additionally, Zhang Tie would present them 200 gold coins. Runo was a free man for sure at this moment. Compared to the amazing promotion speed from LV 2 to LV 6 in 4 years, Zhang Tie became more reassured about Runo's choice.

"Welcome back, Castle Lord!" under the leadership of Runo, a team of patrol guards knelt down in front of Zhang Tie on their knees and waited for Zhang Tie's return.

At the sight of this, all the onlookers watched Zhang Tie with an amazing look. As a result, this place became quiet at once. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie was the castle lord of Jinwu Castle.

...

Zhang Tie's return aroused a great shock in Jinwu Castle at once. Since Zhang Tie entered the internal castle of Jinwu Castle being escorted by a team of Spirit guards, the entire castle had become boisterous.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the castle, a humpbacked old man had already rushed in front of Zhang Tie in a nimble way and kissed Zhang Tie's shoes, "Thank god, you're back, my lord. I knew that you would come back safe and sound..."

Zhang Tie almost forgot about this humpbacked old man. It was the scar on his face that reminded Zhang Tie of him. He was that miserable, poor old slave. He looked much better now.

"Get up. As you're old. Don't show such a great etiquette to me from now on!" Zhang Tie replied in a tender voice as he lifted up the old man, "Are you used to staying here these years?"

"Yes, yes; thanks to your mercy. I could have food and drinks here everyday. I could even have new clothes to wear. I'm so glad to be a watchdog for you..." as he said this, the old man started to drop off tears.

Zhang Tie was also a bit moved as he didn't know what to say. Instead, he just patted the old man's shoulder before entering with Linda, Beverly and Fiona.

In the hall of the internal castle, the moment Zhang Tie sat in the main seat, those people whom Zhang Tie kept in Jinwu Castle at the beginning, the two female stewards dispatched to Jinwu Castle by Zhang Yang and Hillman and Figo whom were just sent to Jinwu Castle a few days ago hurriedly came here to greet Zhang Tie. The etiquettes that they executed were solemn as those chancellors welcomed their lord back from the battle field. Zhang Tie received them one batch after another. After encouraging them and acknowledging about the current situation of Jinwu Castle, he dispatched some missions to them, and let them leave.

Until now did Linda, Beverly and Fiona on Zhang Tie's side know

that Zhang Tie have a private castle. Before they arrived at Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie just told them that he wanted to take them to travel two days in Hidden Dragon Island and show them how he cultivated in the clan at the beginning. He didn't tell them that he had such a magnificent castle and so many subordinates and servants here.

Watching Zhang Tie sitting in the chair and receiving those people calmly and confidently, the three women's eyes glittered. Such a man was indeed attractive to women. Additionally, he could give them a strong sense of safety and an unspoken pride or vanity.

Jinwu Castle had changed a lot in the past 4 years.

Most of the Spirit guards had become LV 4 or 5 warriors. Runo and another guard called Buffet had promoted to LV 6 successfully. Runo might be promoted to LV 7 this year.

Because of the cozy living environment in Jinwu Castle, those female slaves from Varner Empire had changed completely. They all had good looks before; but after 4 years, Zhang Tie could not even recognize them.

At this moment, the internal castle of Jinwu Castle had already become a country full of 20-30 beauties.

When Sonia who looked like a noble beauty and the other 52 women stood in front of Zhang Tie, even Zhang Tie felt stressed about their plump breasts and butts and their increasingly hot eyes. Zhang Tie then introduced his female servants to Linda, Beverly and Fiona.

"The three women would be your female master from then on. You should follow what they order. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" those 50-odd women glanced at Linda, Beverly and Fiona before moving their eyes away. In front of those women, Linda, Beverly and Fiona were sitting elegantly as they raised high their

breasts.

"Hmm, prepare a night banquet for me at the roof of the castle like how I held last time!" Zhang Tie told Sonia, "I have friends here tonight!"

"Fine, master, what else can I do for you!"

"Nothing more, you can leave!"

"Yes, sir!"

After those female servants left, seeing nobody entering anymore, Fiona started to lean against Zhang Tie as she pouted, "You're not a lady killer? I've not imagined that you have so many more women here besides those girls of Rose Association!"

Zhang Tie pinched her petite face as he replied, "They were female slaves from Varner Empire that I bought in Stars Viewing City. What are you thinking about? From then on, you three will be their female masters, how could you envy your servants?"

"Female slaves from Varner Empire? I've not imagined that they could be so beautiful. They look more like those women who'd like to wander in Bright Avenue in Blackhot City..." Fiona blinked her eyes. She had heard about female slaves from Varner Empire, "You mean they were virgins when you bought them?"

"Hmm...erm, should be, but I've not checked that!" Zhang Tie bought them at the price of virgins. However, Zhang Tie felt bashful to check them. Therefore, he was not sure about that. As most female slaves didn't have a good experience, Zhang Tie didn't know what other troubles had met them. However, according to Davinci, the slave trading agent, those slave traders had a good reputation.

Noticing that Fiona was rolling her eyes once again, Zhang Tie patted her elastic butts, "Don't think too much about that. As we've been on the sea for the whole day, you might be tired. You can take some rest first. I will introduce my friends to you in the evening!"

...

Watching the three women leaving out of here under the guidance of a female servant, Zhang Tie started to meditate while sitting in the chair. At this moment, the scene that an old grandma and a little girl raising a brand and wishing to sell themselves reappeared in his mind, making him upset.

After thinking about for over 10 minutes on the chair, Zhang Tie finally made a decision. After gritting his teeth, he took up an iron bell and rang it. Iron bell's sound was muffled while copper bell's sound was silvery which was always used as a musical instrument. Iron bell was used to call people who were waiting to serve him outside the hall in the castle.

A guard entered the hall and bowed towards Zhang Tie.

"What can I do for you, my majesty!"

"Go to Stars Viewing City and bring Davinci here!"

"Yes, sir..." the guard then left.

...

Chapter 549: One Night Dance

When Zhang Tie met his old friends in the same party in the same place, he finally knew that men were no more the same ones.

How a lot of teenagers and partners celebrated party here last time was still deeply imprinted in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie had not imagined that it was already impossible for him to gather those people only after 4 years.

"Yang Yuankang, Zhu Wenqiang had been promoted to LV 9 last year. After completing the cultivation in Hidden Dragon Palace, they were recruited by the Clan and had long left Hidden Dragon Island. Senior sisters Gu Caiyun and Ma Aiyun also left Hidden Dragon Island in the latter half of the last year after completing the cultivation in Hidden Dragon Palace. It's said that these senior sisters have been dispatched to the Eastern Continent. Before leaving Hidden Dragon Island, senior sister Gu even came here for you. She wanted to have a talk with you; however, as nobody knew where you were, she could only give it up!"

"What about Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei, Wei Wu and Zhang Hongsheng? They should not have reached LV 9 yet. Are they also going to leave Hidden Dragon Island?"

"They're already LV 8. After accepting the missions dispatched by Hidden Dragon Palace, they are cracking down demon disasters on the Waii Sub-Continent with other corps in Jinyun Country. Besides those who have completed the cultivation in Hidden Dragon Palace, most of the male clan apprentices above LV 7 have participated in cracking down demon disasters. They are directly cultivating themselves on the battle field; therefore, they could barely come back one time a year. The ones left in Hidden Dragon Island are mostly female apprentices below LV 9 like us!" Guo Miaolu put it straight.

Zhang Tie glanced at those girls at present. Those coy junior

sister apprentices had grown into beautiful young ladies. At this moment, Zhang Tie found one person less. There should be 12 junior sister apprentices here.

"Where's junior sister apprentice Zhang Ya?" Zhang Tie asked.

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, all the girls looked gloomy.

"Junior sister apprentice Zhang Ya met an accident when she gathered soul fire in the underground world at LV 7. After chopping a huge centipede into two halves, junior sister apprentice Zhang Ya thought that the huge centipede had died. However, it sudden sprung up. Junior sister apprentice Zhang Ya then..." when Lv Shasha explained it, she started to drop off tears together with the other girls.

Zhang Tie's heart raced, "What an adorable and coy petite girl! When she smiled, she had two beautiful dimples on her face. What a pity..."

Without saying anything, Zhang Tie directly forced the lid of a jar of liquor to pop out of the jar by forcefully patting the jar. Closely after that, he raised his head and bottomed it up...

This evening, Zhang Tie was drunk, so were those girls. As nobody knew when could they gather here like this the next time or whether all of them could come here by then...

Guo Miaolu stumbled towards Zhang Tie with blushed face. She forcefully patted on Zhang Tie's shoulder as she put her arm over Zhang Tie's neck. After that, she pushed Fiona aside from Zhang Tie's chest before sitting on Zhang Tie's thigh.

"Junior...junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie...you...they...all say...you...you have a lot of women...you tell me...whe...whether our junior sister apprentices are...are your women..." Guo Miaolu stammered.

"O...of course...you...you're all my women...for the rest of your lives..." Zhang Tie stared at Guo Miaolu with drunk eyes.

"You...you...asshole..." Guo Miaolu swore before bursting out into laughter, "You gifted...your women fire-dragon crystal necklaces...do you know...that you...have a share with that store...you gifted your women with those items...then what...what do you...gift us..."

Zhang Tie became a bit dizzy, "I...will also gift you fire-dragon crystal...necklace..."

"No..." Guo Miaolu shook her head...

"I present Jinwu Castle...to you...all of it..."

"Junior sisters...do you want that..." Guo Miaolu turned around and shouted towards the other girls.

"No...you have to...gift us...unique things..." the girls jeered.

"Right, if you gift us with the same item...we will not take it..."

"You have...to gift...unique items..."

"I will gift myself to...to you..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

"No...who cares about you lady killer..." Du Yuhan started to cry.

"Yeah, who cares about you lady killer..." Qu Liangying, who sat on Du Yuhan's side also cried. These two girls were the most drunk tonight.

"Gift us...what others could not...take away forever!" Zhang Wanjun shouted...

"Now that junior sisters...don't like items...this senior brother will...will perform a set of fist for you!" after saying this, Zhang Tie stumbled to the open land from the back of the table. He then gradually stood steadily.

A generous qi upsurged in Zhang Tie's chest. With the drunk feeling, Zhang Tie felt a bit sad as he remembered the strange song that Donder usually sang when he was drunk. Each time Donder sang it, he would burst out into tears. Zhang Tie suddenly felt like

singing it loudly...

"Gloomy, my departed friend! Long distance between Qin state and Wu; 1000 km between Yan state and Zhao state; We depart when spring moss appear; we depart when autumn wind blow..."

In the strange song, a fiery-blood banner surged into the sky like a milky way and reached over 200 m in height. In the battle-qi totem, a huge king snake swam like a furious dragon started to hover above the entire Jinwu Castle...

Zhang Tie boomed his unrivaled iron-blood fist, which looked like brilliant flower of life...

"Thus vagrants are miserable; wuthering wind, exotic clouds; boat at the riverside, vehicles beside mountain road; how could I leave? how could horse stop neighing; covering the gold cup, who would like to drink? putting aside the zither, my tears wet the horizontal bar of vehicle. Friends at home lying on bed, feeling like losing something..."

In the song, Zhang Tie's fists swayed the girls' hair and skirts with a strong wind...

At this moment, from the bartizan of Jinwu Castle to White Dragon Town and Hidden Dragon Palace, numerous people raised their heads and watched the huge king snake that was swimming like a huge dragon above Jinwu Castle. Everybody was shocked and fascinated by the iron-blood battle qi, which rolled the west wind...

"The sunshine gradually fade away from the wall, the moonlight gradually spray over the corridor. Red orchid is holding the autumn dew; green catalpa is covered with frost. Entering the old rooms, I half close the door and touch the brilliant bed; a grief rose; vagrants stop in his dream, imagining about the souls swaying behind him."

With the great force of Iron-Blood Fist, the water in the pool on

the rooftop of the castle rose and flew towards the skyline like a reversed waterfall. After spraying over the pool, it jumped up once again. Water drops turned into fog, causing a dreamland over the rooftop of Jinwu Castle.

"Thus departure feels different in different situations. Tall, handsome horse matches silver-inlaid saddle; red vehicle matches colorfully-painted wheels; I build a tent outside the gate of capital and bid a farewell to my old friends in Golden Valley Park. Strings of harp, flute and drum produce music; sad songs of Yan State and Zhao State make beauties weep; pearls and jades are brilliant in the late autumn; silks and brocades are fascinating in the early spring. Being shocked by the song, horses raise their heads and chew; fish jumped out of the deep water. When in departure, with tears in eyes, I feel lonely and gloomy."

By then, Zhang Tie's Iron-Blood Fist suddenly changed its feature as the wind of his fist contained the sound of zither and drum. It sounded like thousands of pearls falling into the jade plate. Sometimes, it was like horse's neigh; sometimes, it was like fish swimming freely in the abyss. The wind along with his fist blew over their faces which felt like desolate wind in autumn. All the girls were fascinated by that...

"There are swordsmen who feel shameful about having not appreciated their masters and young righteous men who targeted their masters, such as Nie Zheng assassinated Xia Lei, the prime minister of Han State, Yu Rang intended to assassinate Zhao Xiangzi in the toilet of the imperial palace, Zhuan Zhu assassinated the emperor of Wu State, Jing Ke assassinated the first emperor of Qin Dynasty. All of them abandoned the warmth of their mother and wife. They left their homeland and bid farewell to their family members. Before leaving, they wiped off their tears and blood and gazed at each other. After riding on the battle horse, they didn't look back anymore, leaving dust on the way. They paid gratitude to their masters at the cost of their own lives. When bells rang,

cowards turned faces while their parents and wives wailed to death."

Zhang Tie jumped in the air while he released his golden-carp sword and silver-carp sword from his waist. He released sword qi for over 100 times and punched 100 times at the same time. The sword qi surged towards the sky. Zhang Tie's fist intention incarnated into the shape of dragon while the golden and silver carps flew out of his sword qi vividly and reached the skyline directly. Under the shiny skyline, they danced with the king snake. Dotted by red, golden and silver, the stars in the sky were even dwarfed. It was absolutely a legendary scene...

Watching this, a 50-year old wrinkled man widely opened his mouth as the bowl of night snacklate fell on the ground, causing a "cracking" sound.

Many people in the inn raised their heads and watched the direction of Jinwu Castle silently.

"...the frost in the deep autumn is like pearls; the bright moon in the autumn night is like jade chip; the bright moonlight and the pearl-like frost, come and go. After departure, I miss you so much.

Therefore, although the departing parties and reasons are uncertain, I will always be sad about that. Being upset, I lose my awareness and suffer a great trauma and shock mentally and spiritually. Although there are marvelous poems of Wang Bao and Yang Xiong and the profound narrations of Yan An and Xu Le; although there are many handsome people in the examination hall and numerous talented people in the national library whose poems are known as having a powerful qi surging into the heavens like that of Sima Xiangru, whose texts are known as profound and extensive like that of Zou Shi, who could describe the scene of departure!"

After the song, the sword qi disappeared, the fist intention was buried and the dancing king snake remained dormant as Zhang

Tie's figure reappeared in the water curtain. The water curtain turned into water drops once again and fell onto the girls' faces and skirts.

Zhang Tie then stared at his double-carp swords and forced the two thin sword blades out. He then forcefully collided the golden carp sword with the silver carp sword, breaking them into pieces at once.

"Does this set of fist position...look good...I've broken my double-carp swords...especially...for you...the gift that I present to you...could not be grabbed away by...anyone else"

All the junior sister apprentices of Zhang Tie had burst out into tears...

After asking this, Zhang Tie laughed as he lay down, facing the sky at once. With an exclamation, Linda, Beverly, Fiona who had long recovered her consciousness and all of Zhang Tie's junior sister apprentices surged up towards him immediately.

After checking him carefully, Guo Miaolu wiped off her tears. Looking at Zhang Tie who was leaning against her breasts, she smiled at the other sisters, "Senior brother apprentice...is just drunk...he's fallen asleep!"

That night, Zhang Tie's dance became legendary.

...

At the peak of the mountain where Hidden Dragon Palace rested, a group of elites who were holding a meeting in Heavens Breaking Pavilion were also gazing at that marvelous scene in Jinwu Castle. Until the marvelous scene disappeared did everyone become speechless.

"The one who could break the heavens is not here, isn't it hilarious for us to break heavens here? I will leave Hidden Dragon Island for the theater of operations in Qilan State tonight. I hope to further improve my cultivation. See you..." after a long sigh, a

youth crossed his hands towards his partners before directly jumping off the Heavens Breaking Pavilion.

"See you next year then, hope you'll be alive then! after saying this, another youth also jumped off the Heavens Breaking Pavilion.

In a wink, all the elites of Hidden Dragon Palace had left. Before the final one left, he stared at the three words "Heavens Breaking Pavilion" and frowned. He then jumped up and punched that board into pieces. Closely after that, he left without looking back——from today on, there's Heavens Breaking Department in Hidden Dragon Palace; yet no Heavens Breaking Pavilion in the Heavens Breaking Department...

Chapter 550: Arrangements

When Zhang woke up late the next morning, he felt spirited all over and was in his best state. After one night, Zhang Tie had a better recognition of fighting skills. He suddenly felt that he could apply Iron-Blood Fist, swordsmanship and his battle qi as well as the 'One Step, One Scene' smoothly. That one night dance was Zhang Tie's best performance since he was born.

When Zhang Tie woke up, he found that he was resting his head on Linda's plump and snow-white thigh. Linda was massaging his dimples kindly by hands. The fragrance of the plant essential oil in her hands smelt very comfortable. Seeing Zhang Tie opening his eyes, Linda stopped.

"Ah, you woke up..."

"Where are Fiona and Beverly?" after looking around, Zhang Tie found nobody else in the bedroom, including Fiona.

"Fiona said she wanted to see how those female servants worked in the castle. She went with Beverly!"

Zhang Tie smiled. As Fiona and Beverly had not lived in the castle before, it was normal for them to be curious about that. To the final analysis, they were still childish.

Zhang Tie and Linda then got up. After pulling the rope of the bell in the room, after a few seconds, the female servants had entered with Zhang Tie's clothes and cleansing tools one after another.

In only 5-6 minutes, Zhang Tie had already cleansed himself and dressed well. Noticing those women glancing at his thing, Zhang Tie blushed although being shameless. Whispering something to Linda, he hurriedly left the bedroom.

After coming to the outside, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh inside.

"Where are my junior sister apprentices?" Zhang Tie asked Sonia

who followed him.

"Those guests have left this early morning. You were still sleeping at that moment, your excellency!" the servant of Jinwu Castle answered while her blush did not completely fade away.

Zhang Tie drew in a long breath as he didn't know when would they gather again. However, that was how life went. Banquets would always come to an end. After acknowledging his friends' information, Zhang Tie had solved half of his concerns in Hidden Dragon Island. After lighting the soul fire of bloody scorpion as a LV 9 fighter, Zhang Tie would leave out of here.

"There's one more thing!"

"What?"

"Many people wanted to see you outside the Jinwu Castle this early morning, my lord!" Sonia reported.

Zhang Tie knew these people must be attracted by the fist position that he performed last night. Zhang Tie really had no time to care about these people. Whether they were here for fame or benefit or out of pure curiosity, Zhang Tie didn't plan to waste time on them.

Additionally, Zhang Tie didn't know whether there were killers of Three-Eye Association among those people. If Three-Eye Association intended to deal with him by arranging moles in Hidden Dragon Island, they might want to slip in Jinwu Castle by this chance. It was unnecessary for him to find trouble for himself.

"I will not see any of them!" Zhang Tie ordered as he walked, "Oh, I have sent someone to bring Davinci here from Stars Viewing City yesterday, has he arrived here?"

"Yes, he has. He's waiting for you, castle lord!"

"Let him wait for me in the lobby!"

"As you will!"

...

In a few minutes, Davinci, whom Zhang Tie met a few years ago, stood in front of Zhang Tie politely. He even did not dare to look at other women in the castle. Since he entered the lobby, he had been gazing at his feet.

"Take a seat!" Zhang Tie pointed at a chair on his side. Davinci then sat down carefully.

Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly, "I want you to give me a favor."

"Argh, it's my pleasure...just let me know your demand!" Davinci picked himself up in a flurried manner before sitting down hurriedly.

"How's the slave trade in Stars Viewing City?"

"Alas, just so so. After the holy war broke out, human life had become worthless. Not only Stars Viewing City, even the slave trade across the entire Waii Sub-Continent could hardly sustain. Honestly, I've not had a business for a long time!" Davinci replied with a bitter look.

"I have a business for you!" Zhang Tie directly passed an envelope and 5 gold notes to Davinci, each note was worth 10,000 gold coins. At the sight of the par value of the gold notes, Davinci's face started to cramp as his eyes turned bloody. He started to pant like an old ox. In a split second, a powerful qi aroused from him.

"What...what do you want me to do?"

"I have a friend. He wants me to transport some slaves to Ice and Snow Wilderness for him!"

"Are you kidding me?" Davinci watched Zhang Tie with an amazed look, "So many people are striving for a stock certificate of Ice and Snow Wilderness. This year, each share of stock delivered by the tribal axis of Ice and Snow Wilderness has reached 100 gold coins. Even so, you could barely get one. Many rich people could

not get one, not to mention those worthless slaves!"

"Mind your own business. You only need to bring those people, who wish to be slaves and seek shelter in Ice and Snow Wilderness. These 50,000 gold coins are your budget!"

"I want to help you, but I cannot make that without the admittance certificate of Ice and Snow Wilderness..." Davinci forcefully swallowed his saliva while gazing at the gold notes; he decisively shook his head, "As to those ferries which want to steal in Ice and Snow Wilderness, even though they have arrived at Eschyle City, all the passengers have to pass the check there. Only those who have admittance certificates are allowed to land in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Those having no admittance certificates would have to go back where they came from!"

Zhang Tie smiled as he pointed at that sealed envelope, "My friend handed this letter to me. You only need to have your man hand this letter to the ruler of Eschyle City. They will take over those slaves."

"Ah, does that work?" Davinci watched Zhang Tie with an unbelievable look.

"My friend has a great power in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Don't worry about that. As long as you could deal with it well, I promise you will have a bright future. Gold coins will not tell a lie, right? It's unnecessary for me to play a joke with you with 50,000 gold coins!"

Davinci finally made his decision as he gritted his teeth, "Fine, I will do that!"

"I have to warn you. Those who would like to be slaves are poor. Many of them are orphans and lonely old women. Don't play tricks with me. Just bring those people to Ice and Snow Wilderness safe and sound. If you don't understand this point, I'm sure that as long as I hear some bad news about you, you won't try how I review my wrongdoings. Am I clear?"

Davinci quivered all over before nodding solemnly, "Don't worry. I'm clear. I won't do that stupid thing!"

"That's what I want. I will have someone accompany you there as your bodyguards and assistants..." after saying that, Zhang Tie sent someone to bring here Hillman, Figo, Michael and the 'manager' and told them about their job.

As it was their first time to serve Zhang Tie, they all treated it as a test of their loyalty; therefore, they all agreed instantly...

...

Closely after that, they left Jinwu Castle. Seeing them off, Zhang Tie sat still for a short while before telling the other servants that he wanted to enter meditation in the backroom. After that, he entered the basement of Jinwu Castle.

...

After changing a look in 20 minutes, Zhang Tie walked out of a private residence in White Dragon Town and rapidly surged towards the Dragon Cave...

After 7 hours, Zhang Tie finally caught sight of a LV 9 bloody scorpion which was higher than 10 m in the deep underground space of Dragon Cave. The bloody scorpion walked towards him like a mountain. Zhang Tie responded with a smile...

When Zhang Tie walked out of the basement of Jinwu Castle in the evening, nobody knew that Zhang Tie had become an official LV 9 fighter. After being lit by the soul-fire of the LV 9 bloody scorpion, Zhang Tie's iron-blood battle qi gradually improved qualitatively. Zhang Tie tried the trouble-reappearance situation of the shadow demon backroom once again. With the help of the LV 9 iron-blood battle qi, he survived 6 seconds under the attack of the shadow demon for the first time. 6,6,10—the latest data of Zhang Tie's fighting force.

The biggest problem facing Zhang Tie now was how to promote

to LV 10. As long as he reached LV 10, he would be able to release his battle qi through the air. As a result, he could kill his enemy using his iron-blood fist over 10 m away. By then, he would reveal the real power of iron-blood fist which was the secret knowledge of the imperial household of Norman Empire.

At dinner, Zhang Tie fetched all the female servants. After that, he took out a contract and handed it to Sonia.

"Sonia, given what you've done for Jinwu Castle and your loyalty to me these years, you're free now. If you wish to stay in Jinwu Castle and serve me loyally, you will become my home chancellor and enjoy the treatment of home chancellor. Do you like to stay?"

Being thrilled, Sonia took that contract as her eyes turned wet at once. She stammered, "I...I wish to stay and serve you, my lord!"

All the other female servants watched Sonia with an admirable look. This contract brought hope to all the female servants.

That was what Zhang Tie pursued. Zhang Tie pointed at Linda, Beverly and Fiona and told those female servants, "After a few days, you will follow them to the Eastern Continent. From then on, the three women will be your masters. I will hand your contracts to them. They will control your fate, am I clear?"

All the female servants nodded as they showed their etiquette to Linda, Beverly and Fiona solemnly.

After the female servants left, Zhang Tie called in the team of Spirit soldiers and introduced their female masters to them.

The last one entering was Paul, the candidate muling of Sun Dynasty, who was almost the most humble person in Jinwu Castle. Although he was low-key, he also showed his loyalty to Zhang Tie in his own way. Zhang Tie also paid him for his loyalty—several years ago, when those girls of Rose Association and those brothers of God Blessing Brotherhood returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture before the holy war broke out, Zhang Tie fulfilled his promise. He

told his elder brother to dispatch someone to kill that head muling named Keehn who had killed all the family members of Paul in Sun Dynasty.

From then on, Paul sincerely accomplished the task of setting free sand-scale fish requested by Zhang Tie in Jinwu Castle everyday. It seemed that he treated this as his only task and work in the world.

When Zhang Tie came back yesterday, Paul was not back from the wharf yet. Therefore, it was Zhang Tie's first time to meet Paul in the past 4 years. The fruit of redemption on the small tree in Castle of Black Iron witnessed this man's diligent work everyday.

When Zhang Tie met Paul once again, he was a bit shocked by Paul's qi. This slave looked more tranquil and profound. Average people could not observe that except Zhang Tie.

"Have you broken through it?" Zhang Tie asked with a slightly amazed look.

"Yes, my lord. Watching those maritime lives returning to the ocean freely and happily everyday, I feel very tranquil and comfortable inside. Therefore, I have finally broken through!" Paul's calm face slightly revealed a bit excitement. As he replied, he knelt down in front of Zhang Tie and touched the ground with his forehead, his shoulders and his knees, which was the highest etiquette that followers used in front of their leaders of the school God of Brilliance, "Thank you, you're my lord of brilliance. It's you who had wiped off hatred from my heart and silently pointed out a bright road towards sacredness for me. Please allow me to follow you and be loyal to you. It's my great honor to be your home chancellor, even servants!"

Zhang Tie opened his mouth as he had not imagined that this man could make the breakthrough in cultivation only by watching sand-scale fish returning to the ocean. After a short while, Zhang Tie finally asked him, "What's your rank now?"

"According to the standards of the school of the God of Brilliance, I'm a 5-star battle priest now!"

"5-star battle priest?"

"Hmm, my fighting strength is equal to that of a LV 9 fighter!"

"F*ck" Zhang Tie almost shouted out. "This guy was just a candidate muling of the school of God of Brilliance over one decade ago. Such a breakthrough must be a result of long-time accumulation. But it's too weird to make breakthrough in this pattern. Is there any secret inside?" as Zhang Tie thought about it, he gradually recovered his composure. He glanced at Paul and finally nodded, "From today on, you will be my home chancellor. When I'm not in the castle, you should serve them; this is Linda, this is Beverly, this is Fiona!"

Paul then gave his salute to Linda, Beverly and Fiona respectively...

...

On the next day, after arranging the affairs in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie returned to Yiyang City with Linda, Beverly and Fiona by airship.

As he had finished what he wanted to do, he would prepare for returning to the Selnes Theater of Operations...

Zhang Tie sensed that he could find a chance to breakthrough LV 10 in Selnes Theater of Operations...

Chapter 551: The Idiots

A huge fury-level battle airship parked in front of Zhang Tie. Raising his head, Zhang Tie watched his own airship calmly while being thrilled inside.

Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie were reviewing this new battle airship which had just been transported out of Zhang's airship factory and over 130 volunteers who were employed to manipulate the airship.

These volunteers were very experienced in manipulating airships. They escaped from those regions which had been destroyed by demons to Huaiyuan Prefecture. Although having sold their airships, they still had a tough life in Huaiyuan Prefecture. The demon disasters had destroyed their homeland along with everything in it. The advertisement that people were recruited to crack down demons attracted a great number of volunteers who would like to go to Selnes Theater of Operations. After a round of selection, over 130 people of them were employed.

Zhang Tie watched these volunteers calmly. Zhang Yang had already have them put on a set of blue airship uniform. Although they didn't look handsome, Zhang Tie could sense their decisiveness and morale, which was rightly what Zhang Tie required.

The airship was matched with various weapons and gliders. Before leaving the factory, this airship had already passed strict tests and commissioning. Therefore, after taking a visit in the airship, Zhang Tie got off the airship and stood in front of these volunteers.

"I'm Zhang Tie, the coxswain of this airship. This is my elder brother. You must have seen him. My elder brother had also told you about me. Perhaps some of you might have some questions, such as "Does this idiot and playboy really spend hundreds of

thousands of gold coins to buy the best battle airship only to seek for death or show off in Selnes Theater of Operations?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, many people of those volunteers exchanged glances with each other as what Zhang Tie said was really what they thought. Actually, at the sight of this 'coxswain', many of them even became a bit disappointed. Zhang Tie's age didn't fit this trip in their mind.

Zhang Tie knew that he had to build enough authority in front of these people if he wanted them to follow his order. Otherwise, if these people didn't follow his order in the theater of operations, it would be a big problem.

"Firstly, I want to say. I'm not a playboy. I'm 20 years old. Five years ago, I served in the Iron-Blood Camp of Iron-Horn Corps of Norman Empire, during which period, I was promoted to the first lieutenant and was awarded the Iron-Blood Medal. Do you know the condition to have an Iron-Blood Medal in Iron-Blood Camp?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's self-introduction, many people responded with an amazing look as they didn't believe in Zhang Tie's experience.

"Honestly, all the people that you have killed and will kill on the battlefield for the rest of your lives might not match me. This was the reason that I was awarded the Iron-Blood Medal. Later on, after leaving Iron-Horn Corps, I returned to Jinyun Country, where I experienced the event in Heavens Cold City. participated in the raid of Heavens Cold City organized by Huaiyuan Palace. This action directly detonated the demon disaster in Heavens Cold City. The heads of demonized puppets that I chopped off was also more than the total of what you've chopped off. Half a month ago, when I returned from Selnes Theater of Operations, I also swept a squad of demon corps. Therefore, don't treat me as a playboy. I'm not traveling to make money in Selnes Theater of Operations; instead, I'm going to fight demons there."

Listening to Zhang Tie's introduction, those people started to look Zhang Tie respectfully instead of doubting him. Zhang Tie's experience and his meritorious deeds were both admirable.

"Am I silly? Honestly, I am. I have a chance to leave here as soon as possible for the Eastern Continent; however, I refused it. I have to stay for some reasons. Therefore, it seems that I'm silly in others' eyes. Because of this reason, I even lost my opportunity to participate in the battle in Selnes Theater of Operations as an official soldier of Huaiyuan Palace. That's why I employ you to fight demons together with me!" Zhang Tie smiled, "In my opinion, you're also a group of idiots who're going to seek for death in Selnes Theater of Operations. You have your reasons and I have my reason. There we go!"

All the volunteers burst out into laughter.

"Look, that's all about me. You can ask me if you have any questions!"

"Sir, can you tell me why do you choose Selnes Theater of Operations?" a 30-year old guy raised his hand as he asked Zhang Tie.

"If others wanted to know the reason, I would tell them that I did that for the bright future of humans. However, as it is asked by you, I have two reasons. First, I hate demons very much. Each one who had witnessed the disasters caused by demons would hate demons. Second, my beloved woman is in Selnes Theater of Operations. She has a lot of pursuers. I have made a bet with her pursuers. If I could kill more wing demons than any one of them, they would give up her. Therefore, in one word, I'm going to Selnes Theater of Operation for killing demons and pursuing my beloved woman!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's words, some guys whistled. Zhang Tie's reasons were not only convincing but resonating.

"Sir, what kind of squad of demon corps have you killed?"

"A squad of LV 9 iron-armored demons. You don't need to doubt that. When you arrive at Selnes Theater of Operations, you can easily see my performance!"

"Are we going to fight iron-armored demons?"

"If we meet them, we will beat them ferociously. However, our main target is not those iron-armored demons on the ground but those wing demons in the air. In Selnes Theater of Operations, wing demons are called airship killer. Therefore, this task would be very dangerous. If our airship was struck down by wing demons and fell onto the battlefield, none of you could survive. Therefore, you'd better think about it carefully. You can still leave now. When the airship set off next morning, we will have to execute military rules in the airship. If anyone of you wants to leave at that time, I will chop off his head!"

"F*ck them!" a bearded uncle swore as he took out a small stoup and drunk a mouth of alcohol, "Sir, I'm Peter; just hand the engine room of the airship to me. If there's any problem with the engine room, just chop off my head!"

"Fine, is there any other problem?"

"Sir, our airship doesn't have a name yet!"

"Haha, now that we're all idiots, just call it the Idiots!"

"The Idiots?" all the volunteers exchanged glances with each other.

"We Chinese usually say that idiots always have their happiness. I feel it's a very auspicious name..." Zhang Tie smiled, "I hope all of you could survive till the end!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, everybody nodded.

With no more problems, Zhang Tie then delivered his first order, "You can go take a look in the airship and prepare for your job. We will set off at 8 am next morning. See you tomorrow!"

After giving a salute to Zhang Tie, those volunteers left.

...

Outside the gate of a hospital in Yiyang City, Zhang Tie sat in his vehicle and watched Miss Daina throwing herself into the arms of a 40-year old handsome gentleman in doctor's uniform who was walking out of the hospital while lifting an insulated lunch box with a happy look...

Miss Daina was going to get married in the next month. They had already taken wedding photos two days ago. The man named James. He's a doctor in this hospital. He had a good family background and a good moral quality without any bad habit;

"Is this the happiness wanted by Miss Daina?" at the sight of this, Zhang Tie had a complex mood, "Well, wish you happiness!" Zhang Tie said inside.

Before Zhang Tie's family members left here, Zhang Tie would send his elder brother to ask Miss Daina's opinion. If they also wanted to leave, Zhang Yang would take them away. If they didn't want to leave, Zhang Yang would present them a lot of money as a reward for teaching his sons and daughter. He would also introduce some friends to Miss Daina and her husband.

"See you, dear Miss Daina!"

Noticing that Miss Daina was glancing at this direction, Zhang Tie drew in a deep breath before telling the driver, "Let's go..."

The black vehicle then set off...

"Daina, what's up?" that man asked her when Miss Daina turned around and saw the vehicle off.

"That might be Zhang Tie in the vehicle" Miss Daina's mood became a bit complex; however, she responded with a smile, "Nothing!"

...

After that, Zhang Tie returned home and had a dinner with his family members. After knowing that Zhang Tie was going back to the Selnes Theater of Operations, his parents' eyes turned red. His mom started to drop tears in the meal. Linda, Beverly and Fiona also wept.

This supper might be the last meal that Zhang Tie had with his family members in Waii Sub-Continent. After Zhang Tie returned to the Selnes Theater of Operations, the people here would soon move to the Eastern Continent.

"Dad and mom, don't worry about me. I will be okay. I can get in touch with my elder brother at any time now. When I finish my task over there, I will come for you in the Eastern Continent!" Zhang Tie forced a smile as he actually didn't know when he would see his parents next time...

Chapter 552: A Disappeared Empire

Hearing the knocks, Zhang Tie stopped his cultivation of the Great Wilderness Sutra and opened the door of the captain's room. A crew member was standing outside the door.

"Captain, the first mate told me to let you know that we're arriving at Oris, the capital of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire!"

"Aww, fine, I will go to the command module right now!"

The crew member gave a salute to Zhang Tie before leaving. Zhang Tie straightened his clothes before putting on his hat and walking towards the command module.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was wearing a set of dark green military uniform which fit that of militia of Jinyun Country. If not the symbol of captain on his chest, nobody would believe that he was the captain of the awe-inspiring fury-level battle airship.

The captain's bedroom was the best in the airship, which was close to the command module. After passing through the spacious tunnel which was available to three people at the same time in the middle of the fury-level airship and walking down a small part of stairs, Zhang Tie entered the command module.

"At 13:58, on April 7th, the captain enters the command module and takes over the command of the airship!"

Seeing Zhang Tie entering, the first mate who was standing on the position of the captain beside the helmsman shouted loudly. At this moment, besides those volunteers who didn't put on military uniforms, everything ran in the state of a formal expedition. They followed strict manipulation procedures and regulations. Closely after the first mate finished his words, the second mate marked on the flight log.

Those in the command module gave a salute to Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie gave a salute back to them. After that, he walked onto the

command position which was 3 stages higher than the ground of the command module. Holding the rail around the command position, Zhang Tie lowered his head and looked at the land below the airship.

There was a very senior imaging lens which covered about 1 square meters on the command position. It was used to look down. This device was like a huge ground telescope. Through the application of the principle of optics, the captain could see clearly the situation on the land below the airship the moment he lowered his head. He could also adjust the angle and the size of the image in the imaging lens.

At this moment, the airship was above over 2000 m. Through the bird-view imaging lens, Zhang Tie could see clearly everything on the ground. Zhang Tie didn't know how did the capital of Holy Golden Orchid Empire look before; however, at this moment, most of the capital had turned into ruins, which was more miserable than the situation in Blackhot City.

After the holy war broke out 3 months ago, Oris had been struck by demon disaster. The Holy Golden Orchid Empire which was almost destroyed by Haiger VII collapsed completely in this demon disaster.

Even before the Holy Golden Orchid Empire completely collapsed, Haiger VII had delivered an absurd order—to dissolve the entire empire and summon those chancellors who were still loyal to him to follow him to a new world and build a new country full of 'light and love'. After delivering that decree, the entire imperial household of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire disappeared.

Therefore, it's hard to say whether the Holy Golden Orchid Empire died in the hands of demons or the hands of Haiger VII. When the holy war broke out, whether it was lucky or not for those countrymen to have such a bizarre empire. After the entire imperial household of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire

disappeared, all the people in the city had lost their morale. Most of them had already escaped away like that absurd emperor before the demonized puppet corps arrived at Oris.

Those who hated Haiger VII the most were not those countrymen who had been tortured so much by that emperor and completely lost their confidence; but those 'able youths' who had dreamed to be the emperor's son-in-law and princes of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire at the cost of 200 gold coins or more.

Although nobody calculated how many of those 'able youths' were there, as diplomats of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire had made advertisement in countries across Blackson Humans Corridor, it was estimated that at least tens of thousands of people had applied for being the emperor's son-in-law, including Zhang Tie.

The total of the application fee of tens of thousands of people was not a small amount of money. Additionally, it was said that the registration fee was divided into different ranks. Different ranks matched different treatments. 200 gold coins were relatively affordable for those small figures who dreamed to be big figures; it was said that some application fee paid by rich clan and new startups in the Waii Sub-Continent for being the emperor's son-in-law was as high as hundreds of thousands of gold coins, by which they could enjoy more special treatments.

Therefore, nobody knew how much had Haiger VII actually taken away in the name of choosing his son-in-law.

After the entire imperial households of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire disappeared, some people said that Haiger VII was the biggest liar in the history of Blackson Humans Corridor. He completed the largest-scale robbery in the history of Blackson Humans Corridor before the arrival of the holy war.

More 'able youths' could only reap what they had sown. According to the bilateral agreement, this time, it was truly

nothing to do with Haiger VII.

Zhang Tie also paid 200 gold coins in the embassy of Jinyun Country of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire which was like an illegal agent. He even signed an agreement. In the beginning, he didn't pay attention to that; however, when he took it out and read it carefully a couple of days ago, he finally found that line of words which were as tiny as ant legs in an inconspicuous place of that agreement.

——When being influenced by force majeure like war and natural disasters, the Holy Golden Orchid Empire's imperial household is entitled to extend, terminate or abandon its fulfillment of this agreement. The loss caused by such force majeure would be sustained by the applicant. The application fee will not be returned in such case. The Holy Golden Orchid Empire and its imperial household will not shoulder any responsibilities for such loss.

——Note: the force majeure in the contract includes but not limited to those listed in the attachment. The final power of interpretation belongs to the Holy Golden Orchid Empire.

Of course, the holy war belonged to the most powerful force majeure. Therefore, they could only be speechless.

When he read this item, Zhang Tie became stunned. He even started to doubt whether the hilarious emperor of Haiger VII had long known that the holy war was going to break out. Therefore, he carried out such a robbery with his daughter as a bait.

Nobody could answer this question. Because all the royals of Holy Golden Orchid Empire had disappeared. Nobody knew their whereabouts. If in peaceful times, the disappearance of all the royals of an empire would cause a great chaos for sure; however, when many countries had vanished or were vanishing and many people died everyday because of the arrival of the holy war, such an incident was just like a spray in the tsunami which would be forgotten by people in a blink of eyes.

Zhang Tie adjusted his bird-view imaging lens and observed the situation of Oris under his feet. A lot of buildings collapsed or were destroyed in the battle fire. Not even a single alive person could be seen down there. However, Zhang Tie occasionally saw some demonized puppets wandering in the ruins. This was how the capital, the most prosperous place of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire presented in Zhang Tie's eyes.

Since they left Jinyun Country and flew northwards, Zhang Tie started to see more similar scenes. Therefore, he became gloomy. He finally understood why those people raising boards in Yiyang City would like to leave this continent at the cost of their freedom.

They were deeply hurt by the holy war. Their sharp pains reminded them of the most realistic pursuit of commoners in the holy war—to survive themselves!

Zhang Tie watched the land down there which was contaminated by black and grey colors like a color palette with a calm look. However, he was greatly shocked inside.

"If the grand meeting for selecting Pandora's husband was just a hoax, how could Haiger VII knew that the holy war would break out before the grand meeting? Haiger VII even set the time of the grand meeting before the even in Heavens Cold City. Unless he was a key figure among demons or the Three-Eye Association, he could not have such a precise judgment on the arrival of the holy war."

"Even I didn't have a clear judgment on the arrival of the holy war until I left Ice and Snow Wilderness, how could Haiger VII know about it so early?"

"If Haiger VII is really a demon or a member of Three-Eye Association, what's the role of Pandora in this event? Is she a purely innocent girl or a demon or a member of Three-Eye Association like Haiger VII? If Pandora is a demon or a member of Three-Eye Association, how would I face her?"

Zhang Tie had a complex mood. In order to take a look at Oris,

the Idiots airship flew more than a 1000 km than the planned route. After watching the ruins below, Zhang Tie knew that he didn't need to face Pandora at least now. Not knowing why, Zhang Tie immediately let out a sigh inside.

Even if Pandora was really a demon or a member of Three-Eye Association, Zhang Tie knew that he could barely target his weapon at Pandora, not to mention to kill her.

"Just hand it to time!"

Only after 20 minutes, the Idiots airship had already flown past Oris, leaving this ruined city behind.

Zhang Tie turned his head and asked his first mate, "Are there demon beasts within hundreds of square km that usually attack airships..."

"This route is relatively safer; however, as it is in the wild, there're many mutated living beings and demon beasts that might attack our airship. We can easily find them if we want..."

Zhang Tie nodded. The moment he wanted the first mate to find a nearby place for him to kill some demon beasts so as to form a similar trouble-reappearance situation for the sake of practicing glider and rotachute did he hear the early-warning bell ring...

Chapter 553: The Whip of a Fiery Flame

After hearing the early-warning bell ring, all the people in the command module became spirited.

The first mate instantly charged at a pile of dense sound-transmission pipes in the command module. He opened a sound-transmission mouth that led to observation post at the top of the airship and roared, "What's happening?"

"There's a large-scale battle 20 km away from us in the 9 o'clock direction!"

"There's a large-scale battle 20 km away from us in the 9 o'clock direction!"

A loud voice drifted from the sound transmission pipes for twice. Until the first mate answered, "Copy that" did it stop.

In a split second, everybody turned around and looked at Zhang Tie. Airships such as the Idiots could choose to join such a ground combat or not. As a spontaneous 'folk armed force' heading for Selnes Theater of Operations, nobody forced them to do something. It only depended on the captain. Only when they arrived at the Selnes Theater of Operations could their action be restricted.

"Ring the battle alarm; prepare for attacking the ground. Turn around the airship, I will take a look down there!" Zhang Tie delivered his order immediately.

On the 3rd day after leaving Jinyun Country, the Idiots rung its battle alarm for the first time. Soon after that, everybody in the airship became busy out of excitement. After adjusting its angle flexibly, the huge triangular-shaped body of the fury-level airship accelerated its speed right away and flew towards the battlefield in the distance.

Zhang Tie adjusted the angle of the bird-view imaging lens in

front of him and instantly captured the scene on the battlefield 20 km away——

A human troop was evacuating from a valley while the demonized puppets were chasing closely after them. A great number of women and kids were running towards the east in a flurried manner. That human army worked as the shield and the barrier for those women and kids. The human troop was safeguarding a bridge on the riverside and preventing demonized puppets from breaking through.

The two parties were fighting fiercely nearby the bridge. Zhang Tie found some people were trying to destroy the bridge so as to hold back the demonized puppets. However, that bridge's abutment was in the form of a steel frame, which could hardly be completely destroyed. At the same time, the human troop was forced back by demonized puppets step by step.

There were over 10,000 human soldiers and about 30,000-40,000 demonized puppets across the battlefield. Additionally, more and more demonized puppets were rushing out of the valley. In Zhang Tie's eyes, this was not a large-scale battle; however, it was extremely fierce. Especially when more and more demonized puppets rushed out of the valley, the human troop's situation became critical.

"You command the following battle. You can mobilize all the means in the airship and give a sharp blow to those demonized puppets. Destroy that bridge and let the human troop, the women and the kids leave out of there safely." Zhang Tie delivered an order to the first mate.

"Yes, sir!" the first mate replied loudly. Closely after that, he glanced at the clock in the command module before shouting loudly, "At 14:27, on April 7th, the airship encountered a battle. The first mate took over the battle command!"

To command the airship to join a ground combat required very

senior commanding skills. One had to learn 3 years in regular military academy plus many years of practice before becoming a qualified airship commander. As Zhang Tie had not learned any airship commanding courses at the college or being taught in practice, it was indeed out of his ability to command the airship to join a battle.

Therefore, in such a case, Zhang Tie appointed the first mate who was an experienced airship commander. Zhang Tie would decide whether they would join the battle or not while the first mate would determine how to fight with the consent of all the crew members in the airship. After all, nobody would like to put their lives in the hand of an outsider.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's role was like that of the political commissar in the human troops before the Catastrophe. Actually, Zhang Tie's power was much greater than that of the political commissar. In other words, the first mate of the airship was more like a senior battle adviser.

"Altitude!" the first mate roared in the command module while the whole command module entered a tense battle state.

"2100..." a crew member standing in front of a lot of dashboards replied loudly at once.

"How long does it take us to be close to the target?"

"4'57'!" another voice shouted.

"Adjust the entrance angle; ground reference, the iron bridge on the river; entrance angle 0 degree, port the helm 20!"

The huge fury-level airship instantly inclined as its entrance angle was adjusted.

After a few seconds, the helmsman replied loudly, "Entrance angle adjustment completed..."

"Dive in 30 seconds; height 400..."

"Repeat, dive in 30 seconds; height 400..." the signal staff lightened the dive signal lamp as he shouted towards the sound transmission pipe in front of him.

After 30 seconds, everybody in the command module seized the fixed handrails beside them, including Zhang Tie. After that, the entire airship started to dive downwards towards the ground.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt falling off from high buildings as he felt his blood boiling.

After almost 2 minutes, the airship gradually recovered its stability.

"Altitude 400..."

"Bomb compartment, prepare white phosphorous gel bombs, 3 in one group, unit density 4..."

The battle on the ground became clearer when Zhang Tie reached hundreds of meters in height. Some demonized puppets had already rushed over that bridge, forcing all the human soldiers to the other side of the bridge.

Even though at this moment, the human troop still had not noticed such a huge airship in the air. Until the huge body of the fury-level airship caused a wide area of shadow on the ground did many human soldiers raise their heads and glance at it.

The airship had just flown over the bridge...

The demonized puppets were crowding on the iron bridge.

"Release..." after the roar of the first mate, three black barrels dropped off the airship like how a hen laid. When they were over 20 m above the ground, the 3 black barrels sparkled. Closely after that, they all exploded, drawing a black fire line in the sky. The fire line slashed onto that bridge like a fire whip in the hand of the God. As a result, the entire bridge, along with the land on the riverside and the bridgehead started to burn immediately like a pot of boiling oil being lit.

All the demonized puppets on the bridge started to burn at once. Like numerous burning torches, the bridge started to burn, including its steel frame and the land at the bridgehead.

This whip was as long as about 100 m. It was like a flame hell which was hotter than 2000 degree Celsius.

The airship flew over the bridge and rushed into the valley from where the demonized puppets were constantly pouring out. At the sight of the crowded demonized puppets, Zhang Tie drew in a cold breath. There were already tens of thousands of demonized puppets outside the valley. However, there were at least 70,000 to 80,000 demonized puppets left in the valley. Like a swarm of locusts which wanted to rush out of the valley to engulf people, all the demonized puppets were uttering weird sound towards the Idiots airship in the air with bloody eyes and twisted, grim looks.

"Kill these b*stards!" Zhang Tie roared in the command module.

"Release..."

...

"Release..."

...

"Release..."

After throwing 7 groups of white phosphorous gel bombs, the entire valley started to blaze. So many demonized puppets were burned and started to wail. They wanted to die out the flames on themselves by rolling on the ground; however, they could hardly make that in such a narrow valley. Additionally, their fats and carbohydrates were burned. They just ran around which easily burned those weeds and shrubs in the valley. As a result, the entire valley was covered with rising flames.

Demonized puppets had super great vitality. Even though they were burned, they could not turn into ashes at once. Neither would they die at once; however, all the demonized puppets lost their

fighting strength immediately. In such a high temperature, their eyes were destroyed at once.

The puppet worms occupied the brains of the demonized puppets. They had no feeling about the common physical trauma on demonized puppets; however, they had sharper sensitiveness about temperature than normal people. Therefore, they could not bear high temperature.

After losing their visual senses, the burning demonized puppets started to collided fiercely on the bridge and in the valley. Only after a few minutes, before their bodies turned into ashes, they had already fallen on the ground and died as their heads had been well cooked. Even though they had died, their bodies were still burning.

Many demonized puppets were forced to jump into the torrents by the high temperature and the flames. As a result, they were flushed away. It was hard to say how many of them could survive till the end.

The human troop on the other end of the bridge were also forced back about 100 m. After killing those demonized puppets who had reached this end of the bridge, everyone cheered up at the sight of the airship coming back after making a circle in the air...

"Boom..." in the fierce flames, the steel frame turned soft. Some parts of it became liquefied iron together with its steel wires. The bridge then collapsed...

...

Chapter 554: The Preliminary Water-Proof Body

Zhang Tie was greatly shocked by the Idiots' first attack towards the ground. The airship threw 24 white phosphorous gel bombs for 8 times, 3 in each time. While the casualty of the crew member was zero, the achievement was great as they killed at least 40,000 demonized puppets, destroyed the iron bridge and successfully protected that human troop and those women and kids.

It also benefited from the terrain. If it was another terrain, the demonized puppets would have greater space to move; if so, the 24 white phosphorous gel bombs would not have such a great impact. However, the most important factor for the triumph of this battle was the overwhelming air domination on Zhang Tie's side that he felt for the first time.

If not on the real battlefield, you would never know the importance of air domination. After this experience, Zhang Tie had a clear recognition of the concept of air domination.

What was air domination? To put it simply, I can beat you; yet you cannot beat me; I will beat you whenever I want. You cannot defend my attack at all. After beating you, I will leave; however, you cannot catch up with me. When you and your enemy were both fighting on the ground, it was a two-dimensional battle; however, when you were in the air and your enemy was on the ground, you would have an air domination.

All the members of the Idiots became excited about such a great triumph. Since they boarded on the airship, they had determined to give a fierce blow to the demons. This battle alone had made every one of them felt it a worthwhile trip. In the words of the first mate, this battle was already fruitful for the battle airship. If it was in a troop, after such a battle, each one of them would be awarded a medal.

Although they were not awarded medals on the Idiots, after this battle, all of them started to believe that the name "Idiots" brought luck to this airship.

If Zhang Tie didn't want to take a look at Oris or determined to join the ground battle, they would not have such a great achievement. Crew members of airship and boatmen were the most superstitious groups; as long as their captain could bring luck and victory to the airship, even though the captain had no idea about command, they could also gain the sincere respect from the crew members and the boatmen.

The human soldiers on the ground were showing their respect to the airship cheerily. Someone sent light signals towards the airship by facing the shiny metal mirrors on their armors towards the sunshine.

"Captain, the ground troop is extending their gratitude to us. They're an infantry brigade being affiliated to the human allied forces against demons in this region. They are inquiring about our designation and want to invite us to their base!" a signal officer soon translated the signals launched from the ground and told Zhang Tie loudly.

"Thanks for their good intention. Tell them, our airship is the private force of Huaiyuan Prefecture, Jinyun Country. We're now heading for Selnes Theater of Operations to give a cool blow to the demons. Good luck to them!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Soon after the light signals were launched downside, another group of signals arrived from the ground.

"They said 'bon voyage'."

"Let's go!"

After the airship made a circle above the battlefield, it left this place for the north. After this battle, Zhang Tie felt that the morale rose across the command module.

"Captain, do you think we can have a good meal as a reward?" the first mate asked Zhang Tie.

"Hmm, tell the cooks to make a good meal for us. Each one could have a cup of fruit wine in the evening. After the dinner is cooked well, you can just eat it. Don't call me unless there's something important. I will cultivate back in my room! When in an emergency, if I don't make any response to you, that means I've closed my senses and could not be bothered. In that case, you can deal with that at your discretion."

"Yes, sir!"

After nodding to them, Zhang Tie left the command module and returned to his exclusive room. On the way back to his own room, all the crew members who met Zhang Tie showed more respect to Zhang Tie.

The captain's room was the most luxurious and spacious one in the airship. The entire room covered more than 30 square meters. Only this room was matched with an independent set of bathing equipment across the battle airship. Only Zhang Tie was qualified to take a bath in the airship. This was one of the captain's privileges.

After entering the room, Zhang Tie locked it from inside. Closely after that, he entered Castle of Black Iron.

After 3 years, too much water was absorbed in the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron from the subterranean stream. As a result, Heller expanded the territory from less than 1 square km to almost 100 square km. When Zhang Tie entered it, he felt like entering another vast world.

The small tree was still in the center; however, with the help of the increasing number of aura value, many woods around the small tree had been growing very high. Some woods, especially those oaks and parasols crowns were even higher than 10 m or dozens of meters in height. The tidy vineyard, cherry garden and

orchards made Zhang Tie pleasant and brought Zhang Tie a sense of achievement.

After remembering the window of basic tributes that he had not checked for a long time, Zhang Tie clicked it casually while a semi-transparent dialogue box appeared in front of his eyes.

Castle of Black Iron:

——Length: 13 krusa

——Width: 13 krusa

——Aura value: 4785189

——Merit value: 793176

——Basic energy storage: 8631473

——Special output:

Animal: No. 1 earthworm, No. 1 bee

Plants: No. 1 potato, No. 1 sand buckthorn, No. 1 grape, No. 1 rice, No. 1 pumpkin, No. 1 wheat.

Microorganism: Essential energy reiki yeast

Zhang Tie felt that he had never been so rich before when he read the dialogue box. Besides the greatly expanded area of Castle of Black Iron and those mutated animals and plants, even the aura value and the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron had already reached the millions.

Starting from the essential energy reiki yeast, Zhang Tie named all the mutated living beings in the laziest way. Those living beings would be named according to the times that they had mutated; namely, those being mutated for the first time would be named as No. 1..., those being mutated for the second time would be named as No. 2...; if many sorts of mutation were completed at the same time, the living beings would be named as No. 2.1... or No. 2.2...etc.. Although such as naming method lacked aesthetics, it was very easy and clearly understandable.

In the 3 years during which Zhang Tie fell asleep, the bee, grape, rice, pumpkin and wheat in the Castle of Black Iron had completed one round of mutation. After the mutation, these living beings were very suitable to the environment and more productive. According to Heller, the mutated ones are wholly-new living beings with better traits.

Although these varieties were not available at the present, Zhang Tie always felt that they would play a big role in the future for sure.

After closing the basic attributes panel of Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie walked towards the small tree. Among those fruits on the small tree, Zhang Tie indeed caught sight of the trouble-reappearance situation about the latest battle and that fruit of redemption which had been hanging there for a long time——gratitude from sandscale fish.

Zhang Tie put his hand on the fruit and was instantly startled by those words below this fruits.

——Fruit of Redemption——gratitude from sandscale fish. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality would gradually decline.

——With this fruit, Castle Lord could improve his cold-resistance by 672% in water and chilly environment and sensitiveness to water flow by 2172%

——This fruit has been well ripe. With it, your cold-resistance and water flow sensitiveness would reach its upper limit by setting free sandscale fish.

——With this fruit, Castle Lord would increase his cold-resistance in water and the chilly environment by 20 times and water flow sensitiveness by 35 times. Some of your DNAs being related to this would be completely activated.

——This time, your body would promote to the preliminary water-proof body.

——The effects of a preliminary water-proof body are as follows:

1. Castle Lord could move freely and have 15% more fighting strength in water; besides, you can dive 20% deeper than before.

2. In the hypoxic environment, Castle Lord could stay 50% longer than before.

3. The gratitude of sandscale fish brings you a nice preliminary water-proof body. As long as you don't attack aquatic living beings below LV 9 on purpose, they would not attack you on purpose in any condition. Besides, aquatic living beings above LV 9 would be less hostile to you.

4. With the preliminary water-proof body, the possibility for you to drive all the aquatic living beings with animal controlling skill would increase by 10%.

Reading this message, Zhang Tie became thrilled. Closely after that, he picked off this fruit and engulfed it quickly. After digesting it in more than 2 hours, Zhang Tie could sense an obvious change in his body.

In such a non-water environment, Zhang Tie became more sensitive to moisture in the air. Even if he closed his eyes, he could still sense the brook being not far from that small tree. What an amazing feeling!

Besides being more sensitive to the moisture in the air, Zhang Tie also became more sensitive to the air flow beside him. After all, water and air were liquid to a certain degree. Besides being different in density, they were similar to each other on many properties. Now that Zhang Tie could have a clear sense of water flow in water, he could also have a sharp sense about airflow, even the latter sense was not more sensitive than the prior one.

This sensitive perception about air flow was what Zhang Tie

required the most.

After tasting the effect of the preliminary water-proof body with his eyes closed, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and found that Heller had been standing in front of him.

"Ah, Heller, when did you come here?"

"When you were digesting that fruit of redemption, my lord!"

Zhang Tie then asked Heller, "Can you tell me whether I will still have other fruits of redemption or not if I set free more sandscale fish after eating this fruit?"

"Each species could only provide you a limited number of fruits of redemption, my lord. This upper limit is also the limit of some species on improving your body!" Heller added, "Although you will have no fruit of redemption but if you keep setting free sandscale fish, you could still have merit values. Additionally, the more sandscale fish you set free, the more merit values you will have and less possibility of your water-proof body being attacked by aquatic living beings above LV 9!"

"Why?"

"This fits the mysterious karma. It could be hardly explained. You can think of the reason why humans hate demons. It's because demons have killed too many people and brought too many disasters to humans. Conversely, the more aquarium creatures you save and the more sandscale fish you set free, the more acceptable you will be in the eyes of those aquarium creatures!"

Zhang Tie nodded, "Whether do I need to set free other marine organisms to promote my preliminary water-proof body to medium water-proof body?"

"Yes, you need to set free more senior aquarium organisms to promote to the medium water-proof body. Of course, before you promote to the preliminary water-proof body, you can still gain the fruits of redemption of other living beings. Those fruits of

redemption will also bring you some new abilities!"

Zhang Tie nodded. "As my family members would soon leave Huaiyuan Prefecture with Linda, Beverly, Fiona and the other people in Jinwu Castle, I will not consider setting free other marine organisms until they settle down in Eastern Continent. Additionally, I need a chance to explain it to others. If I did it too obviously, it would arouse others' attention. If so, I could not solve the problem with money."

After they settled down in Eastern Continent, according to Zhang Tie's arrangement before leaving Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie wanted Paul to help him set free golden uangs. After losing Seven-Strength Fruits, Zhang Tie had to find a method to improve his strength rapidly. Because strength was the most powerful and effective weapon for a fighter. Many times, the other abilities could only be auxiliary to one's strength. For instance, although this preliminary water-proof body was sharp, Zhang Tie didn't live in water. If he met a powerhouse who was many levels higher than him, he might have no chance to use this talent at all.

Therefore, fighting strength was the most important factor for a fighter.

Zhang Tie really expected to taste the fruit of redemption brought by golden uangs, the king of strength in the kingdom of animals.

"After killing a squad of iron-armored demons last time, besides a trouble-reappearance fruit, I gained nothing else on the small tree." Zhang Tie immediately thought about this when he remembered about the fruit of plunder after killing that shadow demon Abyan.

"Aww, I remember that I killed over 10 iron-armored demons last time. Why didn't I have a fruit of plunder as a reward?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"You could only gain the fruit of plunder from shadow demon.

It's unique!"

"What kind of fruit can I obtain from killing other demons?"

"Hehe, this question has already surpassed my access. Before the appearance of the fruits, I could not tell you what fruits would be born on the small tree. Because that might lead you onto a very dangerous route only for fruits at any price. We have to follow the natural law. I could only tell you that you will also get a reward by killing other demons; however, the reward has not met the condition of its manifestation!"

"I know!" Zhang Tie nodded as he picked off the trouble-reappearance fruit and ate it. After digesting it rapidly, he left Castle of Black Iron.

...

When Zhang Tie reappeared in his captain's room, nobody in the airship realized that Zhang Tie had improved his ability after just 2 hours.

Cheers faintly drifted from outside the door. This was the first time that Zhang Tie allowed the crew members to drink since they set off. Although each one only had a small cup of drink, the meritorious deed and the grand supper today made everyone excited.

Zhang Tie sat back on his bed with his legs crossed. After that, he activated that trouble-reappearance situation of the fight on the airship and entered it.

...

In the trouble-reappearance situation...

Zhang Tie appeared in the command module of the airship. Looking down from the command module, Zhang Tie found that most of the dense demonized puppets had disappeared, except for a couple of demonized puppets who were watching the airship with a confused look. They wanted to attack the airship; however, they

didn't know how; therefore, they could only run here and there after the shadow of the airship.

This trouble-reappearance situation had other meanings for Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie didn't activate all the demonized puppets on the ground. He just activated a couple of them as his prop.

There was nobody in the command module of the trouble-reappearance situation. Zhang Tie came to the position of the helmsman and sat down there. After that, he held the rudder of the airship and forcefully pulled it up. As a result, the huge fury-level airship which was suspending over 400 m high in the sky raised its head and shot up at once.

In a few minutes, when the Idiots reached thousands of meters high, Zhang Tie leveled his rudder and left the command module.

Along the direction of the command module, Zhang Tie came to the glider throwing compartment at the bottom of the airship.

In the glider throwing compartment, a glider whose wingspan was greater than 12 m was standing on the slideway. Its spacious wings and streamlined body were full of aesthetic perception. Its body made of the same material of the airship's air sac protective armor was firm, durable and extremely light. The exterior shape of this glider was very close to the aircraft of humans before the Catastrophe.

After glancing at that glider, Zhang Tie opened the safe buckle of the hatch door of the glider throwing compartment. After that, he checked the connections between the glider and the slideway.

After checking it, Zhang Tie drew in a deep breath and jumped into the cockpit of the glider rapidly. He then put on his goggles, wind-proof hat and gloves. He looked at those operating levers, pedals, buttons and bars in the cockpit as he started to recall the details of the manipulation books about the glider that he had read these couple of days. After that, he rubbed his hands.

"Hopefully, I will not die too miserably on the first attempt!" Zhang Tie muttered as he put down an operating lever on his left hand.

The moment he put down the operating lever did Zhang Tie feel the wild wind. After the hatch door opened, the glider slid off the airship at once...

When the glider slid off the airship, Zhang Tie's heart was suspended for a couple of seconds. Closely after that, he found that the glider didn't keep descending; instead, it opened its wings after leaving the airship for over 20 m...

Zhang Tie exclaimed in the glider, "Wooh!"

Only after ten more minutes, the glider spiraled out of its control and started to dive towards the ground. Zhang Tie quickly undid his safe buckle as he took out a metal mushroom from the cockpit. He then forcefully pressed down a button on the metal mushroom...

Umbrella pieces of the rotachute instantly extended in the air and drew Zhang Tie out of the descending glider...

The first close touch between Zhang Tie, glider and the rotachute came to an end by then...

...

Only after 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had descended in a glider from the throwing compartment of the Idiots once again...

This time, Zhang Tie stood over 30 minutes in the air...

...

Zhang Tie stayed two hours in the air for the 3rd time...

...

In the 4th time, Zhang Tie didn't use his rotachute any longer...

...

In the 5th time, Zhang Tie started to play tricks with his glider in the air...

This indicated the effect of the trouble-reappearance situation. Everything was completely the reappearance of that in the reality. In such a case, Zhang Tie learned how to drive a glider in only half a day.

After constantly audacious attempts at the cost of his life and glider for a few times, Zhang Tie's driving skills improved rapidly...

On the 2nd day, Zhang Tie's driving skills had almost caught up with that of professional drivers...

On the 3rd day, Zhang Tie could already make all sorts of risky movements with his glider within 2 m of the airship.

On the 4th day, Zhang Tie played the hide-and-seek game with a swarm of iron-beak ibises in his glider. As he drove the glider by one hand, he constantly triggered his palm bolts by another hand. With the constant sonic booms, the iron-beak ibises that were chasing after the glider turned into blood mist. It was completely a no-fly zone within 400 m of the glider...

...

On the 6th day, after over one month, the Idiots finally arrived at the Selnes Theater of Operations...

Chapter 555: Military Exploits Rankings

Zhang Tie arrived at the Crystal Battle Fortress on April 14th. As the frontline base of Jinyun Country in Selnes Theater of Operations, the Idiots had to register here before being authorized to participate in the action in the Selnes Theater of Operations and gain the air territory access right.

According to relevant orders in the theater of operations, the Idiots was freer than regular troops. However, it should also follow the order of the airship troop of Jinyun Country. When necessary, the military of Jinyun Country was entitled to take over the command of the Idiots.

Without the supply and maintenance of the airship base on the ground, the airships in the air would not be sustainable. If they wanted to enjoy the ground services, of course, they had to carry the corresponding commitment and responsibilities. Although the Idiots was voluntary, its rights and obligations were on an equal footing. Zhang Tie didn't oppose the obligations that they had to take. As Lan Yunxi was the commander of the airship troop of Jinyun Country, Zhang Tie could accept that the Idiots was under her control. He didn't believe that Lan Yunxi would find him trouble.

On one hand, Zhang Tie was here for Lan Yunxi; on the other hand, as a human fighter, Zhang Tie thought that he should do something for his family members, friends and many commoners.

If the demons were resisted here for one more day, those people behind the frontline would have one more day to evacuate. If some more demons were killed here, fewer people would die in the future.

This was each human fighter's sacred mission and responsibility.

Additionally, because of the relationship between Zhang Tie and Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie knew that he had to fight

demons in Waii Sub-Continent to the death. He'd better face demons himself and be familiar with the battle with demons instead of being waiting for demons to arrive at Ice and Snow Wilderness. In such a battle, he could gain more marvelous fruits and grow powerful quickly.

Each people were doomed to face holy war. As a human, he had no other choice but to face demons dauntlessly.

Selnes Theater of Operations was filled with the smoke of white phosphorous gel bombs. The moment Zhang Tie got off the airship and landed on the airship base did he realize that he was surrounded by others.

A lot of ground crew members were discussing about the Idiots. They were curious about the name and the status of Idiots.

"Is that you?" seeing Zhang Tie getting off the airship, a young Chinese military officer ranked major became stunned, "You came back?"

Zhang Tie didn't know his name; however, he had an impression on him in the command module of Lan Yunxi's airship one month ago. This guy was also one of the pursuers of Lan Yunxi. "I don't care which clan do you belong to. Now that you dare to content with me for Lan Yunxi, I will put you under my feet this time."

"Of course it's me!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "I wonder how many wing demons have you killed over the past month?"

"More or less. Some killed over 10, I also killed 3!" that major watched Zhang Tie with a smile, "It's nice to see you back. If you didn't come back, we would not know who's the final winner. If you cannot kill even one wing demon, we'll have to repeat the scene like before. That would be boring!"

"Over 10? That's not bad!" Zhang Tie smacked his lips, "I wonder how do you count, senior brother apprentice? What if someone registered more than he had killed?"

"It' simple. Each of us has prepared for an agreement on the vow of soul and bloodline. After signing that agreement, if someone told a lie, he would suffer from being engulfed himself!"

"The agreement on the vow of soul and bloodline?" Zhang Tie became slightly shocked. When he attended the survival training in the wildwolf valley at the beginning, he even used this to frighten others. Actually, Zhang Tie didn't even have a chance to see the real agreement on the vow of soul and bloodline by now. On the other hand, Zhang Tie also sighed with emotions inside, "What elites from the six big clans of Jinyun Country! They dared to use the agreement on the vow of soul and bloodline for this bet. There are so many people who want to pursue Lan Yunxi. Does it mean that each of them has to consume at least one piece of the agreement on vow of soul and bloodline?"

"Senior brother apprentice, can you tell me where did you get the agreement on the vow of soul and bloodline from?" Zhang Tie asked modestly.

That major replied with a faint smile, "Don't you know that as long as the youth elites of the 6 big clans in the Crystal Battle Fortress are above LV 9, they can ask for a piece of agreement on vow of soul and bloodline from the Lan elder in the Crystal Battle Fortress and join the elites military exploits ranking in the fortress."

Zhang Tie was shocked inside as he instinctively felt that something had been out of his expectation. In the beginning, he was just making a bet with those guys who wanted to pursue Lan Yunxi, it was out of his imagination that even the clan elder in the Crystal Battle Fortress was involved in.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't know that the bet between him and those people had been spread across the Crystal Battle Fortress since he left there. Once being focused by too many people, many things would change in nature and meaning.

After that bet was known by too many people and the Lan elder touched those people of the big clans in Jinyun Country, the bet turned into a wrestle on ranking between young elites at the Selnes Theater of Operations. All the clan rulers would like to have their young elites contend with those of other clans.

Additionally, such a match on military exploits could easily trigger their moral and braveness. Therefore, under the acquiescence of the clan rulers and the push of someone, the bet had turned into a wrestle between young elites of the 6 clans at Selnes Theatre of Operations. Besides those guys that Zhang Tie met in the command module, more people joined it. As a result, this match carried a special meaning.

The strong ones would always be stronger. Those with excellent performance in this match, as long as they survived to the end, would definitely be the pillar of each clan and represent the top fighting strength and ability among the younger generation of each clan. Therefore, this wrestle caught the attention of many people as it faintly seemed like a rehearsal of the ranking of the 6 clans in Jinyun Country in the future.

Under such a background, it's too easy for the 6 clans to fetch some pieces of agreements on the vow of soul and bloodline in order to authenticate whether someone was telling a lie or not.

At this moment, nobody talked about that bet anymore; however, all the attendants bore it deep in mind. Within 3 months, those whose rankings were below Zhang Tie would feel embarrassed to appear in front of Lan Yunxi anymore.

In the Crystal Battle Fortress composed of 6 battle fortresses, Zhang Tie caught sight of an over 10-m high steel frame, on the top of which were three words welded by steel——Military Exploits Rankings.

Names and military exploits were below the Military Exploits Rankings. Names were written on iron plates, which were inserted

in the grooves of the steel frame and could be easily taken out of there. On the left of the grooves were the rankings of military exploits from high to low.

Behind those names were four figures. The first figure was that person's level; the second figure was the number of enemies that he had killed in the air; the third figure was the number of enemies that he had killed on the ground; the fourth figure was the total scores.

There was a notice board on scoring rules on one side. A LV 9 iron-armored demon counted 1 point; a LV 9 wing demon counted 6 points; with one level higher, the score would rise by 5 times; namely, a LV 10 iron-armored demon counted 5 points while a LV 10 wing demon counted 30 points and so on.

From this rankings, Zhang Tie could see how tricky was wing demons and humans' hatred towards wing demons. It was definitely more difficult to kill a LV 9 wing demon than a LV 10 iron-armored demon.

The Military Exploits Rankings were full of wildness and bloody smell. Undoubtedly, Lan Yunxi ranked first. After a glance, Zhang Tie knew that Lan Yunxi had killed 23 wing demons in the past one month and gained 186 points. From her score, Zhang Tie knew that she had killed 2 LV 10 wing demons and 21 LV 9 wing demons.

The one closely below Lan Yunxi was called Ou Hongmeng, whom Zhang Tie had not heard of before. That guy killed 18 wing demons and gained 132 points.

The one on the 3rd place called Shi Zhongyu, who gained 112 points in total.

The one on the 4th place was very familiar to Zhang Tie, Zhang Wumu. He didn't kill any wing demon; however, he killed 87 iron-armored demons and gained 107 points.

Dantai Yuya and Wang Hu, whom Zhang Tie met in the

command module one month ago were also in top 100, however, their ranks were both below 30.

Senior brother apprentice Liu Xi, whom Zhang Tie was familiar with was also on the top 100. He ranked 98th, 11 points in total.

Chapter 556: Signing the Agreement

According to the ranking rules, if two people had the same points, the one with the lower level would have a prior rank; if they had the same level, the one who gained the military exploits first would have a prior rank.

Although more than 100 people had joined this match, only top 100 were qualified to appear on the Military Exploits Rankings as the most attractive ones among the younger generation of Jinyun Country.

The points on the Military Exploits Rankings made many people's blood boiled. This was indeed inspiring and hopeful. However, Zhang Tie knew that very few countries and battle fortresses were qualified to have such a Military Exploits Rankings across the Selnes Theater of Operations.

Even if the top elites of the younger generation of the 6 big clans of Jinyun Country whose fighting strength were the best in the Waii Sub-Continent could only have such military exploits, those troops of other countries and those alleged elites could hardly achieve such military exploits.

Additionally, it was impossible to gain such military exploits at no cost.

When Zhang Tie watched the Military Exploits Rankings, two soldiers walked towards him. They climbed on the steel frame and drew out of an iron plate on the 67th place. After that, they raised one place for all the iron plates below it by rocking the chains on the steel frame.

"What's happening?" Zhang Tie asked the two soldiers.

The two soldiers glanced at Zhang Tie gloomily before replying, "This man has died. He was sent here last night with heavy wounds and in the end, he passed away!"

When the two soldiers climbed off the steel frame, one of them took out an iron plate with a wholly-new name and put it in the vacancy on the 100th place at the bottom of the Military Exploits Rankings.

That major who took Zhang Tie in also sighed silently, "Let's go, I will take you to the Lan elder!"

...

In the room on the highest floor of the Lan's battle fortress, Zhang Tie met the Lan elder.

The room was filled with a very comfortable sandalwood flavor. Zhang Tie looked at the furnishings in the room and found that the flavor was coming from the Lan elder. He then became slightly shocked. Zhang Tie could identify that the flavor was not from the perfumed satchel or the spice that Lan elder carried but from his body. Zhang Tie didn't know what this flavor indicated; however, he knew it was special.

As an elder of the 6 big clans, this Lan elder was at least a knight. However, Zhang Tie didn't feel being overwhelmed like how he felt in front of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace; instead, he felt being relaxed.

Zhang Tie knew that it was a special feeling; however, he could not control it. He could not even be alert in front of the elder, not to mention to fight him.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside...

"Is this the power of a knight? It's so weird. It could influence one's mentality unconsciously."

"Lan elder, I'm Zhang Tie from Huaiyuan Palace!" Zhang Tie showed his courtesy to this terrifying man in the Crystal Battle Fortress.

"You're Zhang Tie?" the Lan elder, who had a grizzled mustache and fine, smooth face like that of a baby, glanced at Zhang Tie as

he asked faintly. Zhang Tie could not identify his real age.

Zhang Tie nodded. It seemed that this elder had already heard about him.

"It's so weird. Given your qi, you've already entered LV 9 for a few days, why don't you make any progress?" Lan elder slightly frowned.

Having not expected that his current situation was identified by the elder at once, Zhang Tie slightly swallowed his saliva as he looked a bit embarrassed, "Hmm, when I promoted to LV 9, I was cultivating outside Jinyun Country. Therefore, I had no time to learn how to cultivate after LV 9. After returning to Huaiyuan Prefecture, I exited Hidden Dragon Palace due to some reason. Therefore, I've not learned how to cultivate after LV 9. That's why I could only join the battle here in the status of a volunteer..."

"Aww!" Lan elder glanced at Zhang Tie; however, he didn't ask Zhang Tie why he exited Hidden Dragon Palace; instead, he asked after a few seconds, "Do you also want to enter the Military Exploits Rankings?"

"It's caused by me. As my senior brother apprentices are fighting demons bravely in the theater of operations, how could I hide behind the back!"

Lan elder nodded. He seemed being satisfied with Zhang Tie's reply. After that, he waved his hand towards a person and have him bring an agreement of vow on soul and bloodline.

This was Zhang Tie's first time to see the agreement of vow on soul and bloodline. It was made of a special leather with complex grains and dun oath on the vow of soul and bloodline written by fresh blood.

Before arriving here, Zhang Tie had been told how to use it. Therefore, after taking over the agreement, he instantly opened a wound on his finger with a dagger and wrote down his name with

his fresh blood. After that, he pressed the agreement by his hand and started to vow.

"I, Zhang Tie, swear with my soul and bloodline. From now on, I will honestly report my military exploits in Selnes Theater of Operations. I will never fabricate my military exploits. If I hid something or told a lie, I would like to accept the punishment of the vow of soul and bloodline!"

After reading the oath, Zhang Tie felt an exotic spiritual energy entering in his body from the agreement in his hand, slightly shocking the swirl of spiritual energy in his mind.

Before the Catastrophe, humans had already mastered very hi-tech lie-detecting means. Although Zhang Tie didn't know about the principle of the agreement of vow on soul and bloodline, he felt it was very marvelous.

"Is that okay?"

"Okay!" Lan elder nodded.

"May I know the result of telling a lie?"

"Of course you will be weakened by the force of agreement of vow on soul and bloodline. Although you would not lose your life, you would feel worse than losing your life. Your face would turn pitch dark. Meanwhile, you would smell stinky. This phenomenon would last for many years. Therefore, young man, you'd better not try it. Unless you're already above LV 14, you're affected by the power of this agreement."

"Thanks, Lan elder!"

"You're welcome. Work hard. Selnes Theater of Operations is a furnace. Young men who could show his value in this furnace will have a bright future. Each of the 6 big clans in Jinyun Country has presented some nice items. Those young men in top 18 of the Military Exploits Rankings might gain one or several of them. Try your best for that!" Lan elder waved his hand, allowing Zhang Tie

to leave...

...

After walking out of the Lan elder's room, Zhang Tie was still a bit thrilled. He had not imagined that those with good performance could be rewarded with some items from the 6 big clans. Needless to say, the items gifted by the 6 big clans were good items for sure.

"No matter what, I have to push in at least top 18. I will get one gift at least!" Zhang Tie became spirited.

There was a registration desk about military exploits below the Lan's battle fortress. Those young men who had signed the agreement of the vow on soul and bloodline could report their military exploits here at any time. After that, the personnel in the military exploits registration center would adjust the rankings according to the performance of those young fighters.

When Zhang Tie came out of the Lan's battle fortress, he saw some guys registering there.

...

"Wang Sheng, two LV 9 iron-armored demons, 2 points..."

"Lan Yunguang, one LV 9 iron-armored demon, 1 point..."

"Dantai Qingqing, one LV 9 wing demon, one LV 10 iron-armored demon, four LV 9 iron-armored demons, 15 points..."

After hearing that a woman killed a wing demon, Zhang Tie turned around and watched those people, one of them felt being gazed. When she turned around and saw Zhang Tie at the same time.

That woman was over 20 years old. She was tall with long legs, raised butts and bloody hair. She might have used disguising medicament on her hair. Feeling a bit rebellious, she wore a brilliant black armor and carried two wheel-shaped weapons. She

had plump and smooth lips. There was even a beauty mark [1] below her lower lip. What a beautiful, sexy woman! However, her eyes corners looked a bit terrifying as it looked like a thorny rose.

That woman started to glance at Zhang Tie's militiaman's uniform from his head to toe. After that, she turned back.

"Zhang Tie?" one guy glanced at Zhang Tie as he instantly frowned.

"Senior brother Ou, what a coincidence! I met you again!" Zhang Tie greeted with a smile.

"Haha, what a coincidence!" Ou Hongyu frowned and then relieved at once as he walked towards Zhang Tie, "Junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie, since you left the Crystal Battle Fortress that day, I thought you'd not dare to come back after you returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

Seeing Ou Hongyu greeting Zhang Tie, the other people also walked towards here.

Of course, Zhang Tie could identify that Ou Hongyu was satirizing him. As he was screwed up by Zhang Tie in the command module of Lan Yunxi's airship, Zhang Tie didn't believe that Ou Hongyu didn't hate him...

Chapter 557: The Final Preparation

Seeing Ou Hongyu walking towards him, Zhang Tie could feel his hatred. The animosity was doomed to form between them.

"F*ck" Zhang Tie swore inside, "Who let you be a disgusting poser by ruining my image? You deserve that!" Zhang Tie never really care about such an enemy. "This father will accompany you to play whatever you want."

"Haha...even now senior brother apprentice Ou was desiring for cleaning demons for the sake of the benefit of the homeland, how could this junior brother apprentice hide behind the back of the theater of operations?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Ou Hongyu's eyes corners twitched as he frowned immediately. However, it was not good for him to lose his dignity in such a battle. Therefore, Ou Hongyu recovered his composure. He even revealed a smile like Zhang Tie was really praising him, "Thanks, thanks, that's how heroes should act! At this moment, all the senior brothers and sisters in the theater of operations were doing better than me. As for you, junior brother apprentice, how many wing demons have you killed after you disappear one month?"

"Not yet!"

"What about iron-armored demons?"

"Not yet!"

Ou Hongyu then smiled as he started to introduce Zhang Tie to those beside him, "This is the junior brother apprentice of senior sister apprentice Lan Yunxi. He made a bet with us at the beginning; however, after one month, junior brother Zhang still have not gained a point at all except for returning to Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

After hearing Ou Hongyu's introduction, although those beside

him didn't say anything, they had already revealed an obvious disdainful look.

Zhang Tie looked as calm as before. He just replied with a smile, "There're two months left."

"Hahaha..." Ou Hongyu burst out into laughter, "It seems that junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie is very confident. If so, I will congratulate you to have a good achievement as soon as possible. Oh, I forgot when you joined the militia of Jinyun Country. This uniform is too eye-catching in the Crystal Battle Fortress. Junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie's behavior is really amazing!"

Ou Hongyu meant nothing but that Zhang Tie was currying favor by claptrap. It was indeed a bit exaggerating for one coming from Hidden Dragon Palace to be a militia. That would be a great waste! Therefore, Ou Hongyu knew that Zhang Tie put on the militia's uniform himself instead of being forced by the ruler of Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie shrugged, "Senior brother apprentice Ou, you're still that talkative. But the contest between men finally relies on fighting strength and power, instead of eloquence, am I right? It's meaningless for us to argue about that. Let's just match on the Military Exploits Rankings. I hope to see your name in top 18, senior brother apprentice Ou."

Ou Hongyu was chocked at once. Zhang Tie then directly left...

The woman called Dantai Qingqing gazed at Zhang Tie's back with glittering eyes.

...

"What's this guy's level?" one person beside Ou Honyu asked after Zhang Tie left.

"Zhang Tie, LV 9..." the one replied was not Ou Hongyu, but from the Military Exploits Registration Center on one side. They turned around and found a second lieutenant was taking out an iron plate

and reading it while he painted Zhang Tie's name and level on the iron plate tidily. It seemed that Zhang Tie had just completed his official registration.

"F*ck, I thought he was at least a battle master. He's too presumptuous!"

"If a LV 9 guy really wants to join the demon-killing squad, he could at most survive 2 months in the battlefield!" another person ridiculed as he didn't believe in that a LV 9 guy could play any trick in the Crystal Battle Fortress with so many powerhouses. In other places, a LV 9 fighter was qualified to be arrogant; however, in the Crystal Battle Fortress, it was...

"Lan Yunxi's junior brother apprentice looks fresh and tender!" Dantai Qingqing uttered which shocked all the men at once, "Fresh and tender? what does this woman want?"

"Qingqing, you're wrong!" Ou Hongyu forced a smile, "This guy had already over 50 lovers at the age of 16, four years ago. He's the Love Affairs Number One in Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Ah, 16 years old 4 years ago? He is 20 years old now?" Dantai Qingqing blinked her eyes.

"Nice!"

"Ah, not only fresh and tender, he's also good at skin maintenance. He still looks like 16 years old..." Dantai(Surname) Qingqing(given name) exclaimed out of excitement.

After hearing her words, all the men cried loudly inside, "Elder sister, we're also not old. We're just a bit elder than 20..."

...

After completing a series of procedures of registration for the Idiots in the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie received a flight chart in Selnes Theater of Operations. After that, he left the Crystal Battle Fortress. Based on Zhang Tie's current status as a nongovernmental volunteer, he could not even have a room in the

Crystal Battle Fortress. He had to sleep in the airship Idiots.

When he returned to the airship base, it was almost dusk, Zhang Tie saw a first lieutenant who was responsible for ground service was talking with the first mate of the Idiots at the hatch door of the airship. The crew members were transporting various supplies into the airship by drawing hydraulic trailers.

"You can supplement anthracite, water, food and those common weapons in the airship base of the Crystal Battle Fortress; however, as we have to keep the supply of white phosphorous gel bombs for regular troops, we could not provide it for you!"

"Without white phosphorous gel bombs, this airship's effect in the sky would decline by $\frac{1}{3}$. We're striving for killing demons here. Do you want us to fight demons with empty hands or are you letting us be the target of demons? the first mate urged out of fury, "Or you want us to get its supply back in Jinyun Country?"

"I'm so sorry, the supply of white phosphorous gel bombs across the Selnes Theater of Operations are short. Each white phosphorous gel bomb is worth over 200 gold coins. In order to ensure the effectiveness of such a valuable military material, we cannot afford to supply you such military materials!"

After hearing this reply, the first mate shouted like being insulted, "Our crew members are all experienced. On the way here, we've killed tens of thousands of demonized puppets in the Holy Golden Orchid Empire with 24 white phosphorous gel bombs. Isn't it a good example for our high-efficient use of white phosphorous gel bomb?"

After hearing this, the first lieutenant didn't say anything; his look was just labeled with one word, "Liar". Killing tens of thousands of demonized puppets with 24 gel bombs? Such a military exploit was fruitful even in the Selnes Theater of Operations. Few airships could make that. How could he believe that an airship manipulated by volunteers could gain such

remarkable military exploits so easily?

The first mate's face turned red. He wanted to say something. However, Zhang Tie walked over there and slightly patted his shoulder.

"Captain..."

"Well, it's okay. I've heard that!" Zhang Tie comforted the first mate as he patted the first mate's shoulder. After that, he told that first lieutenant, "I'm very glad for everything that you've provided for the Idiots. Hard work, ground service brothers. The Idiots will not let you work in vain!"

The first lieutenant gave a solemn salute to Zhang Tie. After that, he nodded towards Zhang Tie and left.

"That's too excessive!" the first mate still grumbled.

"It's okay. Check the supply of the airship. You've been working so hard these days. Have a good rest tonight. We will show them our value tomorrow!"

The first mate nodded.

"How many white phosphorous gel bombs are left in our airship? I remember that we have more than 300 white phosphorous gel bombs before we set off, which was many times more than that in other fury-level airship. How did we use them up so quickly?"

The first mate scratched his head bashfully. After the first mate left far away, he told Zhang Tie with a cunning smile, "Erm...we didn't use them up. But there's an old Chinese saying that crying babies could always have breast milk. I was just thinking whether can we gain supply here after using up the white phosphorous gel bombs."

Zhang Tie replied with a weird smile.

...

Lan Yunxi left the Crystal Battle Fortress with her airship troop a

couple of days ago. This time, the airship troop from Jinyun Country under her leadership would coordinate with the left wing corps in Selnes Theater of Operations to complete a large-scale ground military action. It was estimated that she would not come back in 10-15 days. After acknowledging this situation, Zhang Tie didn't plan to wait in Crystal Battle Fortress; instead, he prepared to have a try with the Idiots on the battlefield tomorrow.

Big airship troop had their special mode of operations while a single airship had its own mode of operations. The former chose to charge at the enemy together while the latter chose to fight like guerrillas. As long as they could eliminate the demons and constantly decrease the number of regular demon corps, they could choose their mode of operations for free.

Back in the airship, Zhang Tie entered the trouble-reappearance situations where he challenged the shadow demon backroom for three times, crashed the squad of iron-armored demons on the railway for two times and played difficult flight movements for two hours by glider. Finally, he exited the trouble-reappearance situations.

Ou Hongyu could never believe what tortures Zhang Tie had experienced in the period between supper and sleeping time. Through such a constant cultivation, Zhang Tie's fighting strength and skills gradually improved.

After exiting the trouble-reappearance situations, Zhang Tie visualized mental arithmetic for an hour so as to supplement his spiritual energy. After that, he recited the Great Wilderness Sutra for over 20,000 times, amounting the times of the Great Wilderness Sutra to 670,000. After doing this, he went to bed...

The next morning at 10 am, the Idiots set off from the airship base of the Crystal Battle Fortress and headed for the northern region of Selnes which was under the control of demons...

...

Chapter 558: Flying Like an Eagle

The Idiots left the airship base of Crystal Battle Fortress in the bright and warm sunshine and kept going up. Only after 10 minutes, when the airship base became as tiny as an ant, the Idiots had already reached 7000 m high in the air. Additionally, it was over 50 km away from the airship base of Crystal Battle Fortress.

It meant that they had already entered the war zone of Selnes Theater of Operations and might encounter wing demons at any time. All the crew members of the Idiots were ready for the coming battle.

This height almost reached the maximal suspension height of 8,000 m of fury-level airships. From here, they could clearly see the exposed black coal mining area on Selnes Plain and the constant human defense line composed of trenches and battle fortresses.

The entire underground space of Selnes Plain was full of high-quality anthracite. The allied human forces chose this place as the first defense line against the demon corps. Besides, the terrain here was adaptable to the extension of mechanized human troops, what counted most was that the logistics of human corps faced the minimal stress here.

Wherever it was in the Selnes Plain, as long as you dug the ground, you would get high-quality anthracite, which could constantly provide a driving force for human battle fortresses, tanks, vehicles even airships.

Looking at the scarred black coal mining area over the plain, Zhang Tie instantly understood the intention of the headquarters of allied human forces. Height indeed determined one's vision.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie didn't want to talk about national affairs; instead, he was making the final preparation for this battle.

"After I leave here, keep the Idiots hovering in this area..." after sending the order, Zhang Tie drew a circle on the air map in the command module. It was a fan-shaped area 50-100 km in the north of the Crystal Battle Fortress. "If you encounter wing demons and could not resist their attack, I allow you to retreat towards the Crystal Battle Fortress. If I don't come back in 48 hours, you can retreat to the Crystal Battle Fortress; if you do not see me in two weeks, it means that something must have happened to me. You can decide whether to stay here or not by then. Additionally, you should hand the Idiots to the airship troop of Jinyun Country and have it continue to serve on the battlefield!"

Before it set off officially, Zhang Tie had to tell the crew members how to respond to various emergencies. As the situation on the battlefield varied every single second. Even a knight might encounter emergencies in Selnes Theater of Operations, not to mention Zhang Tie, a LV 9 fighter.

After hearing to Zhang Tie like he was telling his last words, all the crew members in the command module exchanged glances with each other before focusing on the first mate. After Zhang Tie left the airship by glider, the first mate commanded the airship on behalf of Zhang Tie.

The first mate watched Zhang Tie with an admirable and solemn look. Each crew member knew clearly what a high risk would Zhang Tie face by driving a glider in the Selnes Theater of Operations. It could be said that anyone who dared to drive a glider in Selnes Theater of Operations was like a member of dare-to-die corps. Even though they had just stayed in the Selnes Theater of Operations for one day, they had heard the nickname of the glider drivers in this theatre of operations——Air Vanguard.

This arm of services was known with the highest mortality. Its mortality was even greater than the vanguards in the corps on the ground. It was said that the drivers of gliders were selected by drawing lots in the airship troops across the theater of operations.

Nobody expected that Zhang Tie would drive a glider to kill wing demons. Therefore, they all had complex moods. Some crew members didn't believe that Zhang Tie would do that even now. To fight wing demons by glider? Even lunatic dared not think in this way. However, the captain of the Idiots would like to do such a crazy thing at once.

Nobody knew whether Zhang Tie was a lunatic or an idiot...

"Captain, before doing this, I suggest you fix your fly zone!" under the gaze of everyone, the first mate drew a triangular area outside the cruising area of the Idiots after thinking for a while and suggested on behalf of all the crew members, "If you can fly in this area, the Idiots could coordinate with you. This would be the safest way!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "I know. But you should know that the best protection for a bird is the sky, not the nest. I'm very confident about driving the glider and my fighting strength. Even if some emergency comes up, I believe that I can still go back to Crystal Battle Fortress safe and sound. You don't need to worry about me. What the Idiots should do is to survive itself in the wind and rain like a nest. Don't be blown off from the tree. I wish to see you when I come back. I hope you can still send me in the air when I want to give another blow to the demons! This is my nest in Selnes Theater of Operations, am I clear?"

"Clear!" the first mate took a deep breath, "Nobody would let you down in the Idiots!"

"Hmm, good luck to me!" Zhang Tie revealed with a big smile...

...

After a few minutes, all the available people in the Idiots had come to the glider throwing compartment at the bottom of the airship. After checking the glider very carefully, they let Zhang Tie sit in. Zhang Tie put on his flight suit under the sophisticated look of the crew members. After that, he sat in the cockpit of the glider

and nodded towards the crew members. At the same time, he erected his thumb towards them.

"Open the hatch door!"

After receiving the order of the first mate, some crew members quickly opened the hatch door.

When the hatch door was opened, a strong wind blew in. Zhang Tie just nodded towards those crew members before immediately ejecting out of the Idiots along the lead rail.

"Salute..." the first mate roared as all the crew members gave a salute to Zhang Tie.

...

When the glider ejected out of the airship, Zhang Tie felt returning to the ocean like a fish. The glider was like a javelin being thrown towards the water from the airship. The moment the glider left the airship, its moving speed had reached 150 km/h.

In only a few seconds, Zhang Tie felt the glider was like a fish in the ocean current as he stepped down the left pedal. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie pressed down the elevator by hand. Closely after that, the glider flew towards left as agile as a sea swallow. After flying hundreds of meters, Zhang Tie felt an ascending thermal current. He stepped down the right pedal and lifted the driving handle. The entire glider then started to rise in the thermal current. Under the amazing gaze of all the crew members of the Idiots, Zhang Tie drew a cool letter "U" around the airship. Finally, he reached above the air sacs of the airship and flew northward...

"How can he cut into the thermal current so fast and do such a cool movement?" A crew member watched Zhang Tie driving his glider around the airship while widely opening his mouth. Under Zhang Tie's manipulation, everyone in the throwing compartment felt that Zhang Tie was like a skilled racing driver who was driving a super sports car and moving swiftly on the highway around the

heavy truck "fury-level" airship.

"Erm, it might be a coincidence..." another one muttered.

The glider could be easily manipulated. For each crew member on the airship, it was like how a sailor drove a rubber dinghy. Each crew member knew how to drive a glider. Actually, everyone would know how to drive a glider by following this rule—the driving handle in the cockpit was used to ascend and descend while the pedals were used to control directions.

When you pulled back the driving handle, the elevator of the airship would wave upwards, causing the head of the glider incline upwards. When you pushed forward the driving handle, the elevator would wave downwards, causing the head of the glider incline downwards. When you pressed down the left pedal, the rudder would wave towards the left, causing the head of the glider incline towards left. When you pressed down the right pedal, the rudder would wave towards the right, causing the head of the glider incline towards the right. Even a kid could master the driving skills, not to mention adults.

However, it was also very difficult to manipulate the glider. As the driver could hardly judge the sorts of airflow and use them such as topographic dynamic updraft, cyclotron updraft, wave-sized updraft and heating power updraft which provided a driving force for the glider. Whether a driver could use these sorts of airflow was the only standard on whether he was qualified to drive a glider.

Those kinds of airflow were invisible. They could only be judged by one's practical experience and feeling. Therefore, one might only need 10 minutes to drive a glider; however, it might take him at least 10 years to combine his driving intention with those sorts of airflow.

Whether a person could apply airflow properly was the only standard of his driving ability. In front of this standard, the

difference between a newbie and a powerhouse was like that between a LV 0 soldier and a LV 10 strong fighter.

In this age, people usually used four data to measure one's driving skill on the glider, namely the longest air-staying time, the greatest flight distance, the recorded ascended height and the average speed of triangular routes.

In front of the above 4 data, the difference between a newbie and a powerhouse became remarkable.

The 4 data of a newbie was as follows: the longest air-staying time was about half an hour; the greatest flight distance was within 40 km; the recorded ascended height was lower than 1000 m while the average speed of triangular routes was below 50 km/h.

Under the same driving conditions, if a glider was like a sparrow in the hand of a newbie, it would be an arrogant eagle in the hand of a top powerhouse.

The 4 data of a top powerhouse was as follows: the longest air-staying time was over 70 hours; the greatest flight distance was over 2000 km; the recorded ascended height was over 15000 m while the average speed of triangular routes was above 220 km/h.

"Captain's glider has reached higher than 300 km/h..." a voice drifted from the observation post above the airship through the sound-transmission pipe when everyone in the throwing compartment was still tasting that cool "U-shaped" roll. After hearing this, all the crew members in the throwing compartment became stunned once again.

"It's too fast. How can it reach such a high speed in such a short period..." the first mate muttered.

Nobody could reply...

...

Zhang Tie didn't know what impression had he left on the crew members in such a short period. He didn't feel that he had done

something too special as he was just flying according to his feeling.

Zhang Tie found the airflow was like the currents in the ocean. With the preliminary water-proof body, Zhang Tie was very sensitive to both the waterflow and airflow.

Zhang Tie didn't know why. Perhaps it was because the waterflow and airflow were both fluids or perhaps it was because of the moisture in airflow. Undoubtedly, Zhang Tie felt same in both the waterflow and airflow.

This feeling didn't come from the sense of touch of his skin or body, but from the natural extension of his spiritual energy outside his body.

There was a moment when Zhang Tie almost thought that he was not driving a glider in the air but in the familiar ocean. Although he could not control the glider as agile as controlling his body, Zhang Tie indeed felt like following his heart by driving the glider. There were many similarities between flying in the airflow and flying in the ocean currents. Zhang Tie could think through many experiences and laws.

In the ocean, Zhang Tie reached his maximal speed not by moving along the ocean current but rapidly moving in the swirls and undulating places, by which he could gain more power. He could also constantly change his directions among different ocean currents in snake-shaped routes and swiftly cut into another ocean current from one current. In this way, he could reach a super fast speed.

Zhang Tie found that it was similar in the sky. Even the shapes of the ocean currents were similar to the that of thermal currents in the sky. Ocean currents swirled; similarly, thermal currents in the sky were like bubbles. They both existed and flew in the circular state.

Zhang Tie didn't know how did others distinguish powerhouses and newbies. However, he felt that as long as he wished, he could

stay very long and fly very far in the sky like he was in the ocean.

After leaving the Idiots for a short while, Zhang Tie descended his height and speed. He kept the glider at about 3,000 m and its speed as same as the Idiots. After that, he flew towards the north. He could see ruined villages on the Selnes Plain; sometimes, he could see the wreckage of large-scale airships.

Only after half an hour, Zhang Tie caught sight of some black spots in the distance. The black spots also noticed Zhang Tie as they instantly accelerated towards Zhang Tie...

Chapter 559: The Wing Demon Buster

Seeing the black spots drawing closer to him in a manner which was completely different than that of gliders, Zhang Tie knew that they were wing demons.

If it was another driver of the glider, at the sight of those wing demons, he would instantly turn around and escape. However, Zhang Tie was different. He didn't escape; instead, he sped up towards those black spots.

In a few minutes, Zhang Tie had seen clearly those wing demons.

They were three humanoid bats, who were similar to the legendary vampires. However, being different from vampire whose look had been beautified, besides having a pair of huge wings, wing demons looked lean all over. They had long limbs and a bat's head. With a green face and grim fangs, they looked pretty terrifying.

As it was Zhang Tie's first time to fight this kind of living beings, he was not sure that he could kill them. In order to ensure that he could give a severe blow to them, Zhang Tie played a trick. After flying for a while, Zhang Tie felt an ascending thermal current. Therefore, he cut into the ascending thermal current and kept ascending rapidly with the strength of the thermal current.

The three wing demons thought that Zhang Tie was going to escape; therefore, they followed after Zhang Tie.

Wing demons could fly very fast. A LV 9 wing demon could reach 7,000 to 8,000 m in the sky while their speed could reach more than 200 km/h. Average airships and gliders could hardly escape from wing demons.

After ascending by about 1,000 m, the three wing demons separated. It seemed that they wanted to outflank Zhang Tie. The

distance between them and Zhang Tie was also gradually narrowed.

Zhang Tie sneered. With one hand on the driving handle, he took out of a palm bolt from the cockpit of the glider by another hand.

Before the Catastrophe, after human beings invented the airplane, the first air battle between humans was a duel between pilots using pistols. This time, Zhang Tie felt returning to the first air battle before the Catastrophe. However, he was not using a pistol but a palm bolt. His opponent was not human, but wing demons.

"Gua..." with a jarring shrill, two wing demons charged at him from two sides in front his glider. In a split second, their distance had been narrowed from hundreds of meters to just 100 m.

In 0.1 second, Zhang Tie released two palm bolts, splitting the grim heads of the two wing demons into pieces at once. When two blood mists spurted in the sky, the sonic booms caused by the two palm bolts sounded.

Closely after that, the two wing demons fell down from over 4,000 m in the sky.

Zhang Tie rapidly penetrated through the two blood mists. While inclining his glider to one side, Zhang Tie caught sight of the last wing demon who caught up with him from the rear side. With another palm bolt, Zhang Tie boomed that wing demon's head from over 200 m away. After its huge wings flapped twice weakly, it fell down from the sky like a broken bag.

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. Wing demons were not that difficult to deal with. In the beginning, he was still worried about that if wing demons had the powerful body and pervert defensive power like that of iron-armored demons, plus their rapid moving speed, he could hardly give them a fatal blow with his palm bolt in the environment of sharp airflow and heavy wind. Therefore, he chose to ascend. In such a height, even if the wing demons were

wounded and fell down, they would also lose their lives.

After realizing the real fighting strength of wing demons, Zhang Tie became reassured. These LV 9 wing demons were not good at defense. Within 200 m, these LV 9 wing demons were irresistible to his palm bolt.

Thus, Zhang Tie became thrilled.

At this moment, the glider was still in the ascending thermal current. Zhang Tie kept ascending in the thermal current.

Zhang Tie found it very simple to drive a glider. Actually, it was just a game in and out an ascending airflow. The ascending airflow was like an elevator. Sitting in the elevator, the glider would reach a new height. Additionally, the higher it was, the cooler it would be, the faster the thermal current would ascend. Therefore, the higher the glider was, the faster it would ascend in the thermal current.

After reaching a certain height, the glider could come out of the elevator of the ascending thermal current from the top of the bubble. When in descending, he could gain a momentum. Zhang Tie felt that each 1 km he descended, the glider could fly 50-100 m forward.

When he descended to a certain height and encountered another ascending thermal current, he could take an elevator once again; after gaining another momentum, he could fly freely for another while in the sky. Of course, the actual flight required very agile manipulations of ascending thermal currents and various airflow. When you descended, you had to find an ascending thermal current and came out of the thermal current after reaching a height. Everything was determined by your flight intention and your driving skill.

Theoretically, a glider could keep flying 100 years in this way. Of course, even if a glider could fly so long in the air, nobody could stand it.

Honestly, it was just a game of height and speed in and out ascending thermal current.

Zhang Tie liked this feeling of freedom brought by speed and height. When flying in the sky, he felt cooler than running on the land and swimming in the ocean.

Driving the glider, Zhang Tie felt like becoming a happy and free eagle. Sometimes, he turned into a light stick of feather. Putting everything under his feet, he penetrated through the clouds and floated in the wind without any weight. Treating the horizon as his direction, the land as his cradle, Zhang Tie was deeply fascinated by that feel.

The data on the altimeter of the cockpit of the glider refreshed rapidly. After reaching over 6,000 m which was the top of the ascending thermal current, Zhang Tie flew out of the thermal current.

At this moment, the north wind started in the sky. Zhang Tie turned his glider in an agile way to make it vertical to the direction of the north wind. He didn't continue to fly towards the demon's area in the north; instead, he flew eastward.

The place where he met wing demons was over 200 km away from the Crystal Battle Fortress. It was already in the middle of the Selnes Theater of Operations. Now that he could meet wing demons here, he would probably meet more wing demons on both east and west of this route. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't continue to fly northward; instead, he prepared to patrol along this route and killed some more wing demons.

A LV 9 guy who dared to enter the area which was under the control of demon corps on the first day was too careless. For the sake of his life, Zhang Tie found it necessary to try the fighting strength of his enemy.

Only after 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had seen another two wing demons. They were flying 2,000 m below him. They were

monitoring the woods below them as they could not imagine that Zhang Tie was above them.

At the sight of the two wing demons, Zhang Tie instantly pushed forward the driving handle, causing the glider to lower its head and dive towards the two wing demons like how an eagle charged towards its prey. On the halfway, Zhang Tie felt a descending airflow, which would always be avoided by other drivers; however, Zhang Tie didn't care about it at all. He directly cut into the descending airflow and accelerated towards the two wing demons.

It was just like taking an elevator for Zhang Tie.

Until Zhang Tie penetrated through the thin clouds and narrowed the distance between him and the two wing demons to 500 m was he found by the two wing demons. Closely after that, the two wing demons turned around and charged back towards Zhang Tie...

Because Zhang Tie was diving towards them, with the advantage in height, Zhang Tie had a sharper momentum. Zhang Tie almost had already launched his palm bolts when the two wing demons turned around.

About 500 m away, when the two sonic booms sounded, the two wing demons' heads spurted into blood mists at the same time as they fell down...

Zhang Tie's glider drilled out of the descending airflow. After flying over the woods, he hovered there for a few seconds before entering an ascending airflow which was caused by the terrain...

...

A human hunting team was hiding in the crowns of those top trees. When they saw the two wing demons were shot down by a human glider, they could not believe in their eyes.

After a short while, the wing demons' corpses fell in the woods. The hunting team soon rushed towards there. Watching their

bloody heads, a tough man with a thick mustache and camouflage face drew in a cold breath.

"They were indeed shot down by that glider. That's amazing! How did he do that?"

"Yeah, we've not heard about such a No.1 figure in our theater of operations." another guy replied with an amazed look, "How could a member of the airship troop kill a wing demon as easily as hunting a prey?"

"Leave out of here right now. Take the two corpses." Reinhardt drilled out of the 1.8 m high brushwood as he lifted a bloody head of a wing demon, "Perhaps some countries or clans have already found out the method to deal with wing demons. That's a very important intelligence. We need to report this intelligence to the headquarters of the empire and the allied forces..."

Chapter 560: A Bloody Battle in the Air

Before 2 pm, as the sun had reached the climax of the sky, the ground temperature increased, causing the ascending thermal current to reach its highest intensity of the day. For average glider drivers, this was the peak time of flight of the day.

However, Zhang Tie had no feelings about this peak time. Just like a fish in the ocean would not care about the weather above, Zhang Tie didn't care about the intensifying and increasing thermal current below him. No matter what time it was, Zhang Tie felt that he could keep flying in the sky based on various airflow as long as he wanted. Unless the air stopped flowing, he would not concern about his flight.

Since he left the Idiots, Zhang Tie had wandered in the sky for about 4 hours like an eagle hunting its preys. After deepening about 200 km into the right wing of the Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie had killed 34 wing demons.

Most of the 34 were in twos or threes. The moment they saw Zhang Tie would they fly towards him. Undoubtedly, they all became Zhang Tie's targets. Their heads were boomed by Zhang Tie's palm bolts within 200-400 m one after another. Closely after that, they fell off.

The most wing demons that Zhang Tie met once was 11. One hour ago, Zhang Tie saw dense smoke rising up from the ground. When he arrived there, he found over 10 airships were attacked by a group of wing demons. At the same time, tens of thousands of human troops were fighting demonized puppets with the coordination of armored vehicles. The two parties wrestled with each other. The airships were here to launch an air raid towards the demonized puppets on the ground; unfortunately, their plan was disrupted by wing demons.

One human airship had been completely destroyed by wing

demons. The other airships were struggling to retreat towards the south. Those gliders on the airships seemed to have been destroyed by wing demons.

In the next second, Zhang Tie appeared. After circling around the human airship troop for less than 2 minutes, he had killed 10 of the 11 wing demons. The last wing demon wrestled with Zhang Tie in the air.

That was a LV 10 wing demon. The LV 9 wing demon's weapon was two long and slim spikes while the LV 10 wing demon was holding a fork-shaped weapon. The LV 10 wing demon was not only bigger, but also much agiler and faster than LV 9 wing demon.

It was Zhang Tie's first powerful enemy in the air. Within 100 m, Zhang Tie constantly launched three palm bolts towards that LV 10 wing demon; however, all of them were blocked off. That LV 10 wing demon was driven infuriated as it croaked and accelerated towards Zhang Tie while waving his weapon. Zhang Tie could only wrestle with him by the glider.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, palm bolt was just a minimized javelin. Although it was portable and easily launched, its destructive strength was weakened due to its small size and lightweight, which was reflected on the LV 10 wing demon. Based on the fighting strength of LV 10 wing demon, although they could not move faster than palm bolts, they were able to block off Zhang Tie's palm bolts by their weapon.

After wrestling with each other for half an hour, the two people had ascended from 1,000 m to about 7,000 m and left the battlefield by 100 miles. At such a height, Zhang Tie changed his tactics. He didn't target his palm bolts towards the head and limbs of the LV 10 wing demon; instead, he targeted at its double wings which were as long as 4-5 m.

Finally, after the LV 10 wing demon blocked off Zhang Tie's two palm bolts, one of its thin wings was penetrated through by the 3rd

palm bolt.

With a sound "Pfhhh...", the palm bolt penetrated through one of its wings like breaking a balloon, making it a turning point of this battle.

With one hole on its wing, the wing demon's speed and agility were weakened greatly at once. As a result, it shrieked.

After finding it not good, the LV 10 wing demon hurriedly drove downwards. Of course, Zhang Tie would not abandon this good opportunity. He kept chasing after it.

After dozens of seconds, with four sounds "Pfhhh, pfhhh, pfhhh, pfhhh", Zhang Tie opened another 4 holes on the same wing.

Although one of its wings was complete, the other wing looked like a sieve. This time, the wing demon could not maintain its balance in the air anymore as it struggled to fall off.

At this moment, Zhang Tie launched his last palm bolt from the back of the wing demon. The palm bolt entered the afterbrain of the wing demon and completely boomed its head.

Although this battle came to an end, Zhang Tie was still oozing cold sweat. Thankfully, he just met one LV 10 wing demon; if it was two, he would be the one who fell off.

Zhang Tie rejoiced for his good luck inside. Thankfully, he didn't directly head for the area under the control of demons. If he met two LV 10 wing demons there, he could not return at all.

It was 2 pm when he killed this LV 10 wing demon. In the steaming ascending thermal current, Zhang Tie changed his direction. After reaching about 10,000 m high, Zhang Tie flew towards the west of Selnes Plain, namely the left wing of the human defense line.

The airship troop of Jinyun Country under the leadership of Lan Yunxi was in the west of Selnes Plain. Zhang Tie wanted to check over there. If possible, he could relieve the stress of the airship

troop from wing demons over there.

At this moment, he felt a bit hungry. He then directly took out some all-purpose medicament from Castle of Black Iron and poured it into his mouth.

After drinking it, Zhang Tie felt full spirited and energetic.

On the way there, Zhang Tie killed another 7 wing demons.

The closer he was to the west, the more airships could Zhang Tie see in the sky. He even met many gliders which were responsible for the investigation. Many pilots of the gliders also noticed Zhang Tie. However, they didn't care about him. At this moment, there were too many gliders in the left wing of the Selnes Theater of Operations, all of which were released from the airships. As long as they were not wing demons, nobody would pay attention to them.

Zhang Tie saw many kinds of gliders, some were bigger with 2 or 3 people. Besides the pilots, the others on the gliders were all manipulating weapons like the crossbow. Facing the threat of wing demons, human troops were also constantly adjusting and improving their coping ability.

If the south line of Selnes Theater of Operations was relatively calm, the west line was intense. A corps of the right wing of the theater of operations was preparing to seize back Flatte, a very important city in the west of Selnes Plain with the coordination of large-scale airship troops and ground armored troops.

Flatte was more than 270 km away from Moog, the core city in the left wing of human defense line. It was once the most important industrial town of Titanic Principality in Selnes Plain. However, now, this city had been occupied by a demonized puppets corps. Flatte, after being occupied by the demonized puppets corps was like a sharp embolon, which extended the power of demonized puppets corps from north to the central and southern parts of Selnes Plain. As a result, the allied forces of nations across Blackson Human Corridor could not sleep well.

They treated it as a thorn in their flesh.

After long-term considerate preparation, the allied human forces finally launched a large-scale battle to seize back Flatte City on the defense line of left wing last week. Over 1 million people joined this battle. Even the airship troops of Jinyun Country participated in this battle.

At this moment, the 2000 square km ground in Flatte City had become a huge battlefield. From ground to sky, a lot of blood sprayed at each second.

Zhang Tie, who had just have a try in the right wing of the human defense line also drove into this battlefield with his glider.

...

Five days later, during the sunset, a sentry in the airship base of Crystal Battle Fortress saw an item flying towards the airship base in the afterglow of the sun.

The sun was right behind its back. Being reflected by the hot setting sun, although it was unclear and twisted in the telescope, its two wings could still be identified.

"Wing demon?" the sentry almost sent the air-defense warning. Thankfully, before the sentry sent out the air-defense warning, he caught sight of the metal luster on that thing.

When that thing drew closer in a rocking way like being drunk, the sentry identified that was a glider.

The glider landed on a plain grassland outside the airship base. However, nobody got out of it. When a lot of ground crew in the airship base and all the crew members of the Idiots rushed in front of that glider, everyone was shocked.

None of them had seen such a miserable glider before...

Its metal hull was covered with wounds. What was more shocking was that it had been covered with blood stains from head

to wings.

It was more like a bloody battle armor than a glider...

The crystal covers of the cockpit had long been broken into pieces while a pale golden, twisted and grim steel fork stabbed into the crystal cover on one side of the cockpit.

A person was sitting in the cockpit while lowering his head, being breathless. His left shoulder was nailed on the seat by that grim steel fork, causing half of his body tainted by fresh blood...

"Captain..." all the crew members of the Idiots charged forward...

"Hurry up, carry him into the Crystal Battle Fortress..." a captain who was responsible for ground services roared with red eyes...

Only after a few minutes, the Crystal Battle Fortress had been boiling...

Chapter 561: Selnes Eagle

Two days later, the airship troop of Jinyun Country returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress with a smell of smoke. They brought back an exciting news.

After sacrificing over 200,000 people, over 2400 armored vehicles and tanks and over 180 airships, Flatte finally returned to the hand of humans.

Although Flatte was completely ruined, it was still of very important significance for the allied human forces across Blackson Human Corridor to seize back this city.

Because this was the first city that humans grabbed back from the hand of demons since the beginning of the 3rd holy war between humans and demons. This victory not only extremely inspired the morale of the allied human forces, but also cut off an aggressive tentacle of the demon corps towards the south.

Although the main opponent of the allied human forces was just a demonized puppets corps, 1/3 of which finally retreated to the north. However, nobody cared about this at all. They only cared about the first victory that humans had gained since the beginning of the holy war.

After knowing about this victory, many people finally relieved their stress which was caused by demons.

Flatte City not only brought an inspiring triumph, but also a legendary person in the air to the allied human forces who was witnessed by nearly 1 million people in the left wing corps of Selnes.

Because of this legendary person, the number of airships being ruined also dropped from over 500, which was deducted by the Prewar Coalition Command to over 180 while the casualty of pilots on the airships also declined from 85% on average to less than 20%.

Finally, with the excellent performance of the airship troops which had completely taken the air supremacy of Flatte City, the demonized puppets that occupied the Flatte City were heavily struck by the human airship troops. As a result, the demonized puppets corps escaped to the north, allowing the battle in Flatte City to come to an end in advance.

Nobody knew who was that legendary person. When the Flatte Battle came to an end, through investigation, none of the troops could find that legendary person, who had created a marvel above Flatte City using a glider.

In only 5 days, an earthshaking nickname had spread among all the airship troops in the left wing corps of Selnes Theatre of Operations——Selnes Eagle.

"Perhaps that Selnes Eagle was in our Jinyun Country!" a mapping advisor in the command module of Lan Yunxi's flagship airship argued when the airship gradually landed in the base of the Crystal Battle Fortress, "That guy's falcon-level glider is produced in Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

"Are you kidding me? All the airship troops of Jinyun Country are here. Do you mean that

Guy flew all the way here from Jinyun Country?" another second lieutenant refuted.

"That guy could stay 5 days in the air. That's a new record. He might be able to do that!"

"Forgot about that. Huaiyuan Prefecture has sold so many furys and falcons these years. I was told that some countries had been authorized to produce them. Look at how many fury-level airships are in Selnes Theater of Operations now. He's just driving a falcon. You can get no information from it!"

"But I feel that man always appeared nearby the airship troops of Jinyun Country. Many people have seen that!"

"Flatte is so large. Additionally, it's in the sky. We all moved so fast. As long as he was on the battlefield, he could be easily seen by us. Perhaps you should go to ask about others airship troops' opinions. They must also think that person always appear nearby them!"

Lan Yunxi watched the gradually larger Crystal Battle Fortress under her feet as she slightly frowned. All the military officers' words had drifted in her ears. As the fierce battle had come to an end, She didn't mind them talking about some easy topics to relieve the stress brought by the battle.

What made Lan Yunxi slightly frown was that military officer's feeling. Lan Yunxi had a deeper feeling about that military officer. Lan Yunxi felt that the Selnes Eagle didn't just appear nearby the airship troops of Jinyun Country more often than the other airship troops but also completely safeguarded her and her airship troop.

"Is that him?" Lan Yunxi waved her head slightly, "How could that rascal master such marvelous driving skills. That person has just left Huaiyuan Palace for 3-4 years. He has not touched glider in Huaiyuan Palace. Even if he had immersed himself in studying how to drive a glider in that period, he could still not make this."

"There's no such a Chinese bloodline. Even those who have dozens of years' experience in troops would be stunned by his driving skills. How could he make that in only a few years?"

"But why do I have a familiar sense?"

Lan Yunxi didn't know why. She just felt a bit upset!

Lan Yunxi's airship directly landed in the Crystal Battle Fortress. The moment she got off the airship had she felt something weird in the battle fortress. Before she asked, one of her henchmen had already walked in front of her and whispered to her.

Closely after hearing the words, Lan Yunxi changed her face...

...

"Zhang Tie arrived at Crystal Battle Fortress with the other crew members of the Idiots on the 14th day of this month. On the next early morning, he had left by the Idiots. Those crew members of Idiots said that after the Idiots left the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie had driven a glider away from the airship. He even told those crew members that if he did not come back in two days, they could drive the airship back to the Crystal Battle Fortress. The Idiots stayed 3 days outside there and returned to the airship base of the Crystal Battle Fortress on the 18th day of this month. Zhang Tie didn't come back with them. On the evening of the 20th day of this month, after leaving here for 5 days, Zhang Tie finally came back by a glider. However, he was heavily wounded and is in a deep coma now!"

When they accelerated towards Zhang Tie's ward in the Crystal Battle Fortress, Lan Yunxi's henchman whispered to her.

"You mean he stayed 5 days on a glider outside there?"

"Those crew members of the Idiots told me so. Nobody else saw when Zhang Tie left the Idiots by his glider. Therefore, I don't know whether it's true or not!"

"What's the type of his glider?" Lan Yunxi's heart raced as she hurriedly asked.

"He drove a falcon produced by Huaiyuan Palace. When he came back, his glider was covered with blood and wounds. According to the test, all the blood belonged to wing demons. This even aroused a shock in the Crystal Battle Fortress at once. The cockpit had been destroyed with a weapon of a LV 10 wing demon on it..."

"How's he right now?"

"Lan elder has checked his wounds and applied medicine to his wounds. Lan elder said he's safe. However, as he had not slept for a long time, plus being heavily wounded, he might wake up in a couple of days!"

...

Lan Yunxi saw some crew members of the Idiots with red eyes were waiting outside of a ward. Seeing Lan Yunxi and the other guys, those crew members directly stopped them.

"Our captain is still in the coma, nobody is allowed in!"

"Audacious! This is Zhang Tie's junior sister apprentice, the commander of the airship troop of Jinyun Country..." one person beside Lan Yunxi scolded.

"Ah, this is the woman that our captain likes..." a crew member of the Idiots blinked his eyes as if he had enlightened something.

Lan Yunxi watched that crew member and asked him calmly, "Has Zhang Tie talked about me?"

Under the gaze of Lan Yunxi, that crew member's heart pounded as he poured out everything, "Captain told us that the woman he loved was in Selnes Theatre of Operations. He said she was a very sharp Iron Lady, being surrounded by a lot of flies..."

"Iron Lady?" some guys beside Lan Yunxi glared at that crew member. Lan Yunxi didn't say anything, neither did she care about those crew members. She directly entered the ward. The Idiots crew just let her in.

Lan Yunxi entered the ward alone.

The white bed sheet and the white wall in the room carried a smell of sterile water. Zhang Tie seemed asleep as he was breathing slowly and evenly.

Lan Yunxi was standing on Zhang Tie's bed and silently watched Zhang Tie's pale face. Her awe-inspiring powerful qi gradually faded away. Her eyes gradually turned tender as she slightly touched Zhang Tie's face and combed some hair on Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie was the very person who protected her in the sky of

Flatte City. At this moment, Lan Yunxi had been sure about her feeling. Although she didn't know how Zhang Tie made it, watching this man who preferred to be imprisoned by the clan elders and driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace so as to protect her in Selnes Theatre of Operations, nothing else was important.

"You're really an idiot!" Lan Yunxi slowly sighed.

After a while...

A weird sound "Gulu..." appeared in the room, which came from Zhang Tie's stomach.

The moment she heard the sound did Lan Yunxi draw back her hand from Zhang Tie's face. However, before she drew it back, Zhang Tie had already seized her hand. Zhang Tie opened his eyes at once. He looked at Lan Yunxi with a faint smile. After that, he drew Lan Yunxi's hand to his mouth. He even forcefully sniffed and kissed it, causing a sound "Zi".

Lan Yunxi almost cried, "This douchebag had long woken up. He was just pretending to sleep."

"You rascal!"

...

Chapter 562: Explanation

Lan Yunxi didn't draw her hand back. Perhaps she had been used to that since Zhang Tie had done too many excessive things to her. She might not accept other men to do that to her; however, if it was Zhang Tie, she didn't think it was improper.

After slightly touching and kissing her tender hand for a while, Zhang Tie struggled to sit up on the bed. He leaned against the headboard and let Lan Yunxi sit on the bed by patting the bedside.

Lan Yunxi rolled her eyes towards Zhang Tie. Without saying anything, she just sat on the bed.

Finding Lan Yunxi so obedient, Zhang Tie became excited inside as he was immediately filled with a sense of satisfaction.

"When did you learn to drive the glider?" the moment Lan Yunxi sat on the bed did she reach out her hand and catch Zhang Tie's claw which was reaching towards her butts and thigh. She then pressed Zhang Tie's claw on the bedside.

Lan Yunxi in a military suit looked more attractive than wearing a skirt. Zhang Tie could only gaze at her plump butts and beautiful legs under the straight and tight military unit while he forcefully swallowed his saliva for a few times.

"Hmm, I learned it by chance in a wild cultivation two years ago!" Zhang Tie immediately replied it as what he had planned.

"Two years ago?" Lan Yunxi peered at Zhang Tie with a dubious look, "You mean you've just learned to drive a glider in only two years!"

"Right. I know what do you mean!" Zhang Tie still replied with a casual smile, "You know I'm good at diving in Hidden Dragon Island and was the Yaksha in the sea over there. Actually, I find that driving a glider is similar to diving in the water. In the sea, I will face various ocean currents and subterranean flows; similarly,

in the air, I have to face sorts of air flows. I find that I'm very sensitive to the water flows and air flows beside me. I can easily sense and catch their existence and flowing directions. Therefore, it's very easy for me to drive a glider!"

Zhang Tie's explanation was perfect. No matter how amazed was Lan Yunxi, she could only admit Zhang Tie's talent on some aspect. Fish was born to swim, Bird was born to fly. Perhaps someone was really born with some special ability like Zhang Tie.

"What's your weapon in the sky?"

"Palm bolt. I've already promoted my precise throwing ability to the highest level when I was in Hidden Dragon Island. I only need one hand to drive a glider. I release palm bolts with the other hand."

Lan Yunxi faintly sighed as she didn't know what to say. It was out of her imagination that the combination of an inferior ancestral bloodline and the excellent driving talent of Zhang Tie could lead to such a marvel in the air. Each of the above two abilities was admirable at most; however, the combination of the two abilities caused a great difference to Zhang Tie.

"You've already prepared to do that when you bet with those people?"

Zhang Tie raised his chest at once, "Of course, as those people wanted to pursue my woman, they should appreciate me for not burying them. Additionally, I didn't force them to bet with me. They were voluntary. As they could not match me on fighting skills, they did not disappear in front of me!"

After hearing such a sufficient reason, Lan Yunxi became speechless.

Zhang Tie thought Lan Yunxi was angry; therefore, he hurriedly asked with a smile, "Are you angry with me?"

Lan Yunxi didn't smile; instead, she just watched Zhang Tie with

a solemn look, "Do you know about the outcome of what you did in Flatte City?"

"I know!" Zhang Tie hid his smile, "People are afraid of being famous. I must have become famous in Selnes Theater of Operations. This would bring me a lot of benefits and disadvantages!"

"Just disadvantages?" Lan Yunxi flicked Zhang Tie's forehead with her finger abruptly, "You are seeking for death. Do you know about your nickname?"

"What?"

"Selnes Eagle!"

"That sounds good. It's awesome!"

"You will soon become the thorn in the demons' side. Those lackeys of demons and Three-Eye Association will definitely kill you. Even if you were a knight, you could not avoid from their assassination, not to mention that you're only LV 9." Lan Yunxi became worried about Zhang Tie.

"As I was born in a chaotic age, I could not make choice on something!" Zhang Tie peered at Lan Yunxi decisively and frankly, "As a man, how could I just watch you fight ferociously in the sky when I have the ability to give you a favor? How could I just stay on the ground afraid of becoming the target of demons and Three-Eye Association? I've almost died for many times these years. Finally, I came up with a conclusion, as long as I can live up to my heart by protecting my beloved ones, I won't care when will I die!"

"Trust me, I have my own survival rules. Nobody could kill me easily, demons or Three-Eye Association. I will protect myself! Before marrying you, I will not easily die. How can I just watch you become a widow?" Zhang Tie forcefully drew closer to Lan Yunxi's face and kissed her alluring lips.

"Hmm!" Lan Yunxi struggled faintly and symbolically. Closely

after that, her teeth were opened by Zhang Tie's tongue. Zhang Tie held her tongue at once, causing her become soft all over immediately.

After carefully tasting Lan Yunxi's tongue for a few minutes, watching her blushed cheeks and half closed eyes, Zhang Tie became spirited at once. After slightly using his force, he had slipped his hand out of Lan Yunxi's grip. Meanwhile, he covered his hand on Lan Yunxi's plump breasts instantly.

Lan Yunxi became stiff for a second as she caught Zhang Tie's weird claw and threw him out of the bed. Closely after that, she jumped off the bedside like a spring.

After hearing Zhang Tie's miserable shriek and a huge sound in the room, those outside the ward rushed inside at once. After entering the ward, they all widely opened their mouths at the sight of what happened.

Zhang Tie in the suit of a patient was lying on a wall in the size of "大" with his face against the wall. When they came in, they saw him sliding off the wall like a pool of mud.

Lan Yunxi just stood near the door while her face looked a bit red and her breasts were undulating. She was watching Zhang Tie while trying to hide her smile.

"Captain." the crew members of the Idiots rushed towards him at once.

"Ah, I'm okay, I'm okay..." Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground while his nose was bleeding.

"Ah, captain, your nose is bleeding!"

"Wuh?" Zhang Tie touched it and saw blood on his hand. He then hurriedly raised his head as he took out of two pieces of toilet paper from a drawer of the cabinet near the bed and plugged his nostrils.

"What happened, captain? Why were you on the wall?" a crew

member of the Idiots asked before glancing at Lan Yunxi silently.

"Ah, it's nothing serious. I woke up just now. Senior sister apprentice asked me about what happened these days. I then showed her how I killed enemies by a glider. As I was too indulged in the performance, I mistook myself as a glider and forgot about where I was. Therefore, I hit myself on the wall!" Zhang Tie lied as he glanced at Lan Yunxi with a gloomy look which could only be understood by Lan Yunxi.

Watching Zhang Tie's hilarious look with toilet paper in his nostrils, Lan Yunxi almost burst out laughing, "You deserve that. Who let you be that lascivious..."

"Now that junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie had woken up, you'd better take a good rest. Someone might come here for an investigation these days. Hope you are prepared for that!" Lan Yunxi replied with a pun in front of the public.

"Thanks, senior sister apprentice, I know how to deal with it!"

Lan Yunxi then left with her subordinates, leaving Zhang Tie and some crew members of the Idiots in the ward.

"Captain, how...how...could a person treat himself as a glider?" a guy asked with a confused look.

"If you want to have a try, when I drive a glider next time, I can bind you below the glider. I will show you then how to treat yourself as a glider!" Zhang Tie replied with a glassy-eyed look.

That guy shrugged and became speechless. Knowing that Zhang Tie was safe, they then slipped out of the ward.

Standing in the room, Zhang Tie raised his head and watched the ceiling which was full of pipes. He was trying to stop his nose from bleeding; however, he was thinking about what Lan Yunxi had told him just now.

Those with secrets used to be low-key. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie knew that he could not be low-key anymore. He should

follow his own choice and face the possible outcome instead of always enjoying the benefits privately.

When an awl was in the balloon, it would break the balloon for sure, unless the awl broke its own sharp end.

Therefore, now that something could not be avoided, it was better to have the initiative in your own hands. Sometimes, when you stood at the peak, you could protect yourself much better. While standing under the highlights, you could better hide some secrets.

Zhang Tie had determined inside.

...

After 2 hours, Zhang Tie looked much better. At least, his nose didn't bleed anymore. After putting on a set of clean suit, he left the ward for the Military Exploits Registration Center below the battle fortress of Lan clan...

...

Chapter 563: I am an Air Cavalry

Closely after the Flatte Battle, the Military Exploits Center and the Military Exploits Rankings of the Crystal Battle Fortress had been crowded with people. Most of them were onlookers, rest of them were here to register their own military exploits.

Zhang Tie's arrival attracted many people's attention at once.

Two days ago, when Zhang Tie returned by that glider, all the onlookers were shocked. They could hardly imagine what kind of a bloody battle had Zhang Tie experienced.

After knowing that Zhang Tie stayed in the air for 5 days, everybody became stunned. They didn't believe that a person who could break the record of the longest driving time in the air across Waii Sub-Continent came from the Crystal Battle Fortress. In this age when fighting force counted most, although driving skill was not as eye-catching as fighting skill, it was greatly favored by airship troops like how sailors were favored by the navy.

No matter what, a person who could break a record would always catch others' attention wherever he was.

At this moment, Zhang Tie became very attractive. If he was not in a coma in the last few days, he might have been visited by too many people.

Everyone was curious whether he really broke the record or not and what was his military exploits.

"Junior brother apprentice, what a coincidence, nice to see you again!"

At the Military Exploits Registration Center, Zhang Tie met a guy who made a bet with him——Dantai Yuya.

Closely after Dantai Yuya's voice, a lot of young military officers turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie. Many of them faintly glittered their eyes. They finally knew who Zhang Tie was.

"Ah, senior brother apprentice Dantai. You're also here to register military exploits?" Zhang Tie greeted him with a normal look.

"Yes, I made some achievements in Flatte Theatre of Operations this time. I want to confirm here!" Dantai Yuya watched Zhang Tie as he replied politely and sincerely, "I was told that junior brother apprentice Zhang Tie bought an airship to join the battle as a volunteer after leaving Hidden Dragon Palace. That's what real hero does! That's really admirable."

Dantai Yuya had top demeanor and temperament. Therefore, since Zhang Tie met him last time, Zhang Tie had liked this elite of Dantai Clan. After hearing his praise, Zhang Tie became a bit bashful.

"Senior brother apprentice Dantai, you make me bashful. I know many senior brother apprentices were commanding the airships; however, this military exploits registration was just personal; it doesn't contain the contribution of the troops. It's actually a bit unfair for senior brother apprentices. My contribution is dwarfed by your commanding ability!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Dantai Yuya smiled, "Haha, don't say that. In this age, all the plots and intelligence would be dwarfed by powerful fighting strength. In the duel between humans and demons, fighting strength counted most in the end. If a person lacked fighting strength, he could be an assistant at most no matter how clever and tactical he was. Such person's achievement is limited."

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he knew this was how apprentices from big clans thought about. For these apprentices from big clans, the tactic was just a tool while personal fighting strength really predominated everything. Although they also paid attention to tactics and commanding skills, it was just an important component of one's real power. Tactics and commanding skills were dwarfed by one's fighting strength.

This point could be seen clearly from the clan elders. Each clan elder was assumed by a knight. As long as one promoted to a knight, one would have a great influence and power wherever one was. Knight could influence and predominate a clan's fate. However, Zhang Tie had not heard anyone who was excel at tactics and commanding skills could become a clan elder across the Waii Sub-Continent.

This was the most famous "Stronger's Effect" or "Knight's Effect" in this age. Because of different levels in cultivation, there's a sharp difference in ability and fighting strength between a knight and a common fighter. When tens of thousands of soldiers of an average division could not realize what a knight did, an invisible ceiling would form in front of all the brain workers.

Before the Catastrophe, human intelligence and tactics were placed in a very important position. Brainworkers governed people; why labor workers were governed by people. Those who excelled at tactics and had excellent thinking ability were usually favored by people and could easily gain success and social status. However, in this age, all the rules were founded on fighting strength for both groups and individuals.

When they talked, Dantai Yuya had registered his military exploits. It was soon Zhang Tie's turn.

Seeing Zhang Tie going to register his own military exploits, all the onlookers pricked up their ears. Many people drew closer out of curiosity. Dantai Yuya also prepared to look at Zhang Tie's military exploits. As Lan Yunxi's junior brother apprentice who dared to bet with others, Dantai Yuya thought that Zhang Tie's performance wouldn't be too worse, at least among the LV 9 fighters.

After glancing at Zhang Tie, a lieutenant nodded, "You're also here to register your military exploits?"

"Yes!"

"Have you registered it before?"

"No, it's my first time!"

"Okay, now that you've signed the agreement on soul and bloodline, any lie of you would bring you a side effect of violating the agreement. Therefore, don't brag your military exploits. You'd better not count what you are uncertain about. Additionally, the military exploits that have been registered should not be counted in repetitively. Each military exploit should be the latest. The group's achievement is not counted in." The lieutenant explained it to Zhang Tie patiently.

"I know!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Hmm, tell me your name and your military exploits!" that captain prepared to record.

Zhang Tie took a deep breath before saying, "Zhang Tie, 157 LV 9 wing demons, 4 LV 10 wing demons, if not count wounded wing demons!"

"What?" that captain thought he heard it wrong as he asked Zhang Tie to repeat it.

"I killed 157 LV 9 wing demons and 4 LV 10 wing demons these days!" Zhang Tie repeated it calmly and confidently.

The Military Exploits Registration Center became so quiet that even a needle dropping on the ground could be heard clearly. Everybody watched Zhang Tie's face as they seemed to wait for something special to happen. However, Zhang Tie remained calm and frank. His face didn't turn black; neither did he smell bad.

——He's not been affected by the oath of soul and bloodline? Everyone realized that Zhang Tie was telling the truth.

The captain wrote down Zhang Tie's military exploits on the notebook with a quivering hand as he forcefully swallowed his saliva and looked at Zhang Tie like seeing a ghost, "Can...can you repeat it once more, sir?"

The captain changed his tone.

"157 LV 9 wing demons, 4 LV 10 wing demons. Is that okay..." Zhang Tie replied patiently.

"Aww, it's okay...it's okay..." the captain hurriedly said in a much more polite manner.

"Senior brother apprentice Dantai, my airship is still parking outside. It's called the Idiots. I will invite you for a drink when you're free. Thanks to the medical treatment of Lan elder, I recovered so fast. I will go appreciate him. See you..." Zhang Tie still greeted Dantai Yuya in the same tone as before. After that, he directly entered the Lan's battle fortress and had people report to Lan elder.

Only after less than 1 minute, Lan elder had already sent people to lead him in.

Zhang Tie waved his hand towards Dantai Yuya before entering Lan's battle fortress.

Until Zhang Tie disappeared in front of them did those in the Military Exploits Registration Center realize what happened. The center boiled at once.

"Let me count it. 157 LV 9 wing demons, 942 points; 4 LV 10 wing demons, 120 points; Zhang Tie gained 1062 points in total..."

"Ah, I know, Zhang Tie is the Selnes Eagle in the legend..." one person shouted out of excitement.

Everybody drew in a cold breath...

Dantai Yuya stood still as he felt like being dead, "How could I surpass such an achievement? I cannot even match a guy being driven out of Hidden Dragon Palace, how would I pursue Lan Yunxi?"

Zhang Tie's image was like a high and firm wall in the eyes of Dantai Yuya, which broke all of his hopes about pursuing Lan

Yunxi.

Without having to wait for another 2 months, Dantai Yuya was already sure that those who had made a bet with Zhang Tie could hardly surpass Zhang Tie's current military exploits even after 2 months.

...

In the room where he was carried in one week ago, Zhang Tie saw Lan elder once again. After Zhang Tie clarified his intention and extended his gratitude to Lan elder, Lan elder peered at Zhang Tie for a quite while before nodding, "You, not bad, not bad..."

Zhang Tie didn't know that it was Lan elder's first time to praise a young man in the Crystal Battle Fortress.

After hearing such a praise, Zhang Tie just replied modestly, "It's my pleasure..."

"Hmm. Do you know what's the most important thing for you at the present?" Lan elder watched Zhang Tie with a wise and kind look.

"To save myself..." Zhang Tie put it straight.

After hearing this answer, Lan elder revealed some praise and appreciation through his eyes, "Have you thought about that you might face a lot of troubles by gaining such military exploits as a volunteer?"

Zhang Tie became silent for a second. He indeed did not think about this question before he came here. He found it a bit tricky. If a volunteer could ferociously beat wing demons in the sky, what would over 5 million regular soldiers do in the frontline of Selnes Theater of Operations?"

The one who gained the nickname of Selnes Eagle was just a nongovernmental volunteer. This made many people embarrassed. Even in the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie estimated that not everyone would like to see a guy in the suit of a militia of Jinyun

Country on the Military Exploits Rankings. Even in Huaiyuan Palace, his military exploits might be used by someone to estrange the relationship between him and Huaiyuan Palace.

After thinking through this point, Zhang Tie was slightly shocked, "An old ox makes a straight furrow! Lan elder points out the major problem facing me."

"I will follow your order, Clan elder!" Zhang Tie became docile, "After all, you're the boss of Crystal Battle Fortress, now that you have pointed out this problem, you can work out the solution for sure, too."

Lan elder replied with a smile. He found Zhang Tie was even smarter than the elders of Zhang Clan, "I will notice Huaiyuan Palace. From now on, you will be the first air cavalry of the Crystal Battle Fortress of Jinyun Country!"

"Air cavalry, a cavalry in the air?" Zhang Tie's eyebrows moved.

"Right, you're now an air cavalry. This is a new independent establishment. You're the only air cavalry across the air of Selnes Theater of Operations. Your rank is major. Nominally, you belong to the Crystal Battle Fortress, namely being responsible for me. You have the right to fight alone. How do you think about that?"

"Haha, it's really out of my imagination that Lan elder has already considered it well for me." Zhang Tie was moved inside as he deeply bowed towards Lan elder, "Thank you, Lan elder!"

"You're welcome. As an air cavalry, a new independent establishment, you should change your suit. Otherwise, it would be too awkward..." Lan elder then applauded as one person entered the room at once. He pointed at that person and told Zhang Tie, "You can negotiate with him about your suit, equipment and symbol. I will not care about that. It's estimated that you will use them very soon."

...

Zhang Tie negotiated with the logistics director of the Crystal Battle Fortress for almost one hour. After confirming the style, material, military rank, dog tag, collar badge, cockade and symbol of his military suit as the first air cavalry, he left the Lan's battle fortress.

As there were so many senior talents and handicraftsmen in the logistics department of the Crystal Battle Fortress, it would take them at most one day to work out Zhang Tie's military suit.

When Zhang Tie walked out of the Lan's battle fortress, the Military Exploits Rankings in front of the Crystal Battle Fortress had already changed. Zhang Tie ranked first with 1062 points, followed by Lan Yunxi. In the battle of Flatte City, Lan Yunxi killed 8 LV 9 wing demons, 2 LV 10 wing demons and a LV 11 wing demon, causing Lan Yunxi's points rise to 444 points from 186 points.

However, her points were still less than half of that of Zhang Tie's.

Although it was just a ranking, Zhang Tie felt pretty special by defeating Lan Yunxi as he had a sense of conquest.

All the fighters in the Crystal Battle Fortress, at the sight of Zhang Tie, would show their respect to him, especially those fighters of Huaiyuan Palace. At this moment, Zhang Tie was the most glorious member of Huaiyuan Palace.

When Zhang Tie returned to the Idiots, all the crew members went out of the airship and celebrated Zhang Tie's return in the most grand way. Only by this could those crew members feel that they were showing their full respect to their captain.

Zhang Tie greeted them with a big smile as he patted their shoulders. After having a good supper with them, Zhang Tie told them he needed to take a rest and didn't want to be disturbed. After that, he returned to the captain's room.

Where he entered the Castle of Black Iron and wanted to check

what surprise had the small tree brought to him...

...

After a few days, the inside of Castle of Black Iron didn't change too much. Besides the aura in the refreshing air, with the expansion of the area of Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie felt here more like the outside world.

Heller was already waiting for Zhang Tie under the small tree as he knew that Zhang Tie would come in. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Heller said with a solemn look, "Castle Lord, you're too risky this time. If you don't treasure your life, we will feel very frustrated inside here. We will feel everything is meaningless!"

Zhang Tie scratched his head in a bashful way. He knew what Heller referred to. The mode of battle that he fought 5 days in the air at the cost of his spirit was truly very dangerous. On the 5th day, he could almost not stand it. Being attacked from flanks by two LV 10 wing demons, Zhang Tie almost died.

"Alright. I know that. But in that case, as long as I can stick to a longer time, I might save many people's lives. Therefore, I could not stop..."

Heller sighed, "If you cannot control such a case, you might encounter it later on. If so, Castle Lord, you'd better get some more iron-body fruits. At least you could bear more strikes and could tide over dangers easier. As long as you spend some time, you can easily get iron-body fruits. This fruit would have a remarkable effect when you eat enough of them. They could strengthen your body. Body is the foundation of everything. Castle Lord, you'd better not ignore it. Somethings like sunshine and air, although being cheap, could be easily obtained. However, they were the basis on which everything relied on. Take this time as an example, as long as you had eaten two or three more iron-body fruits, you would have been clear-minded when you landed and would not be wounded so severely!"

Heller's words aroused Zhang Tie's attention. Zhang Tie realized that he indeed did not eat iron-body fruits, "Heller barely makes such a good comment about any fruit. Perhaps, I've not completely exerted the effect of iron-body fruits..."

"Fine, I will spend more time in obtaining iron-body fruits for sure!" Zhang Tie nodded with a solemn look. After that, he asked Heller, "Have those fruits of demons grown out?"

"Yes, they have..."

...

Chapter 564: The Fruit of Source

That was an odd-looking fruit. At the first sight of that fruit, Zhang Tie felt some visuals flashed in his mind. He felt having seen it somewhere.

It looked so weird that it didn't look like a fruit at all; instead, it was more like a complex three-dimensional pattern, which was utterly different than other fruits bred by the small tree.

Seven-strength fruits looked like mini sculptures of animals. This fruit looked weirder. It was completely covered with a beautiful, complex pattern formed by rounds.

Thinking of 'sculpture', Zhang Tie instantly became spirited. He finally remembered why he was familiar with this fruit. Because he had seen it on real sculptures.

Zhang Tie recalled the two lion sculptures outside the gate of the Clansmen Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace. Lion sculptures were usually seen outside the gate of the major Chinese agencies, units or big private mansions. One of the two lions would usually step on a ball with round patterns. Zhang Tie found this latest fruit looked as same as the ball under the foot of the Chinese stony lion.

The surface of the fruit was covered with interlocked numerous round patterns. There was a six-petal flower in the middle of each round pattern. Additionally, the exterior of each round pattern was also divided into petals which looked similar to the six petals. As a result, each petal appeared in two round patterns, making this pattern both simple and sophisticated.

The tradition that Chinese put stony lions outside the gate could be dated to thousands of years ago before the Catastrophe. This was a cultural symbol. However, when Zhang Tie realized that the surface pattern of that ball under the foot of stony lion was consistent with that of this fruit, he became shocked.

Zhang Tie didn't understand why. Therefore, he stretched his hand towards that fruit and wanted to check its attributes.

——Wing Demons' Fruits of Source. It's not ripe yet. You cannot eat it.

——When this fruit becomes ripe, it will increase your life source and improve your health in an all-round manner.

——All the lives are sprouted from source seeds. Spiritual life rules reflect the source. The powerful strength is the outward manifestation of the source. This source is included in each fulfillment. It includes all the knowledge, rhythms, lives and holiness. It gathers female and male, brightness and darkness, positiveness and negativeness. It's the seed of lives, the blossom of lives and the fruit of lives. It's also the thriving tree of lives.

Watching the introduction of this fruit of source, although Zhang Tie didn't fully understand it at once, he instinctively felt this fruit was unusual and very powerful from both its look and its introduction.

Heller was waiting for Zhang Tie calmly under the high platform where the small tree rested on.

After peering at that fruit for a while, Zhang Tie went downstairs and came to Heller's side.

"What's the effect of this fruit of source?" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

"The most important process of cultivation for the human is to constantly light one's surging points, through which one could release the energy of source of life and communicate with this universe. The power of your source of life would be reflected in all aspects. From the aspect of fighting strength, it could increase the potential and strength of each of your surging point to the utmost!"

"How?"

"Each fruit of source could increase the source of your body by

1/12. That was to say, each fruit of source could also increase the potential of each surging point by 1/12!" Heller explained.

Zhang Tie was shocked, "Each surging point?"

"Right, each surging point! If each surging point on your body was regarded as a steam engine which could provide you driving force, with each fruit of source, your surging points' driving force would increase by 1/12. It's very effective for those surging points that you've already lit. After eating it, you could obviously feel the change of those surging points and your body. For those surging points which had not been lit, its effect would display when you light them!"

Although '1/12' was not an enormous figure, its effect was very terrifying. Because it was different essentially. According to Heller, when the surging points in one's body were seen as an engine, if others could only gain 12 horsepower by lighting a surging point, he would gain 13 horsepower by lighting a surging point. That would be an advantage.

"By lighting 12 surging points, I could gain the same effect as lighting 13 surging points. Based on my current fighting strength as a LV 9 fighter, as long as I eat a fruit of source, I would immediately gain the fighting strength of 3 more surging points. Additionally, after lighting each surging point, I would be a bit stronger than others. Gradually, the difference between me and others would be decisive. When I become a battle spirit, I would light 987 surging points. Because of the fruit of source, I would gain the power of 82 more surging points, which was close to the total number of surging points lit by a LV 11 battle master."

"A fruit of source could bring me the fighting strength of a LV 11 battle master. That is great!" Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh as he heard Heller's introduction. After losing seven-strength fruits, he finally gained a more powerful fruit...

"What are the other effects of this fruit of source?"

"It has many effects. As long as you eat it, your physical strength and endurance would increase by $1/12$. Normally, your life expectancy would extend by $1/12$. Additionally, the aging speed of your cells would slow down by $1/12$. The existence of all lives and their psychological activities reflect the source of lives. Life is the germination of source while death was the exhaustion of source."

Having not imagined that such a fruit could have so many effects, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth, "Ah, why $1/12$? Why not more? How long would this fruit take to become ripe?"

"12 is a mysterious figure. It's the reflection of life rules. You need to kill 360 wing demons, namely the total number of days of a whole year to ripe this wing demons' fruit of source."

"How many fruits of source could I gain from wing demons?"

"One, only one fruit of source from each kind of demon!"

"Ah, only one?" Zhang Tie became a bit disappointed after hearing Heller's answer.

"The more powerful the fruit is, the less you could gain. This also complies with the life rules. Like those living beings on the peak of the food chain, only when their population was small could the balance of the ecosystem be sustained!"

Zhang Tie understood it. He also recovered his composure, "If such a great fruit could be constantly obtained, that would violate the intention of the God. Even though I could constantly gain seven-strength fruits, it would also be very terrifying. I should be satisfied with this. After all, there're many kinds of demons. If I can get a fruit of source from each kind of demon, I would also have a bright future. But I'm afraid that I could barely get a shadow demon's fruit of source. Shadow demon is the rarest demon. It's hard to say whether there are 360 shadow demons in the world or not. It seems that this also complies with the universal law, even moon's shape would change with time. I should not have all the benefits. There should always be a pity!"

"Aww, I find the surface pattern of this fruit of source is same as that on the ball under the foot of stony Chinese lions, why?" Zhang Tie asked.

After glancing at Zhang Tie, Heller drew in the air by hands, displaying a three-dimensional pattern in front of Zhang Tie. In the beginning, a round appeared in the middle of that image. Gradually, the other rounds appeared and formed that pattern in front of Zhang Tie. After that, the whole image immediately turned into three-dimensional from two-dimensional. Rounds were interlocked with each other as they started to move, deriving various nice and complex geometrical patterns and scenes——

"This is tetrahedron; this is octahedron; this is dodecahedron; this is icosahedron; this is Plato cube, the basic architecture mode of the material world; this is the Mehta Thrun cube which symbolizes sacredness; this is Cassara time grid; this is Mer-Ka-Ba spiral..."

Heller explained as that image composed of rounds constantly derived, making Zhang Tie fascinated, "This is the Meiosis mode of human cells; this is the geometric interaction mode of light; this is Fibonacci sequence of number; this is genetic code arrangement of biological DNA; this is male; this is female; this is the chord structure of music; this is the transformation mode of mass energy of nuclear fission; this is the self-rotation mode of galaxy..."

After introducing them to Zhang Tie, Heller clapped, causing all the patterns and lines disappear one after another. Finally, they turned into the plain pattern composed of rounds once again. Heller watched Zhang Tie, "Did you understand?"

Zhang Tie was completely stunned, "How...how could that be?"

"This pattern is the totem and essence of sacred geometry. It has a lot of secrets. It represents spiritualism, intelligence, morality and physical source rules. You, humans, call it flower of life, words of light; but I prefer to call it words of source. In this age, very few

people understand its real meaning."

Zhang Tie became silent. He had never imagined that the ball under the stony Chinese lions that had been spread for thousands of years could contain such profound and sacred secrets and rules. No wonder those sculptures could become the symbol of magnification, power, sacredness and honor after being spread for thousands of years. When the stony lions stepped on the rules of source clearly, they would look extremely dignified.

When Zhang Tie knew that Chinese had already mastered the secret of the rules of source thousands of years ago and put the sacred geometric patterns under the foot of stony lion in a low-key and remarkable way, he finally understood why the Chinese clan in the Eastern Continent were so proud.

...

After eating those trouble-reappearance fruits which were formed by killing wing demons, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron.

Before leaving Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie watched those leakless fruits hanging on the small tree as he made a decision to grasp the method to promote to LV 10 as soon as possible. Otherwise, he would hardly deal with any possible dangers.

After drinking too much all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie had a good sleep.

When he woke up on the second day, Zhang Tie felt energetic as all of his wounds had recovered.

However, at this moment, the Logistics director had already brought a wholly new suit of air cavalry in the Idiots.

...

On the second day, the first page of the newspaper 'Holy War News' which was delivered to over 5 million frontline soldiers across the Selnes Theater of Operations by the Human Alliance Command was filled with one report——Selnes Eagle Swept Wing

Demons across Flatte City.

There were two pictures in the report. Zhang Tie's airship was covered with wounds. Like battle armors, the entire body of the glider was tainted with the fresh blood of wing demons; Zhang Tie's military exploits ranked first in the Military Exploits Ranking of Crystal Battle Fortress.

The newspaper 'Holy War News' was delivered once a week to the frontline troops, each time fixedly printing 100,000 pieces. This day, only several hours after it was delivered had the urgent remote-sensing messages been spread to the Human Alliance Command from all the frontline troops across the Selnes Theater of Operations. Almost all the troops that could touch with the command had sent the urgent letters—the 'Holy War News' is severely insufficient. We need more...

On the same day, a name——Zhang Tie, the Selnes Eagle started to spread across the Selnes Theater of Operations. Everybody kept this name in mind.

This name represented the first air cavalry across Waii Sub-Continent, an unprecedented powerful armed force that could completely conquer the air force of demons and a hope that could make all the despaired people spirited...

Along with this report, all the millions of soldiers across the Selnes Theater of Operations focused on the Crystal Battle Fortress...

Chapter 565: Great Honors

After seizing Flatte City, all the human troops across the south of Selnes Theater of Operations let out a deep sigh. If they were too intense about the holy war, they might collapse. Therefore, the Human Alliance Command conducted a propaganda widely towards the victory of Flatte battle by this chance, relieving all the troops.

As a brilliant new star in the battle of Flatte City, the Human Alliance Command especially dispatched a colonel to the Crystal Battle Fortress and expressed the order of commendation of the Command to Zhang Tie. He invited Zhang Tie to attend the reward ceremony in the Human Alliance Command of Mocco City on April 27th.

On April 26th, one day before Zhang Tie attended that reward ceremony had that order of commendation from the Command been delivered to all the frontline troops across Selnes Theater of Operations.

There was only one sentence in the order of commendation, which Zhang Tie had seen in the Crystal Battle Fortress.

——With the consent of the Holy War Alliance Command of Central Countries Alliance in Blackson Humans Corridor, we especially reward staff sergeant Zhang Tie, the air cavalry of Jinyun Country with the great honor of 'Selnes Eagle' and human glory medal.

This order of commendation won Zhang Tie another two records in Selnes Theater of Operations: the first one who obtained the honorary title and a human glory medal.

This honor was a special treatment as it was confirmed by the alliance command. Since the alliance command delivered this order of commendation, Zhang Tie's name had been closely related to Selnes. Selnes Eagle was not a nickname anymore; it was a great

honor, which could be written in the history and be placed in front of his name at any place. This honor was even more important than any military rank and official post in the army. With this honor, Zhang Tie enjoyed the supreme treatment in any country across Blackson Humans Corridor.

This was the first honor rewarded by the Holy War Alliance Command of Central Countries Alliance in Blackson Humans Corridor since the beginning of the 3rd holy war and the first honor that someone won in the 3rd holy war across the Blackson Humans Corridor.

So was the human glory medal. Like an iron-blood medal, the human glory medal also carried a special meaning. Iron-blood medal was set by Norman Empire in order to commend the bravest soldiers in troops; human glory medal was also used to commend those individuals who had excellent performance in the battle with demons and raised the morale of all the human troops.

Each human glory medal indicated the winner's great contribution to humans in the holy war.

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded by the two great honors. Based on his performance in Flatte City, it was normal for Zhang Tie to gain one of the two honors; however, Zhang Tie found it a bit excessive to be rewarded with both honors.

Zhang Tie understood the reason quickly. Actually, the one who needed the two honors most was not him but the alliance command and the human troops of over 5 million soldiers who were converging at the frontline of Selnes Theater of Operations.

At this moment, a black horse, a victory by a narrow margin and the great honors which could show everyone the light of hope in the future are the most inspiring spiritual medicament for the frontline troops to survive on.

Historically, there were many similar examples. Even if there were no heroes, they would fabricate a hero, not to mention a real

hero like him. Perhaps some people in the alliance command were very thrilled to see such a hero at such a critical moment as they were dreaming about that.

From Blackhot City, all that Zhang Tie had experienced these years had made him gradually mature. He had special opinions on many things. Zhang Tie frankly adopted his honors. He was neither too proud nor too modest. Zhang Tie had a sense of achievement about these honors and was satisfied with his growth.

Zhang Tie was also very calm about the intention of some big figures in the alliance command. "Now that Selnes Theater of Operations needs such a figure and I meet the conditions of becoming such a figure coincidentally, I don't mind being used to increase the morale of the soldiers across the theater of operations as a spiritual medicament."

In any case, it was always good to show hope to so many people. No matter what, this was a duel between humans and demons. As long as it was beneficial to humans and didn't violate Zhang Tie's behavioral principles, Zhang Tie could basically accept it.

On April 27th, the entire theater of operations started to drizzle as if it wanted the battlefield to cease. After seizing the Flatte City, the demons' offense was curbed temporarily. These days, Selnes Plain was relatively safer. Although there were always skirmishes, almost all the battles above the scale of the division had disappeared. Encounters with LV 9 demon squad also decreased a lot. Therefore, everyone took a good rest for a few days.

Including Zhang Tie. His glider was almost discarded as useless as its airfoils and empennage were severely damaged. There were too many wounds on the glider. In the words of the crew members of the Idiots, it was already a miracle for him to drive it back.

Through this air battle, Zhang Tie accumulated a lot of experiences. Therefore, Zhang Tie was digesting what he achieved in this air battle in the trouble-reappearance situations these days

as he recuperated and built up spirit for the preparation of the next battle.

Zhang Tie's way to recuperate and build up spirit became a scene in the Crystal Battle Fortress. Almost every morning, he would call those crew members of the Idiots to beat him in boxing gloves. He just defended them yet not escaped. He asked them to beat him 2 hours a day.

Many people in the Crystal Battle Fortress became confused about this, "Is this how the first air cavalry in Selnes Theater of Operations trains himself? It's indeed very special." Zhang Tie told them by training in this way could increase his anti-strike ability. Being influenced by the halos of his reputation, many soldiers started to learn from him.

Near 2 pm, Zhang Tie wearing a wholly new suit of air cavalry drove a military SUV towards Mocco City together with Lan Yunxi to attend the reward ceremony held in the alliance command in Mocco City.

As the commander of the airship troop of Jinyun Country, Lan Yunxi was also rewarded and invited by the alliance command due to her excellent performance in Flatte battle. Therefore, Lan Yunxi and Zhang Tie left the Crystal Battle Fortress together in the public.

Since Zhang Tie woke up in the ward, he had not seen Lan Yunxi. Lan Yunxi was also busy dealing with after-war affairs in the airship troop. This time, Zhang Tie was really attracted by Lan Yunxi.

In a military officer's ceremonial dress of the airship troop of Jinyun Country, Lan Yunxi looked bold, elegant and beautiful. The plump breasts and the tightening elegant curve from her knees to her butts in her ceremonial dress constantly attracted Zhang Tie's attention.

Lan Yunxi also wore a pair of middle-heeled black leather shoes,

which made her look more womanly.

Beautiful feet, beautiful legs, beautiful butts, beautiful waist, beautiful breasts and beautiful look, that's Lan Yunxi's image in Zhang Tie's eyes. Even if she lost her temper towards him, Zhang Tie would find her especially cute.

"What are you looking at?" finding Zhang Tie's eyes becoming increasingly audacious, Lan Yunxi became a bit bashful as she glared at Zhang Tie, "Drive your car carefully!"

Zhang Tie sighed, "Chinese culture is really profound and extensive! I remember an old Chinese saying which is really wise!"

"What old saying?" Lan Yunxi's curiosity was aroused.

"A short departure is better than a new marriage!" Zhang Tie teased Lan Yunxi.

"Shut up!" Lan Yunxi slightly blushed as she inclined her head and watched the drizzling scenery in the wild.

Watching Lan Yunxi turning her head, Zhang Tie immediately touched her thigh. Lan Yunxi caught Zhang Tie's hand and pushed it away. Zhang Tie reached out his hand and was pushed away once again. After repeating it three times, Lan Yunxi became irritated, "Do you want to perform as a glider again?"

"I have to do something even if I would be beaten ferociously!" Zhang Tie replied as he put his hand on Lan Yunxi's thigh once again.

"Villain!" Lan Yunxi swore Zhang Tie. However, she didn't push Zhang Tie's hand away this time.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Since Lan Yunxi would like to attend the reward ceremony with him and would like to sit in the front of the car, Zhang Tie had known that he had a chance to touch Lan Yunxi today. If Lan Yunxi really opposed him, she would choose to sit in the back seats. After experiencing so many women, Zhang Tie had been able to recognize women's delicate mental changes

very well.

Driving the vehicle and touching Lan Yunxi's thigh which felt nice, Zhang Tie sighed satisfactorily.

"Why did you sigh?" Lan Yunxi didn't care about Zhang Tie's hand anymore as Zhang Tie's petting made her comfortable and especially stimulative. Lan Yunxi's face slightly blushed; however, she still pretended that nothing happened.

"To drive a car and pet my beloved woman's thigh. That's what I had dreamed of. I've never imagined that this could happen so fast. However, under such an environment, I cannot stand but sigh!" Zhang Tie explained as he glanced at Lan Yunxi, "What's your dream?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, Lan Yunxi's eyes became a bit vacant, "My dream?"

"Yup, what's your dream?"

"Nobody asked me about that before."

"Is it a strange question?"

"Yes, it is for me!" Lan Yunxi smiled which looked a bit disappointed, "I've awakened a powerful ancestral bloodline when I was born. Therefore, since I was 3 years old, everybody around me had set the only life target for me, namely, to be the most, most, most excellent person so as to live up my sacred bloodline. Therefore, I probably dream to be such a person!"

Zhang Tie stopped petting her at once as he turned to watch Lan Yunxi, "Haven't you thought about what you were really desiring for since you were born?"

"No, I don't desire for anything at all. Because all that I want has been piled up in front of me by choice. You might not know how Huaiyuan Palace educated me. The first lesson of my life was taught by my father. In the classroom, he made me understand that those things which could be bought with money were not

worthwhile to be treasured and admired. I should learn to exchange money and those worthless things for something more valuable!" Lan Yunxi let out a sigh.

"Ah, what?" Zhang Tie was shocked.

"I remember that when I was only 4 years old, I saw a beautiful toy in another little girl's hand. I liked it very much and wanted to have one like that too. I told my father about that. My father didn't say anything to me at that time. On the 2nd day, he took me to a very distant city by airship. In a warehouse of that city, I saw piles of toys. My father told me that all the toys belonged to me, even that factory which produced the toys. He let me choose one. I didn't because I lost my interest in toys at once. I even started to dislike those lifeless toys. Do you know what happened then?"

"What happened? Your dad let you burn all of the toys?" Zhang Tie guessed.

"No, my father transported all the toys back to Huaiyuan Prefecture by airship. In a festival, he let me gift the toys to strange girls one after another. As a result, I exchanged those toys I disliked for more praises and reputation for the first time in my whole life. This was my first lesson."

"You grew up in this way?" Zhang Tie asked seriously as he watched Lan Yunxi, "You were always under the control of others since you were a little girl!"

Lan Yunxi nodded...

With a shrill sound, Zhang Tie braked the car.

Chapter 566: A Sharp Contrast

Seeing Zhang Tie parking the car, Lan Yunxi turned to watch Zhang Tie, "What do you want?"

"I won't go to the alliance command!" Zhang Tie started to back his car rapidly while staring at the rear-view mirror.

Under Zhang Tie's manipulation, the powerful military SUV moved back several meters before changing its direction quickly.

"You won't go to the alliance command?" Lan Yunxi widely opened her eyes at once.

"Hmm, I have free time now, I can show you something cool and let you know the feeling of being a poor student. I will show you the taste of being not excellent in others' eyes..." as Zhang Tie said this, he changed the direction and headed for the southwest, instead of Mocco City.

"Are you insane? Don't you know that this reward ceremony is mainly prepared for you? The alliance command will reward a human glory medal to you. So many big figures are waiting to see you in the command. By this chance, you can accumulate many human resources. Many people might not have such a rare chance in their lives and you refuse it?" Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie like watching a lunatic.

Zhang Tie pursed his lips stubbornly, "After all, the order of commendation has been delivered. This is just a ceremony. Those big figures have nothing to do with me. Just treat it as playing truant in the school meeting!"

Lan Yunxi drew in a deep breath, "Take me to Mocco City. I will go there!"

Zhang Tie pulled up the safety switch on his left hand and locked all the doors at once. Only he could open them.

"Douchebag!" Lan Yunxi tried to open the doors; however, she

couldn't.

"As you're in my car, you have to follow my order. You're abducted by me today. You should obey my intention. If you disobey, humph...humph..." Zhang Tie sneered ferociously as he kept driving forward.

Crossing her hands, Lan Yunxi sat aside with an angry look. She ignored Zhang Tie for quite a while, Zhang Tie just drove his car silently. After 10 minutes, it stopped raining while it gradually became sunny.

"Where are we going?" Lan Yunxi finally opened her mouth.

"Hehe, I thought you would not ask about that. Don't worry. I will not abduct your wealth or sexually harass you. You will know that soon!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Zhang Tie had a good memory. After looking at the flight chart of the Selnes Theater of Operations, he had remembered that there was a glider base over 40 km away in the southwest of the Crystal Battle Fortress. He wanted to take Lan Yunxi to that place.

Realizing that Zhang Tie had made his decision to not go to the alliance command in Mocco City, Lan Yunxi didn't speak anymore. Not knowing why, she felt completely relaxed while staying with Zhang Tie.

"Why not take off your dress?" Zhang Tie suggested Lan Yunxi. After hearing his words, Lan Yunxi instantly glared at him. Zhang Tie hurriedly clarified, "The military officer's ceremonial dress looks nice; but it looks a bit tightening. As we're not going to attend that reward ceremony anymore, don't make yourself so restrictive. Relax yourself."

Lan Yunxi glanced at Zhang Tie twice before silently taking off her major's ceremonial dress, exposing her blue long-sleeve shirt.

Watching that plump breasts under her shirt, Zhang Tie whistled.

"Actually you can undo two buttons. It's not raining now and is getting hotter. Don't be that restrictive, young girl!" Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva as he urged.

Lan Yunxi gave a ferocious punch on Zhang Tie's head, causing him shriek miserably.

However, Lan Yunxi, whose face slightly blushed revealed a wisp of smile at her mouth corners at once.

...

Only after 20 more minutes, Zhang Tie had already seen that glider base.

There were two methods to set off a glider: to throw the glider by airship in the air; to drag the glider into the sky by airship. The gliders in this base set off with the second method. The gliders in this base could also serve as a supplementation of the airship troop in the Selnes Theater of Operations. This base was also available for the gliders of airship troop to land in emergency after losing contact with the airship. Across the Selnes Theater of Operations, there were over 10 bases of gliders like this one.

This base was founded on a hillside, which was surrounded by wire net. A medium-sized battle fortress was defending this place.

Zhang Tie parked outside the gate of the base, where a second lieutenant on duty requested him to get off his car.

"Please show me your ID certificate." the second lieutenant asked after glancing at Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi on his side, who looked pretty beautiful after putting off her officer's ceremonial dress and utterly different from her real status.

Zhang Tie handed that certificate of air cavalry through the window.

After opening Zhang Tie's certificate, the second lieutenant became stunned at once. After that, he started to quiver all over. He watched the certificate, then Zhang Tie. Then, he instantly

flushed while his eyes glittered...

"Ah, sir...aww...no, your excellency..." seeing the legendary figure that shocked the entire Selnes Theater of Operations, the second lieutenant immediately stammered. He wanted to call Zhang Tie sir; however, after remembering that Zhang Tie was a sergeant first class, which was higher than him, he found it improper to use that appellation. Therefore, he changed it into your excellency at once. Only general-level figures could enjoy the appellation 'Your Excellency' in the army. Besides generals, only the winner of a widely accepted honor could enjoy such an appellation.

"Easy bro, just call me Zhang Tie. My glider is broken. Coincidentally, your base is not far from the Crystal Battle Fortress; additionally, I was told that the gliders in your base were good. Therefore, I want to borrow one and give this beauty a ride in the air. Is it convenient?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes towards that second lieutenant as he pouted his mouth towards the copilot.

That second lieutenant watched Zhang Tie, then Lan Yunxi. He then understood it at once as he revealed an obscene smile that was familiar to all men. The second lieutenant drew in a deep breath as he immediately chested out, "No problem. Of course, the gliders of our Hoorn Republic are the best. It's our great honor to see you visit here, your excellency..."

After hearing that second lieutenant's words, Zhang Tie immediately knew that this base was Hoorn Republic's frontline base in Selnes Theater of Operations. "What a coincidence!" Zhang Tie became thrilled inside.

Hoorn Republic was a small republic state in Blackson Humans Corridor in the north of Kalay Mountain Range. It only had millions of people and covered over 100,000 square km. The overall national strength of the state could not even match that of a city. However, this state was very well-known for its glider sport in Blackson Human Corridor.

In Hoorn Republic, the glider sport had already become the quintessence of this state and a part of its countrymen's daily lives. Some figures could be used to describe the influence of the glider sport in Hoorn Republic—1 in 7 people would have a glider or a hang glider; 1 in 4 people had an experience in driving a glider or a hang glider. However, the total amount of deaths caused by the glider sport each year in other countries of Blackson Humans Corridor didn't even account for 1/10 of that died for the same reason in Hoorn Republic. The glider and hang glider export was one of the pillar industries in this state.

It seemed that many record keepers of the glider sport across Blackson Humans Corridor came from Hoorn Republic—Of course, before Zhang Tie shot into the sky.

Zhang Tie's arrival shocked the entire glider base. Everyone in the base from colonel Ohlson to those below him felt honorable and proud about Zhang Tie's arrival.

In the eyes of everyone in the base, it was not a request at all; it was completely the Selnes Eagle's confirmation and trust about the manufacturing technology of the glider in Hoorn Republic. If not Hoorn Republic's good reputation in manufacturing gliders, why would the Selnes Eagle borrow one here soon after his glider was damaged?

Only after a few minutes, the staff in the base had already prepared a WindTalker double-seat glider for Zhang Tie.

The wing of WindTalker was wider than that of the falcon. It was relatively shorter. It was specially designed as its horizontal empennage almost connected with its main wings. Additionally, there were two vertical empennages on its end.

The WindTalker was pushed into the track and hooked with the hauling cable on the capstan of the tractor. After Colonel Ohlson nodded towards Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie appreciated him. After that, under the gaze of a lot of soldiers in the base, he cradled Lan Yunxi

and walked towards the glider, causing Lan Yunxi shriek.

"Put me down!" Lan Yunxi's face turned red as she had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be so audacious in the public.

"You're now my juvenile delinquent who plays truant with me, you're my woman. You have to follow me!" Zhang Tie told Lan Yunxi.

Seeing this, all the soldiers in the base burst out into laughter.

Zhang Tie put Lan Yunxi onto the back seat and helped her buckle up. After that, he quickly sat in the cockpit and drew up the canopy. He then thumbed up.

Being drawn by the ground tractor, Zhang Tie's glider soon reached above 60 km/h on the track. The glider soon rushed to the end of the track. Under the effect of the ascending airflow from below the valley, the glider immediately separated from the hauling cable and flew in the air...

The glider constantly ascended. After hovering above the base for a while, it started to fly southward. As it wasn't raining in the south just now, it was a bit hot there. After a short while, Zhang Tie had already found an ascending thermal flow. Like climbing on stages, Zhang Tie just drove his glider and constantly ascended through accessing to thermal flows one after another.

At the beginning, Lan Yunxi looked calm as usual. However, seeing the data on the altimeter constantly rising and surpassed 10,000 m, Lan Yunxi's face slightly changed.

Zhang Tie kept ascending at a faster speed.

"I will take you to the highest point where nobody has ever arrived yet..." Zhang Tie told Lan Yunxi.

At 10,000 m, they had already been able to see the entire Selnes Plain; however, Zhang Tie didn't stop.

After half an hour, Zhang Tie's glider penetrated through the

thick clouds like a whale jumping out of the water and arrived at a height that Lan Yunxi had never imagined before. Nobody else could arrive at such a height by the glider.

At that height, wind softened, ground disappeared. They were stepping on undulating, white cloud sea while facing a rainbow which stretched over the sky. The beautiful scenery made them suffocated...

After recovering her composure, Lan Yunxi suddenly recalled a term "stratosphere".

"How possible?"

When Lan Yunxi was greatly shocked, the shameless voice of the guy in the cockpit drifted into her ears.

"Chick, how do you feel by playing truant? Can you coordinate with me by some shrieks? If you feel suffocated here, you can just groan for a while. If you do that, I will have a sense of achievement. Don't worry. It's high here. Nobody would hear that. No matter what, this is our first time to reach above the clouds. A LV 12 great battle master should be adapted to such an environment..."

"Do you want to hear shrieks?" Lan Yunxi's voice softened at once.

"Yes, can you coordinate with me?" Zhang Tie became thrilled.

"No problem!"

After a few seconds...

"Ah..." someone shrilled in the glider. However, it was not Lan Yunxi, but Zhang Tie. A hand of a LV 12 great battle master penetrated through the back of Zhang Tie's chair as it ferociously pinched Zhang Tie's arm.

This was Lan Yunxi's first time to pinch a person's arm since she was born...

...

The reward ceremony was ongoing in the alliance command of Mocco City. The conference hall was converged with stars, including all the noble ones coming from the central states alliance's base in Mocco City. As those being rewarded showed up one after another, the atmosphere in the rewarding ceremony became a bit weird.

Because the main character that they wanted to see didn't appear at all.

Everybody was looking around. Many were watching the entrance of the conference hall.

Some generals sitting in the rostrum of the conference hall looked as black as the bottom of a pot. When it was close to Zhang Tie's name, a man in colonel's suit entered the side door of the conference hall and came to the rostrum. He then lowered his body and whispered to Howard, the chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff.

General Howard slightly frowned his snowwhite eyebrows when he heard the whispers of the colonel. After two seconds, when the colonel left the rostrum, General Howard recovered his composure.

"May I have your attention, please. I've gotten the latest news. Our Selnes Eagle was on his way here. After finding some wing demons breaking through our frontline defense, Sergeant First Class Zhang Tie gave up the chance to attend this rewarding ceremony at once. He instantly drove to the nearest glider base and chased after the wing demons..."

After General Howard finished his words, the conference hall became quiet for two seconds before bursting out thunder-like applause...

"Only such a person is worth the honor of Selnes Eagle and the

Human Glory Medal!"

"Sergeant First Class Zhang Tie is a real fighter..."

"We have to ask 'Holy War News' to make a good report for it. We need to show all the soldiers how our Selnes Eagle fulfill his responsibilities for his honor!"

"Yes, yes..."

Excessive praise filled the hall. By contrast, Zhang Tie was traveling with his woman above clouds.

However, before those noble ones finished their praises, a ground-breaking boom had drifted into their ears, causing the crystal ceiling lamp to shake.

Alchemist's bomb?

Everyone realized what happened at once. That boom was less than 1 km away from here.

All the people sprung up from their seats as they exchanged glances with each other with the confused look...

"What's happening?" General Howard became infuriated as he smacked the table and stood up.

After a few minutes, they knew what happened. A military SUV with the driving license of Jinyun Country was boomed by alchemists' bomb on the avenue 1 km away from the alliance command.

The raider and all the passengers in the military SUV were killed. Besides, over 400 people were wounded and many buildings were damaged in the neighboring street.

The ones in the vehicle were an adviser and two retainers of the alliance command. 2 hours ago, the alliance command dispatched some people to investigate what happened to Zhang Tie in Crystal Battle Fortress. However, their vehicles anchored on the way there. Therefore, they could only come back by the SUVs of the

Crystal Battle Fortress.

An adviser, some commoners and the SUV, the total value of which could never match that of an alchemist's bomb. They were obviously not the real target. Who was the real target of the raider then?

After realizing that the Selnes Eagle would attend the rewarding ceremony by the vehicle of Crystal Battle Fortress today, everybody understood that the real target of the bomb was rightly the main character of this rewarding ceremony. The raider waited on Zhang Tie's necessary route for the alliance command. At the sight of the SUV heading for the alliance command from the direction of the Crystal Battle Fortress, they launched the attack...

Everyone felt chilly at once...

Chapter 567: Breaking Sun Sutra

Until it was completely dark and the sky had dotted with sparkling stars did Zhang Tie take Lan Yunxi back to the Crystal Battle Fortress by the glider under the brilliance of the two bright moons.

After sliding on the ground for a small distance, the glider finally parked. Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi then got off the glider together. Seeing this, the ground service staff ran towards here.

"Thank you!" Lan Yunxi told Zhang Tie, "I'm very happy today. It was a nice trip."

Zhang Tie glanced at those ground servicemen who were running towards here before revealing a smile to Lan Yunxi, "I'm glad that you liked it. Remember to call me when you want to play truant next time!"

Lan Yunxi replied with a smile, "Actually, I found you're not that bad."

"Of course. I'm one of the top 4 excellent teenagers in Blackhot City. I'm a very good person, okay?" Zhang Tie urged.

"I will go back first. You'd better not expose your talent to others."

Zhang Tie knew that Lan Yunxi referred to his talent of driving a glider into the stratosphere. A fabulous experience for the glider drivers for sure. It magnified the application of atmospheric phenomenon.

Below the stratosphere was the troposphere. The ascending airflow which enabled gliders to fly was the product of troposphere. This airflow stopped ascending when it reached below the stratosphere. According to common sense, gliders could never reach as high as the stratosphere. However, Zhang Tie could make it. Besides the ascending thermal airflow, Zhang Tie could

also sense some more powerful spiral ascending airflow in the troposphere.

If there was a high mountain range below or in the place where cold and hot air converged with each other, this powerful spiral ascending airflow might appear temporarily. The moment Zhang Tie seized it could he keep his glider climbing up until reaching the stratosphere. He could fly steadily and rapidly below the stratosphere.

This was also the maximal flight height of gliders theoretically. The temperature above the stratosphere was higher than that below the stratosphere. Therefore, sinking cold airflow could always be seen in the stratosphere. This situation was completely opposite to that of the troposphere. Therefore, no glider could reach this height, even theoretically. This was determined by the flight principles.

Knowing that Lan Yunxi was concerned about him, Zhang Tie nodded, "Don't worry. I will not show off this talent unless it's necessary!"

"Why was it necessary for you today?" Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie with a bashful look.

"Because it's always necessary for me to stay with you!" Zhang Tie watched Lan Yunxi fervently.

"Have a good sleep!" Lan Yunxi turned away her bashful eyes as she said kindly.

"You too!"

Lan Yunxi nodded before walking towards the Crystal Battle Fortress. After walking a few steps, she suddenly turned around and asked, "Can you promise me one thing?"

"What?"

"Don't take any other women by your glider ever!"

"I won't!" Zhang Tie replied decisively.

"Humph!" Lan Yunxi left with a good mood.

Seeing Lan Yunxi leaving, Zhang Tie almost howled towards the moon. He felt that his relationship with Lan Yunxi had entered a new stage from then on. Because Lan Yunxi had changed and become very womanly in front of him. Zhang Tie had never seen that before.

After handing the WindTalker to the ground servicemen, Zhang Tie whistled and walked towards the Idiots vigorously. He planned to have the Idiots transport the WindTalker back to the glider base tomorrow. And by the way, he would drive back his SUV from there.

Zhang Tie's memory was filled with Lan Yunxi's nice face. However, when he returned to the Idiots, he found the first mate sad. Zhang Tie instantly woke up from the sense of falling in love.

"What's wrong?" at the sight of the look of the first mate, Zhang Tie had already known that something happened.

"You didn't go there today?"

"Hmm, I changed my opinion on the way. I took a ride in the sky!"

"Thankfully, you didn't go there. If you went there, you might not be able to come back!" the first mate replied with a smile.

"What happened?" Zhang Tie became stunned.

"Something happened in the Mocco City. The entire city is in curfew now..." the first mate then told Zhang Tie about what happened today.

After hearing his words, Zhang Tie changed his face. He had not imagined that he was worth being boomed with an alchemist's bomb by those motherf*cking demons lackeys. If he went there together with Lan Yunxi today, he might not survive.

According to the witnesses, when the SUV from Crystal Battle Fortress drew close to the alliance command, someone suddenly rushed to the side of the SUV and ignited the alchemist's bomb. Everything over there was boomed into pieces. Nobody could react in that case.

"Three-Eye Association, that b*stard must be dispatched by the Three-Eye Association."

The moment he thought that Lan Yunxi was in the same vehicle with him, Zhang Tie became scared. An unprecedented fury and a killing intent started to boil in Zhang Tie's heart.

The Human Glory Medal of Zhang Tie had been sent here by people from the alliance command. It was a diamond-shaped medal with a Chinese character "人" in the middle of it. Below that character was Zhang Tie's name. It looked pretty delicate.

What was unprecedented was that this medal was a rare rune equipment. There was a very special rune effect on the medal. When he wore it on his chest, with the effect of rune equipment on the medal, Zhang Tie's voice could increase by 8% on loudness and force of penetration.

This effect could be very remarkable in the public. It was also an effective manner for Zhang Tie to display his honor and dignity.

Zhang Tie named it 'small trumpet' privately...

...

On the next morning, after getting up and finishing his morning classes, someone from Crystal Battle Fortress came to inform Zhang Tie that Lan Yunxi wanted to see him. Zhang Tie tidied up his clothes before coming to Lan Yunxi's office in the Crystal Battle Fortress.

Zhang Tie knew that Lan Yunxi probably wanted to see him for what happened in Mocco City yesterday.

At this moment, Lan Yunxi had recovered her dignified look as

the commander of the airship troop of Jinyun Country in Selnes Theater of Operations. At the sight of Lan Yunxi's solemn look, Zhang Tie's also became serious.

"Have you known what happened in Mocco City yesterday?"

"I have!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Perhaps there's some information that you don't know. After what happened yesterday, the alliance command has started to investigate the source of that alchemist's bomb. Finally, they found it was from the strategic arsenal of the Symbian Republic, which was right in the Mocco City. 3 alchemist' bombs lost in that arsenal. The director and many people being related to this case had been arrested. Although after the strict interrogation, there was still no answer. Nobody knew how the three alchemist's bombs were lost at all!"

"That means there are two more alchemist's bombs waiting for me?" Zhang Tie sneered, "I'm really worthwhile in their eyes!"

Lan Yunxi nodded, "This event is not as simple as it is apparently. This event reveals that the Mocco City and the alliance command have been penetrated by Three-Eye Association!"

"That was expected. As so many people from different countries are gathering in Selnes Theater of Operations, it would be abnormal if there was no mole of Three-Eye Association among them. Additionally, from this event, we now know there might be more than one mole of Three-Eye Association among them in Selnes Theater of Operations!"

"Therefore, you need to be very careful!"

"I will!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Here you go!" Lan Yunxi took out a very precious item and gave it to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie took it and found that was a half-palm sized square item being covered with a brilliant gold pattern which looked like

a clan identification plate. In the middle of the gold pattern was a weird matchbox-sized black crystal.

"What's this?" Zhang Tie looked at it for a while.

"You will know it after injecting your spiritual energy into that piece of crystal!"

"Is it another rune equipment?" Zhang Tie was moved as he injected a wisp of spiritual energy into that piece of black crystal.

In a split second, some golden words had appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

——"Breaking Sun Sutra"

Zhang Tie injected in more spiritual energy and started to skim over the words and images in the book one page after another.

"It has the secret knowledge on cultivation?" Zhang Tie became spirited as he felt a bit thirsty. However, he still forced his spirit to retreat out of it.

He then watched Lan Yunxi and drew in a deep breath, "Is this the secret knowledge of Huaiyuan Palace?"

"Yes, you can light all the 987 surging points in your body according to the contents in the Breaking Sun Sutra. You can be promoted all the way to LV 16 and become a battle spirit!"

人 means human.

Chapter 568: The Secret of Surging Points

'Breaking Sun Sutra' was unusual. Zhang Tie had noticed that from its carrier. Zhang Tie admitted that he had not seen a secret knowledge made into a rune equipment although he had rich experiences.

Zhang Tie was sure that it must cost a lot to store so many contents into a piece of marvelous crystal and enable people to read it by injecting spiritual energy in.

In this age, all the contents on cultivation above LV 10 were top secret knowledge and were treasured by all big clans. They would not be exposed to the public easily, not to mention the contents of 'Breaking Sun Sutra', which could help one light all the surging points smoothly and promote all the way from strong fighter to battle spirit. The value and position of 'Breaking Sun Sutra' were among the top treasure of Huaiyuan Palace for sure. Commoners could never touch it. Even though Zhang Tie had stayed in Hidden Dragon Island for so long, he had not heard about 'Breaking Sun Sutra' at all.

"Does anyone else know that you gave me the Breaking Sun Sutra?" Zhang Tie stared at Lan Yunxi with gleaming eyes.

Lan Yunxi turned her face away, "You don't need to know that. No matter what, to constantly improve your fighting strength is always the best guarantee for you to survive dangers. You're just a LV 9. Seriously, you just stepped on the road of cultivation. With this book, you could cut it short."

"I'm sorry, I cannot take it!" although Zhang Tie was desiring about the contents, he still put the 'Breaking Sun Sutra' back in front of Lan Yunxi decisively.

"Why?" Lan Yunxi glared at Zhang Tie with a confused look.

Zhang Tie smirked, "Because the more you help me now, the

more difficult it will be for me to marry you in the future. If those elders in Huaiyuan Palace knew that I promoted to LV 10 with your help, you tell me how would they see me. Additionally, if I accepted it, it would definitely pose negative influence on you. I know that even in Huaiyuan Palace 'Breaking Sun Sutra' could still not be touched by everyone!"

"Do you know how difficult the road of cultivation is above LV 9? You might easily lose your life!"

"I don't know. But I'd like to hear that if you want to tell me. But you'd better not tell me the contents of the 'Breaking Sun Sutra', I will not listen to it!" Zhang Tie said languidly.

Zhang Tie's look made Lan Yunxi angry. However, she also felt warm, "There are totally 987 surging points in human body. People would light all the surging points on his or her spine from LV 1 to LV 9. All the surging points on one's spine were visible surging points. The shrine surging point was called original point, which was the foundation of one's cultivation. When one's cultivation reached a certain degree, those visible surging points would appear naturally. As long as one constantly polish these bright surging points with spiritual energy, he or she might light these surging points on his spine!"

"I know this. But I've not heard about the appellation visible surging points and original point!"

"The visible surging points could be seen in the sunshine, which could be manifested. The original point refers to the original point of one's cultivation. Because of its special function, it's usually not mentioned together with other surging points in human body. Being contrary to this, besides 34 visible surging points and that special shrine surging point, there are 953 invisible surging points, which could not be seen. Those invisible surging points could only be manifested through special method and cultivation process. Each piece of the 639 muscles and 206 bones contains a surging point. Besides, the special energy gathering centers in the brain,

guts and the other places of human body also contain surging points. After lighting all of these surging points, visible and invisible, one would reach LV 16."

"Wait..." Zhang Tie became a bit stunned as it was his first time to hear these contents, "You mean human guts also contain surging points, including heart?"

"Of course, there are 7 surging points on one's heart. After lighting the 7 surging points, one could become smarter!"

"7-hole heart?" an old Chinese saying appeared in Zhang Tie's mind at once. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the 7-hole heart meant that when 7 surging points on one's heart were lit, one would become smarter.

"It seems that I only need to find all these surging points and light them all so as to promote my level gradually." Zhang Tie became excited. He had never thought it was so easy to cultivate above LV 9.

"No way. If it was so easy, the secret knowledge above LV 10 would be seen everywhere in the market!" Lan Yunxi warned Zhang Tie after knowing what Zhang Tie was thinking about, "Human potential is locked in one's surging points. When you light these surging points, you're actually unlocking your potential. If the human body is treated as a safe full of wealth, those invisible surging points would be the code of this safe. You think you can try this code at no cost? Do you think it's as easy as playing house like kids?"

"You mean I have to follow some mysterious rule or order to light the rest 953 invisible surging points? You mean I could not easily find those invisible surging points. If the order is wrong, it would bring me a very severe outcome."

"You're not too stupid. Tell me how many orders and methods do you need to try before lighting the 953 surging points?"

Lan Yunxi's question was not complex. It was just a mathematical problem. Having received math education for some years, Zhang Tie could easily understand it. He then started mental arithmetic by abacus. However, in a split second, Zhang Tie became puzzled as the result was out of Zhang Tie's upper limit.

Because it was a terrifyingly enormous figure—— $953*952*951*950*949...$ he needed to keep multiplying these figures in this way until 2. Only after completing the first three steps, Zhang Tie had already gained an enormous figure 862800456. In the fourth step, it became 819660433200. In the 5th step, the 13-column abacus in Zhang Tie's mind had already failed to hold this figure anymore.

This was just a beginning. He needed to keep multiplying like this until 952 steps later. The final result might be read for over 10 minutes by people.

Watching Zhang Tie's face, Lan Yunxi knew that he had already realized how severe was the problem. Therefore, she said, "Do you know that? The cultivation method above LV 9 is very precious because it is contained in the infinite possibilities. Like a grain of gold in the ocean, such infinite possibilities also contain infinite wrong cultivation methods and death traps. If there's any problem with the order and method to light those surging points, you might explode and die at any time or at least become handicapped!"

Lan Yunxi's words utterly overthrew Zhang Tie's presumption about the cultivation process above LV 9. Previously, Zhang Tie thought that the cultivation process above LV 9 was like that below LV 9. He thought he only needed to find the surging points and light them one after another. He had not imagined that there were so many possibilities in the process of cultivation above LV 9 and so many risks were buried in the process. He once thought that everyone would follow the same order to light surging points above LV 9.

"No way!" Lan Yunxi glanced at Zhang Tie, "When you lit surging

points, you were also decoding your body's treasury. Different decoding processes would trigger different potentials and abilities of human bodies. Of course, they would bring different results. Like how painters paint, although they use the same raw materials, they could make different paintings. After matching and mixing with different colors, they could display completely different paintings."

"What do you mean by different results?"

"Take the simplest example, one cultivated Zhang's 'Breaking Sun Sutra', the other one cultivated Lan's 'Big Dipper Sutra'. Both of them were promoted to LV 10. Although both of them could open qi sea and release battle qi in the air, the one who cultivated 'Breaking Sun Sutra' would be 10% more powerful than that who cultivated 'Big Dipper Sutra'. Additionally, the one who cultivated 'Big Dipper Sutra' would have sharper insight and responsive ability than that one cultivated 'Breaking Sun Sutra'!"

"At LV 11, the one who cultivated 'Breaking Sun Sutra' would gain a chance to strengthen his visual ability greatly while the battle qi of the one who cultivated 'Big Dipper Sutra' would have one more harmful attribute. Gradually, both parties would have increasingly greater differences on many aspects, which further determine the differences between their battle skills and cultivation roads!"

Chapter 569: Being Clear

"In this age, according to Chinese traditions, any secret knowledge that helps people promote all the way from LV 10 to LV 16 can be called sutra, which indicated its qualified, dignified position."

"The cultivation of visible and invisible surging points are too complex that it contains hundreds of billions of methods, which could not be concluded by humans after the Catastrophe without making any mistakes. Instead, they were the far-ancient cultural product that people discovered in the underground relics. That's why cultivation methods above LV 10 are very precious!"

Lan Yunxi continued to explain as Zhang Tie gradually understood the world of cultivation above LV 10. At the same time, a question appeared in his mind.

"Now that such a secret knowledge is so precious, why have I encountered many human fighters above LV 10. Have all of them gotten the precious secret knowledge?"

"That's what I'm gonna tell you and what should catch your attention. Besides those secret knowledge being called sutra, there were many other levels of secret knowledge on cultivation across the Waii Sub-Continent and other continents, such as law, rule, know-how, skill and technique. When you meet one of them, you'd better not be too happy with them and cultivate them at once. If not, you might regret for the rest of your life."

"Ah? Why?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Because the above 5 kinds of secret knowledge could not promote you all the way from LV 10 to LV 16 smoothly. Instead, when you reach a certain level, you will completely lose the advancing route later. That's a dead end. You might not advance even a bit at a certain level!" Lan Yunxi told Zhang Tie with a solemn look.

"Where do they come from?"

"These kinds of secret knowledge are incomplete secret knowledge of cultivation which were discovered from underground relics. After losing the later parts, they were called law, rule, know-how, skill and technique so as to separate them from those sutras, which contain complete cultivation methods."

"What about the differences between law, rule, know-how, skill and technique in details?"

"Among these kinds of secret knowledge, those being called law under sutra are the best, which could promote people to LV 15; followed by rule, which could promote one to LV 14; know-how, which could promote one to LV 13; skill, which could promote one to LV 12. Those being called technique are the worst, with which you could only promote to LV 11 at most, some of which could only promote you to LV 10. If one cultivates such laws, rules, know-hows, skills and techniques, after reaching upper limits, they could only watch their invisible surging points as they dared not light them. As long as they mistook the order of lighting surging points, they might lose their lives while lighting the next surging point!"

"Do they still cultivate such kinds of secret knowledge?"

"Of course. Do you think that everyone else could have a chance to pick and treat sutra as shit like you at such a critical moment?" Lan Yunxi rolled her eyes at Zhang Tie, "In the entire Waii Sub-Continent, even laws, rules, know-hows, skills and techniques are the top secret knowledge, which are only in the hands of very few people. Many people might not have a chance to see it in their whole lives. Additionally, each one has different qualifications, gifts and cultivation conditions. Many people would be satisfied if they could reach LV 11 or 12. Therefore, suppose if they could be guided to reach this level, they would be very satisfied!"

Lan Yunxi's words reminded Zhang Tie about his experience in Blackhot City. At that time, his elder brother, who had just

reached LV 5 made all the family members very happy and proud of him. They were thinking about the dignified look of him when he became the commission officer in Blackhot City. At that time, Zhang Tie would already be satisfied if he could reach LV 7 or 8, not to mention LV 10. By the way, he could never imagine that he would be concerned about the cultivation road above LV 10.

"If so, whether 'Breaking Sun Sutra' is the only secret knowledge in Huaiyuan Palace?"

"Of course not. Huaiyuan Palace also has many other inferior secret knowledge. They would be delivered to different people according to their personal situations. 'Breaking Sun Sutra' could only be cultivated by excellent talents in Zhang's direct descendants. Additionally, they could only get a part of the 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. Only when their level and contribution to the clan reach a certain degree could they cultivate the rest part of 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. Very few people could be rewarded with class II or class III cultivation method of 'Breaking Sun Sutra' at once!"

Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile, "She must be condemning about my silly deed. The others might only get class II cultivation contents of 'Breaking Sun Sutra' after hard efforts, however, I refused to accept the complete contents of 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. No wonder Lan Yunxi looks a bit angry."

However, Zhang Tie still felt that he had made the right decision. "Given the importance of the 'Breaking Sun Sutra', if I accepted it frankly, Lan Yunxi would carry a greater responsibility in the clan. I don't want my woman to sustain such a heavy burden for me." Zhang Tie had been very satisfied to know that Lan Yunxi wanted to shoulder risks for him.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like coming to the right place.

"You mean even sutras have different effects in the later phases. Do you mean that even sutras have different positions and could bring us different achievements after unlocking the human

potential treasury?"

"Yes. Even complete sutras would have different positions. These sutras were all products in the far-ancient times. In that age, although these secret knowledge were complete for cultivation; due to a hierarchical system, these sutras also had different positions. They were divided into 7 levels, namely emperor-level, throne-level, duke-level, marquis-level, count-level, viscount-level, baron-level, which was similar to the divisions of human noble..."

"Is there a sharp difference between different levels of secret knowledge?"

"Before promoting to knight officially, these secret knowledge, as long as they are complete, would not have a sharp difference with each other after lighting all the surging points. However, when one promotes to a knight and reaches a certain phase, these secret knowledge would have different effects, which might cause sharp differences in fighting skills."

"Might?" Zhang Tie watched Lan Yunxi with a dubious look.

"Yes, might. Although the secret knowledge are different in levels, after promoting to the knight, when you want to advance to higher cultivation levels, you might not qualify due to some objective conditions. You might not be able to use your advantage and possibility which were granted by your high-end secret knowledge. After all, the cultivation conditions and cultivation resources in this age are sharply different than that before the Catastrophe. Those could be easily done before the Catastrophe might be extremely difficult in this age."

After thinking for a second, Zhang Tie asked, "Look whether it's like this. If I cultivate a high-end secret knowledge now, it's like a poor guy suddenly becomes a legal successor of a great sum of legacy. That sum of legacy is in abroad, which could not be succeeded until I am 30 years old. However, when I am 30 years old, I might not go abroad due to many reasons such as war, etc..

Therefore, it's nothing different than having the right and also not!"

"Right. Accurately, you have the right of succession to that legacy. However, when you can succeed that legacy, you don't know where's that legacy. As a result, you could only live the same life as others. However, as long as you could find that legacy, you could instantly become the No. 1 richest person in the country. By contrast, those who cultivate inferior secret knowledge are unable to succeed that legacy even though it's in front of them. This is the difference between cultivating different levels of secret knowledge."

After hearing Lan Yunxi's explanation, Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he finally understood the difference between a poor guy and a princess. Lan Yunxi perhaps has long known these knowledge. However, for Zhang Tie, everything was so fresh. If not being told by Lan Yunxi, He didn't know when would he understand that the cultivation methods were so important above LV 10, which might even influence the cultivation after promoting to the knight. "That's too complex!"

Zhang Tie smacked his lips, "What's the level of 'Breaking Sun Sutra' of Zhang Clan in Huaiyuan Prefecture?"

"Zhang's 'Breaking Sun Sutra' and Lan's 'Big Dipper Sutra' are both in count-level! Such secret knowledge could be the top secret knowledge on cultivation across Waii Sub-Continent. They could support a clan and a kingdom. In the western continent, there is duke-level secret knowledge; however, senior secret knowledge could only be found in Taixia State in Eastern Continent. The Xuanyuan Emperor who rules the Xuanyuan Hill cultivates the only complete emperor-level secret knowledge among humans——Xuanyuan God-Converting Sutra!"

"Count-level secret knowledge!" Zhang Tie tasted it as he remembered a situation introduced to him by Lan Yunxi, "If so, those incomplete laws, rules, know-hows, skills and techniques,

when being complete, might have higher levels than 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. They might reach marquis-level, duke-level, even throne-level and emperor-level?"

"Yes. But it's meaningless. Even though it's an incomplete emperor-level sutra, if it could only help you reach LV 11, it might not be more powerful than an inferior secret knowledge which could help you reach LV 12. If you cannot reach the top level of an incomplete emperor-level sutra, you might fully play its role. That's why they only divide complete secret knowledge into levels!"

"Is there indeed an incomplete emperor-level secret knowledge?"

"Yes, there is!"

"Ah? Really?" Zhang Tie almost exclaimed.

After thinking for a second, Lan Yunxi continued, "The incomplete one was discovered with the 'Xuanyuan God-Converting Sutra' at the same time. However, with the incomplete one, you could only promote to 3 star-strong fighter!"

"What's the name of that incomplete secret knowledge?"

"It's called 'King Roc Sutra'. However, as it's an incomplete one, you could only reach LV 10 with it. Therefore, it got another name, 'Robust Ox Technique'!"

"Robust Ox Technique", Zhang Tie twitched his eye corners after hearing this wild name.

"How did you know that?"

"It's the most widely spread secret knowledge. Many big Chinese Clans have it, including Huaiyuan Palace!"

...

10 minutes later, Zhang Tie left Lan Yunxi's room. Through this talk, Zhang Tie became more clear-minded while his cultivation road instantly became bright. Although he didn't take Lan Yunxi's

'Breaking Sun Sutra', he finally fixed his road ahead.

At this moment, Heller's voice sounded, "Find a 'King Roc Sutra', don't miss this chance!"

"Ah? Why?" Zhang Tie became slightly stunned.

"Others are afraid of losing their lives after making a mistake, what are you afraid of in the trouble-reappearance situation?"

Zhang Tie felt like being struck by thunderbolts at once...

Chapter 570: The Super Glider

After leaving Lan Yunxi's room, Zhang Tie covered his excitement. After thinking for a short while, he returned to the outside of the Crystal Battle Fortress and allowed people to load WindTalker glider in the Idiots. After that, he flew towards Hoorn Republic Glider Base by the Idiots.

It was not easy to recover 'Robust Ox Technique' to 'King Roc Sutra'. Even though he had the trouble-reappearance situation where he could make mistakes endlessly, it required a great patience. After reaching LV 10 with 'Robust Ox Technique', each step forward would require him to make mistakes for hundreds of times in the trouble-reappearance situation.

"Is it worth it?" Zhang Tie didn't know. He was not too ambitious. According to Lan Yunxi's words, "The power of emperor-level secret knowledge on cultivation might gradually show up after the cultivator became a knight. It was just 'might'!"

Although there were many powerful ones among billions of humans, only emperor Xuanyuan of Taixia State on the Eastern Continent could successfully cultivate emperor-level secret knowledge. With this point, Zhang Tie knew that it was very difficult to cultivate the latter parts of emperor-level secret knowledge.

Therefore, Zhang Tie would better dream about what surprises and benefits could the 'King Roc Sutra' bring him before he promoted to a knight than expecting for the 'rich legacy' brought by the complete emperor-level secret knowledge after he promoted to a knight.

From LV 10 to LV 16, the difference caused by different levels of secret knowledge was not decisive; what was really decisive was the level of a person and the number of surging points that he had

lit. Therefore, in this process, Zhang Tie would be satisfied if the King Roc Sutra's performance was not worse than that of the Breaking Sun Sutra. As it was an emperor-level secret knowledge, it might not be worse than "Breaking Sun Sutra".

"Pitifully, I only have one body and my surging points could only be lit once; otherwise, I'd probably recover all those secret knowledge below sutras in the trouble-reappearance situation.'

"Of course, the priority is to get a 'Robust Ox Technique'; otherwise, everything would be an illusion. Additionally, the secret that I cultivated 'Robust Ox Technique' must not be exposed to the public; otherwise, when I reached above LV 10 with this secret knowledge, it would arouse a great shock."

Zhang Tie gradually sorted out his ideas on the Idiots. Only after over 10 minutes, the glider base of Hoorn Republic had appeared.

What was most important for Zhang Tie was to clean those demons and b*stards of Three-Eye Association who hid among humans in Selnes Theater of Operations. If not what happened in Mocco City yesterday, Zhang Tie didn't know that the Three-Eye Association and demons would like to kill him so quickly, neither would he come to the Hoorn Republic Glider Base today.

However, now that he had known about it, Zhang Tie determined to launch a ferocious counter-attack towards demons and those b*stards of Three-Eye Association for their tricks and plots. He had to make demons and those b*stards of Three-Eye Association more afflictive.

"How to make demons and those b*stards of Three-Eye Association more afflictive? It's simple! I have to constantly become more powerful and kill more wing demons."

...

When Zhang Tie got off the airship, Colonel Ohlson with a dense whisker walked towards him on the glider base and gave Zhang Tie

a fervent bear hug.

"Welcome to the Hoorn Republic Glider Base, Selnes hero in the air!" after that, Colonel Ohlson watched that WindTalker which was pushed out of the Idiots by the crew members and asked, "How about our WindTalker?"

"Nice, very nice. This is the best two-seat glider that I've ever driven!" Zhang Tie replied with a solemn look. After all, it was his first time to drive a two-seat glider. Therefore, it was a compliment, not a lie. Additionally, WindTalker indeed has a good driving experience. Besides agile manipulation, its lift-to-drag feature was very excellent. Although being a two-seat glider, it could even match Huaiyuan Palace's one-seat falcon.

After hearing Zhang Tie's compliment, Colonel Ohlson became very spirited as his face blushed. He then turned around and shouted towards those soldiers in the base, "Bit*hes, have you heard that? Selnes Eagle said WindTalker was the best two-seat glider that he had ever driven!"

After hearing this, many people in the base cheered up. In Blackson Humans Corridor, one way to make friends with the Hoorn Republic was to talk about their glider. If you want to make them happy, you should praise their glider; this method had been spread across Blackson Humans Corridor for hundreds of years. The compliment from the Selnes Eagle was more lethal to these soldiers and commission officers of Hoorn Republic. As a result, all of them was proud of themselves.

"You're the best friend of Hoorn Republic!" Colonel Ohlson patted Zhang Tie's shoulder.

"The glider of Hoorn Republic is very famous in Blackson Humans Corridor. I'm here today to ask for your help!"

"Help what? As long as we can do it, no problem!" Colonel Ohlson said immediately.

"I need a glider that I could fight with. It should be modified according to my requests. Hopefully, you could give me a favor!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's request, Colonel Ohlson's eyes gleamed as he watched Zhang Tie's eyes very seriously, "You mean you need us to provide a glider for you. You want to drive the Hoorn Republic's glider to f*ck those demon b*stards, are you kidding me?"

"Right, I will pay all the expenses!"

Colonel Ohlson drew in a deep breath as he turned around and shouted more loudly, "B*tches, tell those moldy engineers to prepare to work. Let them gather in the warehouse No. 1 and tell them it's time for them to contribute to the country..."

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie saw a lot of gliders in the warehouse No. 1 and dozens of engineers who looked very thrilled. After Colonel Ohlson told those engineers that Zhang Tie wanted to drive a Hoorn Republic's glider to fight demons, they became more thrilled. Some of them even burst out into tears.

"In order to fight demons, our Hoorn Republic dispatches the most excellent people here. Although these guys could not fight on the battlefield, they are the most excellent engineers and technicians in the Hoorn Republic. You only need to tell them about your requirements. They will work out your glider for sure!"

After talking with those guys, Colonel Ohlson turned around and talked to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his request could arouse such a shock. Standing in front of those engineers and watching their gleaming eyes, Zhang Tie revealed a bashful smile.

"Actually, my requests are not complex. First, it should fly fast; second, besides being available to be thrown out of the airship in the air, it'd better set out on the ground. Of course, I don't mean

that they are dragged by other instruments. Instead, I want to run it by foot until it reaches the speed of taking off. Thirdly, it should be matched with some battle pendants which are adaptable to my battle mode!"

Soon after Zhang Tie's voice did those engineers' start to discuss enthusiastically.

After discussing it for a few minutes, an engineer asked, "Your Excellency, can you make it clearer what you meant by running it by foot?"

"Actually, it's like this..." as the language was not concrete, Zhang Tie then fetched a metal ring whose diameter was about 60 cm and wore it while putting the metal ring at his waist, "This metal ring is like the cockpit. When I am in the cockpit, I lift the glider by hands and carry its weight. When I want to fly off and land on, I will put my feet out of the cockpit and run..." Zhang Tie made a running gesture, "This is like how I lift my short pants and rush to the toilet..."

All the engineers became stunned as they had not imagined that Zhang Tie would choose such a method to fly off the glider. This is like how birds such as swan run before flying off. Nobody has tried that before. That's insane.

"Your Excellency, you need to lift about 800 kg so as to keep its balance. Additionally, you need to run at least 50 km per hour. Are you sure about that?"

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "Sure!"

...

Chapter 571: Free Flight

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could do this before. When he arrived at this base yesterday, he saw the glider being dragged by the car before flying off. Therefore, he hit this possible way—the glider should weigh less than 1000 kg; additionally, he could catch up with the running speed of the car. As long as the terrain was proper, he could have his glider fly off.

He could lift about 1000 kg for sure, which was just as heavy as a battle hammer. He could also catch up with the running speed of the car. Therefore, he wanted to have the glider modified so that it could better adapt to his ability and play a greater role on the battlefield.

If it was successfully modified, he could fly off at any time once there was a hillside. As a result, his driving ability would be further improved.

The engineers soon understood Zhang Tie's thought, which made them thrilled. Therefore, they soon started to work it out.

As Zhang Tie expressed that he wanted to use this glider as soon as possible, the engineers didn't build a new one; instead, they started to modify a very well-matched excellent glider.

A WindTalker II was drawn out of the warehouse by those engineers. After moving away its cover, they started to split it one part after another in a warehouse and modify it.

...

When those engineers were modifying the glider, Colonel Ohlson took Zhang Tie into a office. The moment Zhang Tie entered it was he startled. He even wondered why Colonel Ohlson took him in a utility room.

Almost half of the room was covered with hats, notebooks, mini glider models and certificates of merit.

Colonel Ohlson revealed a bashful smile, "Since you came here yesterday, those b*tches outside asked for your signature; therefore, I have their items collected here, look..."

Zhang Tie smiled, "No problem. After all, I have some time; I will meet their wishes!"

"That's awesome!" Colonel Ohlson became thrilled as he instantly called in two soldiers to let them assist Zhang Tie to accomplish this.

There were more than 1,000 items in the room. Watching those pens which had been prepared for him, Zhang Tie rubbed his face as he fetched a chair and sat down. After drawing in a deep breath, he started his job.

As Zhang Tie always treated himself as a commoner, he knew what did those common soldiers think. Therefore, Zhang Tie did it seriously.

Zhang Tie didn't just sign his name; he also left a sentence.

"Salute to those brave humans who fought together with me in Selnes Theater of Operations——Zhang Tie!"

After living in Blackhot City for many years, although Zhang Tie's scores were not excellent, under the strict requirements of his dad and mom, he had a nice handwriting. His words combined agility and strength.

In the entire morning, Zhang Tie signed his name seriously without even having lunch. Colonel Ohlson came here to see Zhang Tie for many times. After watching Zhang Tie's serious look while signing his name on each item, especially under the translation of some advisers who knew Chinese, Colonel Ohlson's eyes turned wet.

At about 2 pm, Zhang Tie finally finished his job while that one-seat WindTalker II had also been modified and was put on the track. Its caesious color had a good concealment effect in the sky.

Given its look, this modified one-seat WindTalker II was nothing different from the original one. Their differences existed in the cockpit.

At this moment, an arc opening which was about 80 cm in length and 50 cm in width below the cockpit and two more concave metal handles appeared on both sides of the seat.

The chief engineer who was responsible for modification introduced it to Zhang Tie.

"On the premise of not increasing its weight, we have strengthened the stress structure of its frame. You can lift this glider by the two concave metal handles. Thankfully, the location of the cabin is the geometric center of gravity of the entire glider, you only need to carry its weight. You don't need to carry the burden caused by leverage factor."

"Additionally, we have opened a hole here at the bottom of the cockpit, where you could stretch your feet out for the sake of running. We made this opening movable. There's a hand-pull switch in the cockpit. When you fly off, you can withdraw your feet, at the same time you pull the switch by hand to cover the metal sliding closure. This would neither influence your flight rest nor the speed of this glider!"

"To reach such an effect, we needed to adjust some interlocks. Previously, the hard seat was not available; we have changed it into a folding chair. Besides feeling more comfortable, you will find no change in its flight performance and driving pattern. Your free mobility in the cockpit won't change either."

"Thanks, you're great!" Zhang Tie nodded after watching it for a while, "Can I have a try now?"

All the engineers nodded. Zhang Tie then jumped into the cockpit. Holding the two concave metal handles, he lifted the glider, which weighed about 800 kg.

Zhang Tie stepped on the ground as he steadily lifted the glider. This looked like a pair of huge plane-shaped metal short pants.

Zhang Tie ran a couple of steps and found that his mobility was not restricted besides his arm.

After a slight adjustment, Zhang Tie started to run by lifting the glider. After over 10 seconds, his speed had reached above 60 km/h.

Zhang Tie felt an elevating force on the wings due to the different upper and lower airflow as the weight in his hand gradually decreased.

After running hundreds of meters, being blown by the airflow under the hillside, the glider attempted to leave the ground. Zhang Tie felt no weight in his hands as the glider completely took him off the ground and flew into the sky. Zhang Tie rapidly withdrew his feet and put his feet on the pedals. Closely after that, he closed the metal sliding cover by pulling the switch. He then sat back into the seat and started to drive.

All the engineers yelled and applauded.

After half an hour, Zhang Tie returned to the track by the glider. All the engineers swarmed up and finished the final modification for the glider——increased two weapon racks outside both sides of the cockpit. Each weapon rack could contain six 1.1-m long metal spears as Zhang Tie's weapons towards LV 10 wing demons.

After accomplishing all these, the whole base became boiled; as all the soldiers had received Zhang Tie's signature and encouragement. As a result, the morale in the base surged to its peak at once.

These engineers were all reserved in the base. Those items where Zhang Tie signed his name on didn't include that of these engineers. After knowing that Zhang Tie left a very meaningful souvenir to the others, all the engineers revealed an admiring look.

Zhang Tie noticed their special looks. When some engineers took

out the notebook with an expecting look and asked for Zhang Tie's signature, Zhang Tie posed the last request towards those engineers who participated in the modification of the glider, "I really appreciate what you've done for me today. This glider is my battle partner in Selnes Theater of Operations from then on. If you can sign your names on it and let them stay with this glider forever, it would be my great honor. I will take it as a souvenir gifted by you. If so, I will always miss you when I fight in the air. I promise you I will kill a wing demon for each one of you who leave their name on the glider!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the engineers felt their blood boiling in their hearts as they had an unprecedented sense of pride and honor. As a result, many of them burst out into tears.

Leaving their own name on the glider of the Selnes Eagle was the supreme honor and reward for an engineer.

...

Finally, after taking a photo with the commission officers and engineers in front of the glider, Zhang Tie left by the Idiots with the glider which was covered with 27 engineers' names.

Zhang Tie didn't return to the Crystal Battle Fortress; instead, he directly headed for north.

After 24 hours, the Idiots returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress with over 60 grim and terrifying heads of wing demons.

"Prepare a vehicle and hang all these heads over it!" Zhang Tie ordered with an aggressive killing intent...

Chapter 572: Beat the Dog's Owner

When crew members of the Idiots started to hang those wing demons' heads over the military vehicle, all the people in the Crystal Battle Fortress who had received the news came here to watch it silently.

Those wing demons' grim heads were well preserved. Many of the heads still had their dying looks .

At the sight of that vehicle, all the onlookers were stunned. They didn't know how to describe the military SUV which was covered with wing demons' heads.

It was both terrifying and shocking. After watching it, everyone felt being fully energetic, heroic and dauntless.

The powerful wing demons' heads were just this vehicle's goods and ornaments.

Those wing demons who made the sky full of terror became the trivial ornaments of this military vehicle.

Those demons who once ate and massacred humans could also be killed and violated by humans.

What a power!

How sharp! How sharp!

...

"Come on. Where's the photographer? Take a photo for me in front of this vehicle!" Soon after those wing demons' heads were well placed did a ground service commission officer shout.

The onlookers instantly became boiled as many of them strove for taking a photo in front of this vehicle.

With such a photo, even though one had not killed a demon, he could still bluff in front of his grandsons when he was old——Your grandpa had made contributions to the humans in the 3rd holy

war; additionally, your grandpa once worked together with a human hero called Selnes Eagle in a battle fortress...

...

When so many people were surrounding the vehicle, Ou Hongyu and his demon hunting squad who had left the base for about 10 days finally finished their task and returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress.

When Ou Hongyu's demon hunting squad left the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie was fighting ferociously in Flatte City. When Zhang Tie came back, Ou Hongyu was still in the outside where he could not touch Crystal Battle Fortress. Therefore, Ou Hongyu didn't know what happened these days. Neither did he know that Zhang Tie had become the hero across Selnes Theater of Operations only after two weeks.

Demon hunting squad was like human elite squad which especially targeted at dealing with demon corps in the wild. This time, Ou Hongyu had a good performance. The entire squad suffered no casualty at all. Besides, they swept two demon squads and killed some wing demons. Therefore, when they caught sight of the Crystal Battle Fortress, they all felt pleasant due to a big triumph.

"Senior brother apprentice Ou, you can definitely enter top 30 with this achievement. As long as you keep this achievement, senior brother apprentice Ou could definitely make a further improvement in Chuixue Palace in the future!" An apprentice of Chuixue Palace flattered him when he found Ou Hongyu was happy.

"The achievement belongs to all of us. Without your cooperation, I can not make such an achievement. Especially Qingqing, with her fiery wheel, she has also has made a great achievement. She even killed three wing demons. We all have achievements this time. Later on, we need to work harder. After having a good experience

in Selnes Theater of Operations, when we reach the Eastern Continent, we will have the chance to exhibit ourselves!" Ou Hongyu said modestly. However, his words revealed some important information.

After hearing Ou Hongyu's words, someone among the demon hunting squad immediately realized something, "Senior brother apprentice Ou, you mean..."

"Just keep it as a secret. Don't pass it on. It won't sound good..." Ou Hongyu warned them before lowering his voice, "I was told by a senior brother apprentice in Chuixue Palace, the bottom line for the six major clans of Jinyun Country to stay here was that demons would not pass by the Kalay Mountain Range. In case, the demon corps passed by the Kalay Mountain Range, all the Chinese across Waii Sub-Continent would leave for the Eastern Continent!"

"Ah? Is that real?" some innocent guys were shocked by Ou Hongyu's words.

"Some Chinese countries in the south of Waii Sub-Continent had prepared for leaving there in an all-round manner before the holy war. All the six major clans have their own ways in Eastern Continent. They have not cut their connections with their base in Eastern Continent yet. All the elders and heads of the major clans are top elites. After all, Waii Sub-Continent is a remote place. When there is no holy war, they could do business here; however, when the holy war breaks out, how can those clan elders let this place determine the fates of their clans? We only need to cultivate ourselves well here. When we arrive at the Eastern Continent, we might have a chance to appear in the Heavenly Fortune Rankings and be rewarded with the rank of nobility..." Ou Hongyu said as he gradually became heroic.

"Senior brother apprentice Ou, I was told that Heavenly Fortune Rankings was a marvelous item in Taixia Dynasty. As long as one dropped his or her blood on it, the Heavenly Fortune Rankings would know all the information about this person. Is that real?"

"I've not seen Heavenly Fortune Rankings yet. It's a mysterious product in the far-ancient civilization. In the former two holy wars, Heavenly Fortune Rankings served as the stage for the heroes to exhibit their own strength. It didn't make any mistake after so many generations and so many experiences. As Chinese, only when we become knights could we leave our names on it by dropping our blood on it. Thus, we could be rewarded with the corresponding rank of nobility according to the meritorious deeds that were exhibited on the Heavenly Fortune Rankings while our wives could also be rewarded with rank of nobility and our sons would inherit our positions and privileges. That's how the ancestors of the six major clan of Jinyun Country originated from!"

"Ah? Senior brother apprentice Ou, don't many countries in Waii Sub-Continent also have emperors and nobles?" a younger guy asked with a puzzled look.

"If you just stay at home, as long as you shut your door and buy some slaves to serve you, you can also treat yourself a emperor. However, can you enjoy the same treatment in the outside?" Ou Hongyu sneered, "Although only demon-killers could be rewarded with the rank of nobility according to the 'Humans Brilliance Charter', besides us Chinese, who should be rewarded with the rank of nobility according to the meritorious deeds exhibited on the Heavenly Fortune Rankings, other clans' nobles and imperial kingsmen don't have strict rules. As long as they kill some demons and are able to rule a mountain could they call themselves nobles and imperial kingsmen. Nobody cared about them. However, when they came to the Eastern Continent, they were nothing but a fart. They are just country moneybags at most. When they arrive at Taixia Dynasty, they have to be docile. None of them dare call themselves nobles at all..."

"Ah? But why?"

"Because, in Taixia Dynasty, only nobles on the Heavenly Fortune Rankings are recognized. All those who have not been recognized

by the Heavenly Fortune Rankings dared to call themselves nobles would be split into 5 parts by horses according to Taixia's laws!"

"According to you, the Fighting Strength Rankings in the Crystal Battle Fortress is really meaningful!" a member of the demon hunting squad became enlightened at once.

"You just realized that?" Ou Hongyu smiled intently.

"Aww, I wonder whether Zhang Tie has killed any demons these days." a guy suddenly remembered Zhang Tie.

"Forget about him. A LV 9 guy is nothing in the sky. If he could join our demon hunting squad, he might kill one or two demons. However, if he stays in the airship, it depends on his fortune!" a guy sneered.

Dantai Qingqing just listened to their discussions. Until when she caught sight of so many people around a place in the base was her attention aroused.

"Yi? What's happening over there?"

"Let's take a look there!" Ou Hongyu smiled.

...

When the demon hunting squad pushed in the crowd and watched the bloody and terrifying military SUV did they stupefy.

"What...what happened? Who killed so many wing demons?" Ou Hongyu changed his face at once. After forcefully swallowing his saliva did he remove his vision from that vehicle.

"Who? Of course the Selnes Eagle!" a ground service soldier who was waiting to take a photo replied pleasantly.

"Selnes Eagle?" after hearing this name, all the members of the demon hunting squad exchanged glances with each other.

"Don't you know that?"

"As we were on duty in the outside these days, we've just come

back. Can you tell me what happened" Dantai Qingqing revealed a smile towards a soldier. That young soldier felt being struck by electricity while he blushed at once...

However, before that soldier spoke, a voice in unison had sounded in the surroundings, "Ah? Here comes the Selnes Eagle. This time, the first rank would refresh his marks..."

The demon hunting squad members turned around and found Zhang Tie walking in the crowd in a weird uniform, at the sight of whom, all the surrounding crowd gave a way to him.

Ou Hongyu's face turned pale at once...

Zhang Tie also caught sight of Ou Hongyu and the other members of the demon hunting squad. He smiled towards them silently. After that, he told those around the vehicle, "I'm sorry, please give me a way, I have to go out for a travel now!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's request, all of them gave a way to him hurriedly, leaving those who had not taken a photo with the vehicle pitiful.

Zhang Tie got on the vehicle and drove away that shocking vehicle from the base in the Crystal Battle Fortress and headed for Mocco City.

Those b*stards of Three-Eye Association wanted to kill him. Therefore, he wanted to show them the outcome to stir up him. "Aren't those b*stards thinking they are hiding in a secret place? I will find their owner some trouble then."

"Before beating a dog, the others would see who's its owner. However, if a dog stirs up me, I will directly beat its owner..."

Chapter 573: A Lonely Parade

After the explosion in Mocco City three days ago, the circumstances across the city became intense at once. Various news were spread in Mocco City. The explosion was targeted at the Selnes Eagle while the missing two alchemist's bombs in the strategic arsenal of Symbian Republic were still lost.

The explosion on that day killed hundreds of people. Additionally, the two missing alchemist's bombs in the strategic arsenal of Symbian Republic had many people sent to the prison. This event involved over 600 people in total. Therefore, although three days had passed, the atmosphere in Mocco City was still intense.

The noon had just passed by. At the northern city gate of Mocco City, a city defense soldier was checking the accessing vehicles and personnel strictly. After they were told that the missing two alchemist's bombs might still be in Mocco City, all the soldiers on duty treated this very seriously. They paid special attention to the places on vehicles which could hold alchemist's bombs.

However, after three days, they neither found the alchemist's bombs nor the lackeys of Three-Eye Association. They only caught some deserters and corrupted guys from the logistics department of some countries in the Selnes frontline who were related to the illegal market in Mocco City.

It was just a bit over 12 pm. It was lunchtime. At this moment, a car darted towards Mocco City after passing by some defense lines outside the Mocco City and causing some noises, dust floating through the air.

A major wearing the armband of the human alliance who was on duty outside the city gate had already noticed the abnormal situation in the far. Before that vehicle arrived at the city gate, the major had already told the soldiers to be spirited.

At the major's order, two armored vehicles parking outside the city gate had already targeted the steam catapults on the armored vehicles towards the oncoming vehicle.

When the incoming vehicle drew closer, the major noticed the symbol of Jinyun Country hanging on it, "Who dared to drive a military SUV into Mocco City only after that event three days ago." the major slightly frowned, "What the hell!"

The vehicle was stopped at the checkpoint outside the city gate. Before the major opened his mouth had he seen a pile of wing demons' heads behind the vehicle. The major immediately drew in a cold breath.

After hearing their exclamations, a lot of soldiers swarmed up. They all watched those demons' heads with a shocking look.

"Ah? They're real, not waxworks. They're all wing demons' heads..." a soldier couldn't stand to check those heads out of curiosity before shouting out loudly.

The major deeply drew in a breath before asking that driver, "Sergeant first class, what are those things?"

"Wing demons' heads, is there any problem?" Zhang Tie answered.

"Those heads are real, but why did you put them in your vehicle?"

"They are my military exploits!"

"Military exploits? From where?"

"I killed them!"

"You killed them?" that major immediately recalled something when he saw Zhang Tie's young face and the rank sergeant first class on Zhang Tie's shoulder, "Can you show me your ID certificate?"

Zhang Tie showed his ID certificate as the only air cavalry across

Selnes Theater of Operations to the major through the window.

After taking a look at it, the major instantly snapped to attention, causing a sound 'Pa' before passing the certificate back to Zhang Tie respectfully. At the same time, he took a deep breath, "Your Excellency, Zhang Tie, out of my duty, I have to warn you that someone might pose a threat to your life in Mocco City. May I know your purpose here? If necessary, I will notice the human alliance and let them protect you..."

"No need. I've heard what happened in Mocco City. I'm just here to take a round in Mocco City. I want to chop off the head of the owner of those demon lackeys and show them my energetic look. I want those b*stards to know that even though they have alchemist's bombs, they are still just a group of b*stards who deserve to hide in the sewer!"

...

Under everyone's admiring gaze, Zhang Tie drove into Mocco City.

At this moment, Mocco City was full of soldiers.

Zhang Tie slowed down and started to wander in the streets.

All those who caught sight of this vehicle would stop on the streets as they widely opened their mouths and stared at those wing demons' heads in the carriage of the vehicle.

Since the beginning of the 3rd holy war, demons' super corps had been resting on each human's head like a mountain. A LV 9 human fighter could at least serve as a field officer in many countries across Blackson Humans Corridor, which was definitely the backbone of each human corps. However, in demon's super corps, such a LV 9 fighter was just a common soldier. Therefore, everyone would feel chilly and think that demons were unrivaled.

However, in Selnes Theater of Operations, those demon squads who broke through human defense line and penetrated to the back

of the theater of operations brought a huge and terrifying destruction to humans, which frightened everyone. A battalion of human fighters, If encountered a demon squad of over 10 demons, would be killed in a couple of minutes. Such powerful demons made over 99% of human fighters below LV 9 breathless.

If an allied human squad of about 100 people could kill one common LV 9 demon soldier, all the members of this squad would be rewarded. This reward was equal to killing one major commission officer of the enemy. From this, we knew how difficult it was to kill a demon.

However, at this moment, those human fighters who might have not seen demons, suddenly saw a military vehicle being loaded with wing demons' heads in the streets. Of course, they were shocked.

Those heads were not of the most commonly seen iron-armored demons but of the rarest wing demons. Therefore, the shock was amplified by many times at once.

Wing demons' heads, a military SUV from the Crystal Battle Fortress of Jinyun Country and a young sergeant first class in a special uniform——after combining the three aspects, some onlookers guessed Zhang Tie's status right now. In a split second, the driver's status was spread across the city.

After experiencing the assassination of an alchemist bomb, the Selnes Eagle returned to Mocco City, with a carriage of wing demons' heads. He was driving his vehicle on the streets of Mocco City brightly.

Because of that explosion three days ago, the circumstances in Mocco City became a bit depressive as people were worried about their lives. However, at the sight of so many wing demons' heads and knowing that the driver was Zhang Tie, everyone felt energetic like having a strong power out of nothing. They didn't fear about demons anymore while their depression faded away at

once.

Gradually, more and more soldiers followed Zhang Tie's vehicle voluntarily. Being driven by the unrivaled morale, some even shouted the slogan for the first time as more and more people joined in. The slogan then became as overwhelming as mountains and tsunami and sounded around Zhang Tie's vehicle.

"Kill the demons. Humans are doomed to win..."

...

"Kill the demons. Humans are doomed to win..."

...

In the beginning, Zhang Tie didn't mean to make such a chaos. However, Zhang Tie gradually found that he could not control that. Hundreds and thousands of people started to follow him. Only after wandering in the streets for over 10 minutes, he had been followed by over tens of thousands of people.

Through the rear-view mirror, Zhang Tie saw his vehicle was followed by a lot of people, who filled the whole street. As he moved ahead, more and more people joined in the contingent. Some more were coming on the way here.

...

"Kill the demons. Humans are doomed to win..."

Gradually, this slogan thundered across the Mocco City.

...

General Howard was holding a meeting with the other generals of other countries in a conference room. At this moment, the loud slogan drifted in the conference room. Given the loudness, they knew it was caused by at least hundreds of thousands of people.

General Howard and the other generals in the conference room became a bit chaotic.

"What's wrong? Which country's corps is holding a parade in Selnes City?" General Howard slightly frowned as he glanced at those generals at present.

Although Howard, as the supreme officer in the alliance command, just played a coordinating role on the battlefield. None of the corps from other countries would follow his order. All the military actions had to be coordinated. However, it was too excessive if any corps would like to hold a parade in Mocco City and didn't notice him in advance. Therefore, General Howard became a bit dissatisfied.

At this moment, there were only three major corps, coming from three countries. One from the Symbian Republic; one from Norman Empire; the last one from Francia Federal.

At this moment, all the other members in the conference room were silently glancing at the representatives from the three countries. Many of them were admiring them inside. Given the slogan, they knew the corps had a high morale. It was very difficult to keep such a morale at this critical moment.

The three countries' representatives then exchanged glances with each other.

"Symbian Republic didn't hold a parade today. If there was, as the owner of Mocco City, I would be invited to watch it for sure!" the general on behalf of Symbian Republic shook his head.

"Norman Empire didn't hold a parade either. In Norman Empire, only when the king arrives do we hold a corps-level parade!" that general of Norman Empire also shook his head.

"The parliament of Francia Federal has never approved any budget for holding a corps-level parade in Selnes Theater of Operations. This requires a lot of money. In order to support the Selnes Theater of Operations, we've already tightened our waistband. The parliament of Francia Federal has already cut off half of its expenditure. This summer, our noble parliamentarians

will not enjoy those ice cubes in the ice cave. If we hold such a parade at this moment. Those noble parliamentarians would feel cold in winter. They might rebel before the arrival of the demons!"

After hearing the Francia Federal general's joke, all the others in the conference room burst out into laughter.

Only after a short while, the slogan outside had become even louder. Additionally, they realized that it came from all directions. It seemed that the entire Mocco City was boiling.

When they were puzzling about that, General Howard's adjutant hurriedly walked into the conference room and whispered in Howard's ears for half a minute. After hearing that, General Howard's eyebrows raised at once as he looked thrilled.

The adjutant then left.

Watching those generals in the conference room, General Howard took a deep breath, "Our Selnes Eagle has just driven in Mocco City while the carriage was loaded with 60-70 wing demons' heads. This is his current achievement, also a dauntless declaration. That's a heroic and charming deed. The slogan was made by the soldiers in Mocco City. As the general of the alliance command in Selnes Theater of Operations, I'm proud to have such a hero in Selnes Theater of Operations!"

After hearing his words, all the general applauded fervently after a short second.

The Selnes Eagle allowed the low-morale across the Mocco City to rise again. He made the entire city so energetic and inspiring. Given this point, he deserved that medal.

"I want to see our hero and the wing demons' heads. Those who are not afraid of alchemist's bombs can go there together with me!" General Howard then walked out of the conference room. The other generals exchanged glances with each other before following General Howard one after another...

Chapter 574: The Public Enemy of Mothers

When Zhang Tie drove to the urban square of Mocco City, those soldiers who came here to see the Selnes Eagle and the whole carriage of wing demons' heads had blocked all the roads of the vehicle in every direction.

When Zhang Tie's vehicle couldn't move, he directly parked it and got off the vehicle.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that he had reached his target. However, the great effect was really out of his imagination.

However, before Zhang Tie got off the vehicle, he had found those soldiers outside the vehicle gave a way to him like ebbing tide. At the same time, a group of generals with stars on their shoulders walked towards him.

This time, Zhang Tie realized that he really could not leave.

He hurriedly jumped off the vehicle and gave a solemn salute to those generals.

...

General Howard then climbed onto the top of Zhang Tie's vehicle in the Urban Square of Mocco City and delivered a fervent keynote speech. Even Zhang Tie felt bashful about that; meanwhile, the atmosphere in Mocco City was pushed to the climax.

Even when the flatte battle ended, Mocco City was not as boisterous as today. After Zhang Tie took a round in the city today, the city's morale became lit. The whole city became boisterous like winning a war.

Zhang Tie's vehicle parked in the Urban Square of Mocco City just for others to visit and take photos with. Zhang Tie then entered the alliance command together with General Howard. After talking with those generals for a while, Zhang Tie was invited into General Howard's office.

In General Howard's office, Zhang Tie could still faintly hear the cheers from the Urban Square of Mocco City.

After the adjutant of General Howard made a cup of tea for Zhang Tie, General Howard pushed open the door of his office and walked in. His adjutant then closed the door and left.

"General!" at the sight of Howard, Zhang Tie put down the tea cup and stood up politely from the sofa.

"Take a seat, young man, take a seat!" General Howard walked towards Zhang Tie and put his hand on Zhang Tie's shoulder with a genial smile. He pressed Zhang Tie onto the sofa.

Zhang Tie respected this old man who was several times elder than him and was still insisting on staying in Selnes Theater of Operations. However, Zhang Tie did not look too humble or too recalcitrant. To date, actually, he didn't need to perform in front of anybody. Even in front of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie could still stick to be himself, not to mention now.

"Have you heard the voice outside?" General Howard went to the window sill of his office and watched the scenery before turning around to ask Zhang Tie.

"Yes!"

"What did you hear?" General Howard asked with a profound look.

Zhang Tie shrugged straightforwardly, "Humans hope to survive the holy war and the hateful sound of demons and the lackeys of Three-Eye Association!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, Howard nodded before throwing a glance at Zhang Tie profoundly.

"Do you know that you will face danger here?"

"I know. But I also believe that those b*stards might not have predicted that I could do this. Even If they knew that I was going to

be here, they would not make such a fast response in Mocco City. This city is still under the rule of humans. Therefore, it may seem to be a dangerous travel, but is actually not." Zhang Tie replied frankly.

"You surprised me. To be honest, your performance today completely changed my recognition on you from what I had three days ago!"

Speaking of the event three days ago, Zhang Tie scratched his head bashfully as he just smirked...

"Thankfully, you didn't come here three days ago. If you really came, those demons' lackeys plan would have succeeded. This time, your arrival was much more meaningful than that three days ago. Since you entered Mocco City with those wing demons' heads, you've already won a battle in Mocco City in front of about one million of soldiers in Mocco City and weakened the morale of those lackeys of demons! We human army require heroes like you." General Howard made a high comment on Zhang Tie's deed today.

"I was just doing what I should do and like to do!"

General Howard looked a bit thrilled, "No, young man. You don't know. You're not only doing what you should do and like to do, you're also doing what the others want to do yet cannot do. Do you know how proud some of our common soldiers were when they mentioned you? If you've seen them, you would change your saying!"

"Aww!" Zhang Tie raised his eyebrows.

"Those soldiers told me that they had not imagined that our human army could have an arm of service which could suppress demons' LV 9 soldiers. We LV 9 human fighters could also make wing demons scared. You will bring them hope and encouragement."

After hearing Howard's words, Zhang Tie instantly understood

why Lan elder persisted to let him be the first air cavalry in Selnes Theater of Operations in the status of sergeant first class. Actually, based on his performance on the battlefield, he could be promoted to major or lieutenant colonel at least. Perhaps, Lan elder had already considered that a sergeant first class who killed a lot of demons would pose a greater influence on the mentality of common soldiers compared to a major or a lieutenant colonel.

When humans were at a disadvantage, the former choice would bring pride and dignity to common soldiers and trigger everyone's courage; while the latter choice made people admirable at most.

"Aged ginger was more pungent." Zhang Tie sighed inside, "None of the knights are silly. Lan elder has maximized my personal value silently. What a smart man!"

Knowing that Zhang Tie had understood it, General Howard made a request to Zhang Tie, "Many generals are moved by today's event. Some general suggested that heroes like you should not limit your value on the battlefield. You could bring more inspirations to the front line soldiers."

"What does that mean?"

"The alliance command wants to set an exclusive task group for you and open a special column for you in 'Holy War News', which will be responsible for propagating and shaping your positive image and inspiring the front line soldiers."

Zhang Tie was startled by this suggestion as he hurriedly shook his head. He heard about such a treatment before. However, he had not dreamed about this for himself. He could never perform such a great and positive image. Actually, he didn't feel his affairs were worth to report. If the report was true, it would violate his personal privacy; if it was fake, he would be disgusted to death by himself. He didn't want to be observed by others. How tired it was! If his secret was exposed, he would have no place to cry for that.

Seeing Zhang Tie's firm attitude, Colonel Howard replied with a

bitter smile; however, he didn't give up, "This is actually a part of the war. Through propagating and shaping heroes, we could bring great spiritual energy to many people. You have already felt such a strength today. Additionally, I've been told what you've done in the Hoorn Republic Glider Base. You encouraged them by signing your name for the commission officers and soldiers in the base. Now, all the soldiers in the Hoorn Glider Base were fully energetic. It was similar to that!"

"I'm sorry, general. Perhaps in your mind, this is right. But I really don't want to be such a role. I've never defined myself as a hero and honestly, I don't want to be a hero. Actually, I have a lot of shortcomings. Neither do I like to be a performer under a magnifying glass. As I've said, I only want to do what I should do and like to do." Zhang Tie lowered his eyelids, "If possible, what I want most is to embrace my beloved woman and just eat and play until death, instead of fighting demons here!"

"Is it real?" General Howard became a bit amazed.

"Yes, it's my real thought!"

"By doing this, you can encourage a lot of people!"

"Many people would be killed too!"

"But many people would appreciate you!"

"No!" Zhang Tie shook his head, "Many mothers would hate me..."

Zhang Tie watched General Howard seriously, "If it was 4 years ago, if my mom knew that I admired a hero and was finally killed on the battlefield, she was doomed to hate that 'hero'. Because I have a good mother, I don't want to be the public enemy of all the mothers across Blackson Humans Corridor. Each hero is the public enemy of mothers who send their sons onto the battlefield. I had understood this since I was young. Therefore, if you ask me what requirement do I have, I only want to not be the public enemy of

mothers."

"Each hero is the public enemy of mothers who send their sons onto the battlefield?" General Howard had not heard about this before. Opening his mouth, he watched Zhang Tie's serious and stubborn face for a few seconds.

"You have a great mother!"

"Yes, my mother is very great!" Zhang Tie nodded frankly.

...

Zhang Tie stayed in the alliance command for about 2 hours. When he walked out of the gate of the alliance command, he saw a masculine man leaning against a vehicle outside the alliance command, exposing his wide chest. He was smoking a cigar.

"Brat, long time no see..." Reinhardt raised his jaw towards Zhang Tie like when he saw Zhang Tie for the first time. At the same time, he threw a cigar towards Zhang Tie.

After catching the cigar, Zhang Tie put it close to his nose and took a deep sniff before jumping into Reinhardt's vehicle...

...

Chapter 575: Demon Hunters Bar

Some people telepathy with each other. So did Zhang Tie and his brothers in Iron-Blood Camp of No. 39 Division. They killed enemies and bathed blood, they blocked blades and bolts for each other at the risk of their own lives.

Zhang Tie felt Freo, the bald-headed tough man's fresh blood was running through his body. While those brothers in Iron-Blood Camp were running Zhang Tie's fresh blood through their body.

After Zhang Tie got on the vehicle, Reinhardt also jumped onto it. Without saying anything, he just held the cigar and accelerated his vehicle at once.

As it was outside the gate of the alliance command, Zhang Tie was not afraid of being followed by others. If the alliance command in Mocco City could not even guarantee such a simple thing, they didn't need to fight in Selnes Theater of Operations any longer. They only needed to return home and wait for demons.

"Did you kill Master Abyan?" Reinhardt asked casually.

"Yup. He killed some of my women. Therefore, I have to kill him. However, I almost lost my life that time!" Zhang Tie took up a lighter and started to light that cigar which Reinhardt had thrown to him. After having a mouth of it, the fragrance of the cigar was filled in his mouth.

He learned to smoke the cigar from Reinhardt. Previously, as a poor teenager, Zhang Tie thought it was like smoking a cigarette; however, when in Iron-Blood Camp, he knew that the smoke of cigar didn't have to enter lungs; instead, it just stayed in the mouth for a while before going out.

"What happened? That old d**chebag couldn't be that sharp!" Reinhardt turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie.

"That old d**chebag was a shadow demon. His level was higher

than mine. Therefore, I was almost killed!" Zhang Tie blew out the smoke.

"Shadow demon?" Reinhardt finally revealed a shocking look.

Zhang Tie nodded.

"What happened then? Abyan's fortress was swept off by someone. Even marshal Lin Changjiang and many big figures in the capital city were shocked by this!"

"He was my master. As I could not even have time to protect myself, I could not meet him at that time. Probably after thinking that I was killed, he especially came there and destroyed the fortress.

That strength was almost out of people's reach. Later on, Reinhardt went to take a look at the ruins of Abyan's fortress. Facing that deep and serene lake, he didn't know what to say besides being shocked. However, as a major commission officer of No. 39 Division, Reinhardt had his own channels to learn about the event which happened beside the encampment of No. 39 Division. According to the investigation group dispatched by the capital city, there was no such a powerhouse in Norman Empire, even across Blackson Humans Corridor. It was said that his strength had almost reached to that of the immortal level.

"You master is too powerful!" Reinhardt sighed with emotions as he felt happy for Zhang Tie.

"He is very powerful!" Zhang Tie replied with a bitter smile, "However, I don't know when I can see him again. His temperament is a bit odd. He's always alone. I wonder where he is now. I won't feel strange even if I didn't see him in the next decades.

Reinhardt glanced at Zhang Tie with an amazing look once again before shaking his head.

The scenery on both sides of the street flashed backward.

Reinhardt drove very fast as he continuously glimpsed at the rear-view mirrors to ensure that nobody was following them.

"Where are we going?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Have a drink!"

"That's fine!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After being silent for over 10 seconds, Reinhardt opened his mouth, "We've received the 1000 vials of all-purpose medicament that you had Colonel Leibniz left to the brothers of Iron-Blood Camp. When the demonized puppets corps besieged the Blackhot City, those vials of all-purpose medicament saved a lot of brothers' lives!"

"That's good!"

Reinhardt became silent for another few seconds, "First Lieutenant Liu Xing died in the demon disaster!"

After hearing this news, Zhang Tie's hand holding the cigar quivered slightly when he felt being choked by something...

...

Reinhardt kept driving ahead. After taking Zhang Tie around the Mocco City for over half an hour, he finally parked in a remote street. They then got off the vehicle and passed by two lanes before arriving at a small bar.

Some bald-headed tough guys in black vests were standing outside the gate of the bar. At the sight Lieutenant Colonel Reinhardt, a tough guy turned around and knocked at the door. A person then looked outside through a small window on the door. When all the guards nodded, he opened the thick iron gate from inside.

"I've not imagined that the guards here are so professional." Zhang Tie became interested in this place at once.

"Where are we?"

"This is demon hunters bar. Only powerhouses of demon hunting squads in Selnes Theater of Operations or those who had at least chopped off one demon's head could come here!" Reinhardt explained.

Zhang Tie nodded.

Zhang Tie and Reinhardt passed that thick iron gate and a narrow winding corridor which was hung over with sabers and swords before entering the bar. At this moment, although it was not dark, so many people had already gathered inside. After glancing at Zhang Tie and Reinhardt, those people turned around and kept drinking.

Like Reinhardt said, Zhang Tie saw various military uniforms and battle armors. They were at least captains.

After sitting at a table, before they opened mouth, a beauty waiter in the breast-exposing uniform had already served bottles of alcohol and some food on the table. Finding Zhang Tie was handsome, that waiter even leered at Zhang Tie before leaving with her twisting plump butts.

"You cannot order drinks here. We can provide you what we have!"

Zhang Tie nodded. At this moment, all the supplies in Selnes Theater of Operations were in short. The rationing system was executed here. Even if you were a commissioner, you should also appreciate for having some alcohol. Alcohol could serve as hard currency here. The boss of this bar was already an able man to supply such goods.

As they drank alcohol, Zhang Tie and Reinhardt chatted about their recent situation.

Two years ago, Reinhardt had already left No. 39 Division and the Iron-Horn Corps and was dispatched into the Iron-Plough Corps in the North Border Military Region of Norman Empire. He was now

a colonel.

This time, facing the flooding demons, Norman Empire decided to dispatch three elite corps of about 1.4 million soldiers northward into Selnes Theater of Operations. The Iron-Plough Corps where Reinhardt was in, like the trump card of North Border Military Region, also arrived at Selnes Theater of Operations at the order.

Although the demon disaster in Sun Dynasty had not been fully cracked down, Norman Empire had to deal with the current situation with their full efforts.

As long as the demon army broke through the Selnes Plain, the entire Symbian Republic would be destroyed by demons sooner or later. Closely after that, Norman Empire, being next to the Symbian Republic would naturally become the next target of demons. Therefore, how long could Norman Empire keep demons in Selnes Theater of Operations almost determined how long would Norman Empire survive.

Besides Iron-Plough Corps, the trump card troop in North Border Military Region, the most powerful imperial Iron-Blood Corps of Norman Empire which always safeguarded the capital of Norman Empire also arrived at Selnes Theater of Operations. The one who led the three corps northward and defended in Sladic City was rightly the crown prince of Norman Empire. Iron-Plough Corps was in Mocco City while Reinhardt served as the captain of demon hunting squadron of Iron-Plough Corps.

"I've just received the report from home. Marshal Lin Changjiang has already accomplished strategic besiege towards those demonized puppets in Sun Dynasty with 9 imperial corps of about 4 million soldiers. After half a year, the empire will sweep all the demonized puppets of Sun Dynasty and break through the strategic tunnel towards the south of the empire..."

"Even Norman Empire has prepared to retreat?" Zhang Tie asked

out of amazement.

"As long as the demon army breaks through the Selnes defense line, the empire has to make a strategic retreat. Selnes defense line is a psychological pass for many people. Once this pass is broken, not only Norman Empire but many other countries would try their best to carry out large-scale strategic transfer!" as Reinhardt said this, he took up a bottle of alcohol and poured in half of it before putting it heavily on the table, "Actually, able people have long taken their family members to the south by airship. Only commoners could not leave. You should know the situation in Selnes Theater of Operations better than me that it would deteriorate sooner or later. We're just sparing some more time for commoners..."

Zhang Tie nodded. The demon army could not be held in the north of the Selnes Plain forever. This was determined by the sharp strength gap between the two parties. Everyone knew that. As long as this human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was broken through, everybody could only retreat in an avalanche type...

Gradually, it was dark. Zhang Tie found more and more people in the bar. Additionally, after drinking a bit, many of them would enter a room behind the bar and stay there for a long time. Some didn't drink at all. Holding few bulging items, they entered the same room. After a short while, hundreds of people disappeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes.

"There's an enclosed underground warehouse behind the room. This is the largest illegal demon hunters market in Selnes Theater of Operations. Many demon hunters would come here to trade items everyday. They could usually see many nice items here, including rune equipment, secret knowledge and weapons, etc. ..." Reinhardt explained.

Being shocked by Reinhardt's introduction, Zhang Tie asked, "Ah? There is such an illegal market?"

"Actually, demons have many similarities with humans. They even have a stronger desire for wealth and good items. Some special demons could even cultivate using human cultivation methods. After demon corps swept those countries in the north, many demon soldiers would always carry spoils of war with them. Those spoils were traded in the demon hunters market at the beginning. But now, there are more items to be traded here..."

With Reinhardt's explanation, Zhang Tie finally understood the current situation of the illegal demon hunters market. Those being traded in this market at the beginning indeed came from the demon soldiers. However, as the war proceeded, many more powerhouses arrived here from Blackson Humans Corridor, increasing the variety of items being traded here.

Those items of the demon hunting squad being killed by demons probably finally returned to the hand of other demon hunting squad through dead demons. As those items were relatively argumentative, they could only be traded in the illegal market.

Now, there were over 10,000 LV 9 or higher population of demon hunting squads across the Selnes Theater of Operations, which included the elites of all countries. Some among those squads would disappear or sacrifice everyday. Similarly, each day, some of the demon hunting squads could gain something. After keeping what they needed, they traded unnecessary or argumentative items with other demon hunters in the illegal market.

Such an illegal market had become a half-exposed secret to the demon hunting squads. Many generals of the alliance command also knew that. However, nobody could stop it. All the members of demon hunting squads were working at the risk of their lives. They were bearing great stress from demon corps on the ground. If they were not even allowed to trade items privately, it would be too ruthless to them. Of course, as the situation in Selnes Theater of Operations was a bit complex, it was hard to determine whether some items of the 'allied forces' belonged to booties and whether

they should be returned to the original owners...

"Perhaps, I could get a 'King Roc Sutra' here", a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

Chapter 576: Trade in the Illegal Market

Until then did Zhang Tie realize that the demon hunters squads made rich profits. Zhang Tie then pitied himself that he only knew how to deal with wing demons. However, besides a pair of leather short pants, those wing demons only had a weapon in hand in order to relieve their burden in flight. As to those iron-armored demons that he encountered for the first time were like members of dare-to-death corps. Now that they prepared to break through the back of the human defense line, of course, they didn't carry anything valuable with themselves.

"Can I take a look inside?" Zhang Tie was moved greatly.

"Of course, no problem. I'm also looking to find some useful items inside!" Reinhardt nodded.

The two people then walked towards that room. After entering that room, Zhang Tie found it was absolutely a huge dressing room. After paying a gold coin per person, those entering it would be requested to put on the black cloak and face mask. After putting on them, Zhang Tie and Reinhardt each got a number plate before being allowed to enter that underground illegal demon hunters market.

Wearing the mask, Zhang Tie felt his voice become hoarse. Wearing the black cloak, his moving ability was not restricted; however, his military uniform was well covered. Nobody could identify which troop did he come from.

In the illegal market, nobody knew the opposite's status, the buyer or the seller. They could only be identified by the temporary number plate.

Zhang Tie's number was 1361 while Reinhardt's number was 1362. After taking the number plate, they walked downwards along a winding stair for more than 20 m before entering a huge underground space.

That underground space was obviously an air-defense cave with ventilating pipes and rotating ventilators. It was prepared for the war. When they built it, they didn't imagine that it could be used as an underground illegal trading market for demon hunters.

"Let's take a look at what we need. We're not allowed to call the real names. If you want to call me, just call my number!" Reinhardt nodded towards Zhang Tie as he patted his number, "And if you really need to trade something, you'd better change your voice in case of trouble!"

"Fine!" Zhang Tie nodded. As a LV 9 fighter, Zhang Tie had a great ability to control his body. It was very easy for him to slightly change his voice.

After nodding towards each other, they then headed towards different directions.

This underground air-defense cave was as huge as an underground football field. It could hold tens of thousands of people. Fluorescent lamps were hanging on the roof and the walls of the air-defense cave. The fluorescent lamps had faint brightness. People could barely see the items beside them. This was especially designed by people. As a result, this illegal underground market looked a bit mysterious.

There were rows of counter-like booths in the illegal market. Some of them were vacant, some were covered with items, while some other booths only hung a plate, on which was written what the owner wanted to purchase or sell and a number below it.

The number of people in the illegal market was at least 700-800, which was more than Zhang Tie had imagined. It seemed that many people had already been here before Zhang Tie and Reinhardt.

Those who traded here were basically above LV 9. Those items being liked by people above LV 9 were naturally of high value.

Only after wandering for a short while had Zhang Tie found that the items like weapons, medicament or something else were all of high quality. Some of them were rune equipment and alchemist's equipment. However, they were at least two times more expensive than the same equipment that Zhang Tie saw in the auction house of Kalur several years ago. This was also a change brought by the holy war.

On a booth, Zhang Tie saw a secret knowledge of 'Iron-Blood Fist'. At the sight of the familiar silver cover, Zhang Tie became stunned for a second as he recalled the time when Captain Kerlin gave him this secret knowledge in the ward when he attended the survival training in the wild wolf valley.

This secret knowledge had a special meaning for Zhang Tie.

"How much is this secret knowledge?" Zhang Tie took up the 'Iron-Blood Fist'.

"50 gold coins. Don't bargain. Although this secret knowledge is a pirate, it has a great printing quality. Additionally, the raw material of this secret knowledge is good, which could be barely seen even in Norman Empire!" the owner of the booth was as tall as Zhang Tie. He also wore a mask and a set of cloak.

Zhang Tie instantly took out a gold check of 100 gold coins from Castle of Black Iron and gave it to him.

After taking over that gold check, that man checked it carefully before nodding and putting it away, "Look, this gold check has the minimal par value here, as I have no changes, can you pick up some more items. I will give a discount!"

"This guy is really a good businessman." Zhang Tie nodded. Even if the price of this secret knowledge was 1,000 gold coins, he would also buy it right now. However, it only cost him 50 gold coins. Additionally, after paying 100 gold coins, he could have another item. Therefore, Zhang Tie started to look at the items patiently.

On this booth, besides the 'Iron-Blood Fist', Zhang Tie also found some good-quality sabers and swords, a waistband and a bird in a cage, which aroused Zhang Tie's curiosity.

This was Zhang Tie's first time to see live animals being sold in the illegal market. Therefore, he was very curious about that. The medium-sized bird looked ugly and dark gray all over. However, its eyes were very sharp. It looked a bit restless in the cage.

"What's this? Did the demon hunters squad catch birds to sell?"

"This is thunder hawk. Although it does not look big, it's a ferocious LV 1 living being. A thunder hawk could drive away a pack of common wild wolves. This bird could not only move fast in the sky, but also be very agile and ferocious. Generally, this bird could hardly be caught. Our demon hunters squad encountered this one by chance. It might have dropped on the ground during the process of striving for the spouse with other thunder hawks and got wounded. We found it and brought it back. Its wounds have recovered. I was almost injured by it twice."

"What could it be used for?"

"You can find a bird trainer to train it. This kind of bird could serve as the best scout and messenger. It is also a good helper for hunting in the wild!"

Zhang's heart pounded at once, "Well, I want this, is it worth 50 gold coins?"

"Its price is 60 gold coins. But if you want it, you can take it with 50 gold coins!" after selling this bird, that person let out a sigh evidently.

Zhang Tie took over that bird cage. That person even warned him kindly, "Remember, do not put your finger into the cage; otherwise, the bird will cut off your finger with its beak at once. Thunder hawk has a very great strength..."

"Alright, I will remember that!" Zhang Tie took over the cage and

left at once. After passing by that booth, Zhang Tie put one finger into the cage. At the sight of the finger, the thunder hawk didn't give him a peck; conversely, it started to rub Zhang Tie's finger intimately with its beak like a spoiled child. Zhang Tie almost burst out into laughter. "This bird seems a bit intelligent. It's great! I am seeking for a chance to try the soul-based animal controlling skill of the 'Great Wilderness Sutra' these days. "

As there were all sorts of people and items in the illegal market, Zhang Tie did not look too eye-catching with a birdcage on the way. Zhang Tie even saw some iron-armored demons' heads being soaked in potion on a booth. When he passed by that booth, Zhang Tie even heard that owner whispering with another guy.

"1,000 gold coins per one. Just take it away. When you submit this as a military exploit, you could be promoted to a commission officer at once...After that, you can leave Selnes Theater of Operations with the excuse of being wounded. With military exploits, a commission officer could leave here easier than common soldiers. All those rich dandies do this..."

"It's too expensive. How about a bit cheaper? We've just received a business, we need at least 10..."

"950 gold coins for each. Additionally, you need to wait for two days for the rest ones..."

They then bargained in a low voice...

Wherever there were people, there were always trades. In the same theater of operations, those common soldiers were driven spirited by the carriage of wing demons' heads; however, at the same time, someone was racking his head to implement his escape plan using a demon's head...

Zhang Tie sighed inside——this is human, this is humanity...

"Ah, 'Fierce Tiger Know-how'..." a nearby, low exclamation attracted Zhang Tie's eyes...

Chapter 577: Different Responses

With 'Fierce Tiger Technique', one could reach LV 13 and light 233 surging points. It was also incomplete. If it was complete, it should be called 'Fierce Tiger Sutra'.

The complete 'Fierce Tiger Sutra' was a viscount-level cultivation method.

After hearing that voice, Zhang Tie walked closer to that booth. Hearing some customers' discussion at the booth, Zhang Tie understood something at once.

'Fierce Tiger Technique' was a secret knowledge in a northern country occupied by demons. Before the holy war, that country was prosperous. However, after only a few years, everything had become a history. To date, this secret knowledge had become a merchandise in the demon hunters illegal market in Mocco City.

This 'Fierce Tiger Technique' was also recorded on a piece of diamond crystal which was rimmed with metal. The one who sold this secret knowledge was a guy in a cloak who wore a mask.

The price of 'Fierce Tiger Technique' was 350,000 gold coins. It could also be exchanged with other items of the equivalent value.

After watching it for a while, those guys in front of that booth left due to its high price, so did Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie became thrilled by finding a skill-level secret knowledge as he was looking to find 'Robust Ox Technique' here. Additionally, it might not be expensive. For most of the LV 9 demon hunters, they felt pitiful by only promoting one level to three-star strong fighters at most. Even LV 9 soldiers were just commoners in demon corps, not to mention a LV 10 soldier.

However, after taking a round in the illegal market, Zhang Tie didn't find any 'Robust Ox Know-how'. Therefore, he recovered his composure. He believed that he would have a chance to find the

secret knowledge here sooner or later.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether Reinhardt had bought his necessity as he was empty-handed when Zhang Tie met him. Reinhardt was amazed about that birdcage in Zhang Tie's hand.

"You bought it?"

"Yup, I bought an Iron-Blood Fist as a souvenir. The seller gifted this to me as changes!"

Reinhardt became speechless.

"Let's go!"

"Whether there are also demon hunters illegal market in Volv City and Sladic City?"

"Yes, there are. But the markets in the two cities are a bit smaller than here! However, there are also high-quality goods there..."

"Can you tell me the whereabouts of the two markets? I want to take a look there!"

Reinhardt then told Zhang Tie the addresses of the two demon hunters markets. The same with this one, the other two markets were also covered by a bar.

Zhang Tie silently remembered the addresses in mind. He planned to take a look there these couple of days. Perhaps, he could find what he needed in the other two markets.

After leaving the bar, Reinhardt directly threw the car key to Zhang Tie.

"You drive my vehicle back. The military SUV of Jinyun Country is too eye-catching in Mocco City. As there are too many military SUVs from Norman Empire here, you might be safer by driving it!"

"What about you?"

Reinhardt burst out into laughter, "Iron-Plough Corps's encampment is several kilometers away. I will just walk there!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he took the key. It was just a vehicle which was worth about 100 gold coins. Zhang Tie even didn't need to ask Reinhardt whether would he return it to him.

"Fine, see you then. You can find me in the Crystal Battle Fortress if you need help!"

"You too. You can find me in Iron-Plough Corps. But I'm not always in Mocco City. I only stay here for 3-5 days a month. As the holy war has just started, you'd better not show off your fighting strength on the battlefield. I really don't want to hear that you have a cool performance on the battlefield again. The demons have not exerted their full efforts yet. Remember, you cannot have a bright future if you're dead!" Reinhardt told Zhang Tie solemnly as he forcefully patted his hand on Zhang Tie's shoulder.

Zhang Tie nodded, "You need to take care of yourself too!"

Reinhardt nodded before leaving. In the dark, Zhang Tie saw Reinhardt's back disappearing in front of him before taking the key and getting on the vehicle.

The moment he got in the car did Zhang Tie open the bird cage and let the thunder hawk out of the cage. The seller thought that the thunder hawk had already recovered; actually, it did not. Zhang Tie found that when he let it jump onto his hand.

After cultivating the 'Great Wildness Sutra', with his rising cultivating level, Zhang Tie found that he had mastered the ability to communicate with these animals and magical beasts. That was really a great ability. No wonder the deceased one who left the 'Great Wildness Sutra' to him in the cave told him that he could easily have numerous wealth once he mastered the 'Great Wildness Sutra'. Based on his current ability, he could easily perform as a common animal controller.

The seller mistook another point about the thunder hawk. Although thunder hawks would fight for spouse and would suffer wounds in the process, even die, this thunder hawk's wounds were

not caused by fighting for the spouse. Instead, they were stricken by lightning bolts when they caught up with them in the sky.

Like how a moth would charge at the fire, thunder hawk liked to pursue lightning bolts in the sky. Nobody knew the reason. That was where their name came from. Generally, very few thunder hawk could survive a lightning bolt, except for this one, who really survived on.

Zhang Tie soon drove out of Mocco City and came to the wild. Zhang Tie then put one hand on a wheeler while stretching another hand out. At the sight of this, the thunder hawk flattered its wings and jumped on Zhang Tie's one side.

"As you've not recovered yet. How about resting somewhere for a few days? I have good drinks and food for you." Zhang Tie asked the thunder hawk as he touched its head.

It seemed that the thunder hawk had already understood Zhang Tie's meaning. It rubbed its head on Zhang Tie's hand for a few times. Zhang Tie smiled as the thunder hawk instantly disappeared into the position of the copilot.

At this moment, Heller's voice sounded.

"Castle Lord, can you bring in some more animals? This place is a paradise for those animals. They would like it!"

"Okay!" Zhang Tie replied as he suddenly remembered something, "Heller, can I directly set free animals into Castle of Black Iron?"

"Of course!"

"That's great. I will have a try next time..."

At this moment, a scene appeared in Zhang Tie's mind. He wondered when Castle of Black Iron could be as large as the Blackson Humans Corridor, when could he enjoy the most splendid and exotic landscape everywhere. He could see various docile mutated plants and living beings there. Besides, it could

hold billions of people...

By then, when humans were forced against the wall by demons, he could lead them in Castle of Black Iron. After all, they were two completely different spaces. However, Castle of Black Iron with 100 sq km was still a bit limited for long-term settlement. If it could be as large as millions of sq km, it would be available for enough people to live in. He could even found a country inside.

As he thought about that, Zhang Tie threw the metal birdcage into the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron which added trivial basic energy storage to Castle of Black Iron. After that, Zhang Tie drove back to the Crystal Battle Fortress. Fortunately, nothing happened on the way.

Those in Crystal Battle Fortress also knew about Zhang Tie's "heroic deed" in Mocco City today. When Zhang Tie parked his vehicle, he found the surrounding soldiers were watching him with admiring looks.

However, before he returned to the Idiots, a person outside Lan Yunxi's office told him that Lan Yunxi wanted to see him. Therefore, Zhang Tie entered Lan Yunxi's office.

In Lan Yunxi's office, Zhang Tie was ferociously sworn by her. Like Reinhardt, Lan Yunxi also disagreed with Zhang Tie's deed today. She was even very angry about that.

"Do you think you're great by just killing some LV 9 and LV 10 wing demons? Do you think you can step all the demons under your feet? Do you know that there are also battle-spirit-level wing demons? Do you think you can still survive back if you met any wing demon above LV 11? Do you think you could be the main character of the holy war between humans and demons?"

Lan Yunxi was driven mad that her face almost froze. She released a powerful and unrivaled qi, "I thought you were smart. However, I've not imagined that you are as silly as the other men!"

Zhang Tie couldn't even utter a word. However, Zhang Tie found that he grew happier as Lan Yunxi swore him.

Finally, before Zhang Tie uttered any word, Lan Yunxi had driven him out of the office. Standing outside the office, Zhang Tie touched his nose as he smiled and returned to the Idiots.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that another woman was waiting for him in the Idiots.

She was Dantai Qingqing...

Chapter 578: Who Pursued Whom?

At the sight of Zhang Tie, those crew members forcefully blinked their eyes towards Zhang Tie. The first mate then told Zhang Tie that a woman was waiting for him in the command module of the airship.

"That's a very beautiful woman!" the first mate commented.

After entering the command module, Zhang Tie caught sight of Dantai Qingqing.

Seeing their captain coming in, those horny male wolves who were showing off their muscles in front of Dantai Qingqing left the command module.

A bit treacherous red hair, a sexy figure and a [beauty mark](#) near her lip——Zhang Tie didn't know what Dantai Qingqing was here for.

At this moment, she was wearing a brilliant, rosy languette and a pair of high-heeled shoes like she was going to attend a ball. Those horny male wolves who showed off their muscles in front of her might not know that she could kill them all in a second if she lost her temper.

"I heard that you are waiting for me? What's the matter?" Zhang Tie asked straightforwardly.

"Why not ask my name first? Don't you think it's rude?" Dantai Qingqing pouted her mouth, which looked cute.

Zhang Tie rubbed his face as he blushed, "Miss Dantai Qingqing, we met in the Military Exploits Registration Center. I heard someone calling your name. Therefore, I know who you are. You also know who I am. So, we don't need to ask names!"

"Ha, I've not imagined that you could pay attention to my name. It means I'm charming!" Dantai Qingqing smiled, which was too alluring that even Zhang Tie was shocked.

"Beautiful woman is always eye-catching, let alone it was in Crystal Battle Fortress!" Zhang Tie shrugged and said honestly.

After hearing this, Dantai Qingqing became happier. With a fascinating smile, she walked towards Zhang Tie. The moment she came closer to Zhang Tie had Zhang Tie sniffed her good smell. "I'm here to ask you some questions?" Dantai Qingqing said.

"Go ahead"

"Do you have a girlfriend?"

Zhang Tie became stunned as he glanced at Dantai Qingqing with a curious look, "Yes, I have, many!"

"You're honest. Do you mind having one more?" Dantai Qingqing put one hand on Zhang Tie's shoulder as she leered at Zhang Tie.

"Who?"

Dantai Qingqing showed off her arrogant figure by raising her head as she said, "How about this girl?"

"You?" Zhang Tie seriously looked at her from her head to toe. Standing closer to him, Dantai Qingqing really made Zhang Tie's blood boil.

When Zhang Tie glanced at her, he was fully dubious, "F*ck, this woman must have eaten wrong medicine. What an open girl!"

"There are so many men in the Crystal Battle Fortress. I believe that a lot of them must be pursuing you. Why did you choose me?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"This girl likes little [fresh meat](#) like you. You're handsome and talented. How about that?" Dantai Qingqing put it straightforwardly.

Zhang Tie smiled, "Well, I agree. From now on, you're my girlfriend!"

"Really?" Dantai Qingqing had not imagined that Zhang Tie could agree with her so fast as he became excited at once, "You have a

good insight!"

Zhang Tie then put his arm around Dantai Qingqing's slim waist as he smirked and glanced over her body once again.

Under the 'evil' gaze of Zhang Tie, Dantai Qingqing twisted her body restlessly as she seemed not being used to Zhang Tie's arm. As Zhang Tie embraced her waist, he started to tease her by rubbing the place under her waist, causing goosebumps all over Dantai Qingqing.

Zhang Tie laughed inside as he directly headed for the Captain's Room.

"Where are we going?"

"We're in the command module. It's where we work. Now that you're my girlfriend, we'd better talk about rest of the things in my room!"

Dantai Qingqing threw another glance at Zhang Tie before raising her head and followed Zhang Tie into the Captain's room in a proud way.

The moment they entered the room had Zhang Tie locked the door from inside.

After hearing the door was locked, Dantai Qingqing turned around. At this moment, Zhang Tie had already forcefully kissed her plump lips with his arm around her waist.

"Hmm..."

Having not prepared for that, Dantai Qingqing widely opened her eyes at once. She had not imagined that Zhang Tie could do this. After being vacant for a few seconds, she pushed away Zhang Tie at once. Meanwhile, she raised her eyebrows and watched Zhang Tie furiously as she blushed, "What're you doing?"

Zhang Tie watched her with an 'amazing' look, "Now that you're my girlfriend, it means that I can kiss you. Have you seen any

boyfriend who could not kiss her girlfriend? Don't tell me this was your first kiss..."

"Who...who said this was my first kiss?" Dantai Qingqing's breasts undulated heavily as she glared at Zhang Tie. After half a minute, she recovered her composure. She revealed a smile once again as she said calmly, "It was too abrupt. You've not even told me about that. I'm not used to that!"

"You mean you want me to aware you in advance?" Zhang Tie asked with a voice that sounded as tender as water.

"Hmm, that would be better!"

"Okay. You can go to bed and take off your skirt..." Zhang Tie pointed at that bed.

Zhang Tie's words shocked Dantai Qingqing so much. Widely opening her eyes, Dantai Qingqing asked unbelievably, "What did you say?"

"I told you to take off your skirt and lie on the bed!" Zhang Tie explained very patiently.

"What...what do you want?"

"Of course, I want you to be my girlfriend!" Zhang Tie watched her with an 'innocent' look, "Since I came to Selnes Theater of Operations, I've not made love. Now that, you want to be my girlfriend, just let me enjoy it!"

Saying this, Zhang Tie had already put his hand on Qingqing's butts. Being scared, Dantai Qingqing jumped away like a deer being startled. Gritting her teeth forcefully, the woman glared at Zhang Tie, "B*stard, who...who agrees to let you enjoy it!"

"Isn't it normal between a man and his girlfriend?" Zhang Tie watched Dantai Qingqing who was staring at him like finding an alien, "Is it strange for me to make love with my girlfriend? Hurry up. No crap! Lie on the bed. You can also lie on your stomach. The more gestures you could perform, the more I will like. Heh, heh,

your butts look plump..."

"Who...who told you that a man and a woman have to do this?"

"Yes, a man and a woman don't necessarily have to do this. However, as you're my girlfriend, when you stay with me, we must do this." saying this, Zhang Tie had stripped to his waist. He started to undo his waistband and prepared to take off his pants.

"F*rt, who told you that a man and his girlfriend must do this?" Dantai Qingqing became both furious and bashful as her face had completely turned red.

Zhang Tie stopped at once as he revealed a considerate look, "You're also right. Whether I'm too secular or not? Perhaps I'm shortsighted. How about this? If you can tell me a story, the main male character of which was a eunuch, it means you're right. Otherwise, just lie there obediently!"

Dantai Qingqing widely opened her mouth. Zhang Tie stopped his movement as he just watched her...

After half a minute...

"Have you got one?" Zhang Tie asked in a kind voice, "If not, just follow my order and lie on the bed. We can take it slow. Don't worry, I will not hurt you! I've really not imagined that a beauty like you could propose to be my girlfriend voluntarily in Selnes Theater of Operations. That's marvelous! I think I will not feel lonely at night later on."

Zhang Tie revealed an 'obscene' smile as he undid his waistband. Meanwhile, he gradually drew closer to Dantai Qingqing. Perhaps being frightened by Zhang Tie, Dantai Qingqing's face turned a bit pale, "This isn't little fresh meat! This is a lady killer." She started to move back one step after another as she stammered, "You...you...you stay away from me!"

"Do you want to play something violent? You are a good performer. Heh...heh...I like it..." Zhang Tie revealed an 'evil'

smile as he gradually forced Dantai Qingqing against the wall. After undoing his waistband, he whipped it loudly, "Now that you like this atmosphere, I will show you something good on me!"

When Dantai Qingqing had nowhere to go, Zhang Tie rapidly took off his pants.

"Ah..." Dantai Qingqing uttered a shrill as she covered her eyes and directly sprung up from the ground and fell on the door side. She then opened the door at once and darted outside without looking back.

"Qingqing...don't run...I will be kind...Qingqing..." Zhang Tie pretended to chase after her for a few steps as he shouted with a 'sentimental', oily voice.

Hearing Zhang Tie's exclamation, Dantai Qingqing sped up. She even lost one high-heeled shoe. What a miserable escape!

After staying in the room quietly for half a minute and watching Dantai Qingqing rushing towards the Crystal Battle Fortress after leaving the airship barefoot, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter at once as he staggered forward and back.

If it was four years ago, he might have been frightened by Dantai Qingqing's performance tonight. However, Zhang Tie had already experienced too many love affairs. The moment he caught sight of Dantai Qingqing had he known that this hot beauty had not made love before. It was too easy for Zhang Tie to deal with such a little beauty who had a great fighting strength, yet was rebellious and inexperienced in some aspect.

Zhang Tie then lowered his head and looked at his loose sky-blue boxer shorts from different angles. Touching his jaw, he made some poses, "Hmm, doesn't this pair of boxer shorts look good? This is the uniform of air cavalry in Selnes Theater of Operations. What the hell are these women thinking about? That's too complex. Do they think that men don't wear underwear..."

...

Beauty mark refers to pigmented naevus.

Little fresh meat refers to handsome young males.

Chapter 579: War and Bloodline

What happened between Dantai Qingqing and Zhang Tie was just a small episode in Zhang Tie's life. He didn't care about that at all.

On the second day, the news that Zhang Tie drove a vehicle being loaded with wing demons' heads around Mocco City had been published in 'Holy War News' along with the two photos, which shocked the entire Selnes Theater of Operations.

Everyone knew that it was how Zhang Tie responded to the assassination which targeted at him two days ago.

The reputation of Selnes Eagle grew louder. Zhang Tie evidently became the representative of human heroes in the theater of operations.

However, Zhang Tie wasn't used to represent or be represented. After being warned by Reinhardt and Lan Yunxi; Zhang Tie, being in the peak of the storm, became low-key at once. He didn't do excessive or eye-catching things anymore; instead, he proposed to join the airship troop of Jinyun Country. Ignoring his social status and halos, Zhang Tie fought demons together with the airship troop. As an air cavalry, he was responsible for protecting the entire airship of Jinyun Country in the air. Additionally, he would carry out some reconnaissance missions with other glider drivers.

After making such a choice, although Zhang Tie did not become that remarkable as that a couple of days ago, his persona movement was limited. He had fewer chances to kill wing demons. However, he became more honorable in the heart of those fighters in Crystal Battle Fortress and the airship troop of Jinyun Country.

Across the Selnes Theater of Operations, Jinyun Country's airship troop was the only airship troop that was escorted by the air cavalry. Because of Zhang Tie's existence, the casualty rate of the glider drivers of Jinyun Country's airship troop declined to the lowest in the Selnes Theater of Operations. The casualty of each

mission declined by over 90% than before.

In the troop, those who could provide a strong guarantee to their comrade-in-arms and could save so many people, would gain others' respect wherever they were, such as Zhang Tie.

The life in the theater of operations was relatively boring and very intense everyday. Everyone was in a high alert. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had stayed in Jinyun Country's airship troop for over a month.

During this period, although being in the same troop, Zhang Tie couldn't see Lan Yunxi very often. Sometimes, they could not see each other for 1 or 2 weeks. Additionally, they met in the public each time.

In the same period, Zhang Tie almost visited all the large-scale airships across Selnes Theater of Operations as he followed his airship troop out for battle or transfer. Zhang Tie also visited Volv and Slavic, another two cities in the human territory where his airship troop took a stop in turns. He visited the illegal demon hunters markets over there.

Although Zhang Tie had seen a lot of cultivation methods and secret knowledge in the two demon hunters markets during the past month, he still didn't see 'Robust Ox Know-how' or the incomplete 'King Roc Sutra'. Zhang Tie gradually became worried. He could not just remain stagnant on his fighting strength. This would be a huge loss for him, causing him to bear a great stress.

The situation on the battlefield changed every second. Like what Lan Yunxi said, in the fight between humans and demons, a LV 9 fighter could never be the main character. Because there were so many opponents who were more powerful than him.

Lan Yunxi talked with him again later on; however, Zhang Tie still didn't accept her 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. Because of this, Lan Yunxi didn't speak to him for about two weeks. However, after that, Zhang Tie had made a warning in mind——If he did not get

the 'Robust Ox Skill' at the end of July, he would find another secret knowledge to cultivate.

Zhang Tie really could not keep going like this. If he was not afraid of exposing his secret and being caught for vivisection, he could fetch the 'Robust Ox Know-how' from Huaiyuan Palace in the broad daylight, he could also fetch one from Long Wind Business Group.

However, Zhang Tie dared not do that as each of his movement was eye-catching. If he cultivated the 'Robust Ox Know-how', once he passed LV 11, he would become the focus of the public. By then, he could barely clarify it. That would arise a big trouble to him. Therefore, he could only work out a way to get 'Robust Ox Know-how' stealthily. To be rich silently counted the most.

"What if I still could not fetch the 'Robust Ox Know-how' in the end of July?"

Zhang Tie didn't have a high requirement on himself, neither did he have a great ambition. He only needed an incomplete sutra above count. "Zhang Huaiyuan, the founder of Huaiyuan Palace have had such a great undertaking only by a count-level 'Breaking Sun Sutra', if I could also have such a great undertaking, I would be satisfied; it would be better if I could get an incomplete sutra above marquis or duke.

Over the past one month, Zhang Tie had contacted his elder brother for several times through remote-sensing crystal. He told his parents that he was safe and reported his recent situation to his family members. Although Zhang Tie was in Selnes, he always concerned about his family members.

Under the arrangement of his elder brother, Zhang Tie's family members had almost prepared well to leave Waii Sub-Continent. By the next month, Zhang Tie's family would set out for the eastern continent.

Although Zhang family would move to the eastern continent,

Zhang family's business in Huaiyuan Prefecture didn't end at once, and had been properly arranged. After Zhang Tie's elder brother left, the business of Jinwu Corporation would shrink. Some of its business would be sold to Long Wind Corporation. Through remote sensing crystal, Zhang Tie's elder brother could also manage the business here from the eastern continent. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang entrusted the specialized agency of Huaiyuan Palace and Golden Roc Bank respectively to supervise the operations of the corporation.

What Zhang Tie worried most was actually Linda, Fiona and Beverly.

When he returned home last time, in the last evenings before he left Huaiyuan Prefecture, he injected his essence of new life into the body of the three women by the special ability gifted by the small tree after carnival.

The request was also proposed by the three women. Before they departed from him, they expected to breed new lives for him and would wait in the eastern continent for his return.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie didn't know they had such a thought. After making love with them for many times, he found they all maintained an odd gesture; at the same time, they prevented his fluid from flowing out of their body. Zhang Tie then realized that they all wanted to have babies.

"If I need to wait for you a few years, I'm afraid that I will miss you so much. However, if I had a baby, I could spend time with our baby. That would not make me insane!" Beverly told him.

"Since you left the airship on the way back to Huaiyuan Prefecture, I was thinking about having a baby for you. That was the first time I wanted to be a mom and have a man's baby. Even if you don't come back, even if you died, when the kid grows up, I would tell him, he had a great papa. He's my most admirable man!" Fiona told him.

"If I can give birth to a baby, I want to have a baby with you. I'm afraid of losing the quality to be a mom. When you'd see me in the eastern continent, I might have already lost that quality. That would be a great pity! Beverly and Fiona had already told you what I wanted to say..." Linda said.

When a woman determined to have a baby for you regardless of being fat, ugly, regardless of the huge pains, and the other potential dangers. When a woman would like to be a mother, to accomplish the greatest role conversion in her life, wish to sustain more life responsibilities or put all her efforts in breeding a baby for a man...Zhang Tie didn't know what other men would feel when they heard this, but he was deeply moved by this unprecedentedly.

When the three women said the above words, they didn't say the three words 'I love you', but Zhang Tie thought all the words were solemn oath and promises...

Being moved by this, Zhang Tie made the most important decision for himself.

To tell the truth, even Zhang Tie himself didn't know when would he see them again. The hopeless wait was the most excruciating. Zhang Tie even didn't know whether could he return to the eastern continent in the future after this departure.

Zhang Tie felt that he was responsible and obligatory to sustain such a bloodline for himself, for Linda, Beverly and Fiona, for his dad and mom and for Zhang family.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie only told his elder brother about that. Before Zhang Tie came to Selnes, Zhang Yang had already asked his wives to pay attention to the health of Linda, Fiona and Beverly. By the end of May, Zhang Yang messaged Zhang Tie that all of them had no menstruation in May. After reporting it to their dad and mom, Zhang Tie's mom picked up them and arranged them to live in Zhang's household. According to the doctor, Linda,

Beverly and Fiona were pregnant.

Zhang Yang said that although their dad swore Zhang Tie, he was very happy inside. So was their mom. The whole family was very boisterous now. Their mom was preparing for the babies' clothes, although she didn't know whether they were male or female.

Zhang Tie didn't tell his elder brother what he wanted to say through the remote sensing crystal—the babies that Linda, Beverly and Fiona had were all male with black hair and eyes. Additionally, they would awaken the two bloodlines the moment they came to this world, precise throwing skill and body transformation.

This was a powerful ability gifted by the small tree which could control and determine the sustainability of his bloodline .

It was soon mid-June, less than 2 months after the human alliance seized back the Flatte City. However, the tusk of the demon corps shocked everyone once again...

Chapter 580: Attack and Defense

On June 11th, after Zhang Tie and Jinyun Country's airship troop carried out one-week patrol in the theater of operations, they moved to a large-scale airship center called C over 50 km behind Volv City.

This was Zhang Tie's 3rd time here in the past one month. Therefore, this place was not strange to him anymore.

The constant two days' storm symbolized the beginning of the rainy season in this summer on the Selnes Plain. The two days' storm did not influence the action of the airship troop and the gliders on the airships, except for Zhang Tie.

When the Idiots landed, the moment Zhang Tie stepped out of the hatch door in the military boots had he seen some ground service ambulance vehicles flashed by him, spraying water onto his trouser legs and shoes.

The shallow puddles on the ground carried a lot of coal ash. When it sprayed on Zhang Tie's trousers, it caused a lot of black spots. The sprayed water pleasantly stained Zhang Tie's wholly-new military uniform regardless of his status as Selnes Eagle.

Lowering his head, Zhang Tie watched his trousers and shoes which were covered with black spots, then the direction where the ground service vehicles headed for. He then slightly shook his head. Zhang Tie didn't care about that as he walked towards the flagship airship of Jinyun Country where Lan Yunxi was.

It was still raining; however, it was much lighter than before. Wearing a water-proof raincoat, Zhang Tie strolled on the road of the airship center C. At this moment, a concern flashed across his mind. This concern did not come from those mud spots on his trouser, but from the situation in the past one week. Zhang Tie found that all the wing demons had disappeared for three consecutive days. He realized it was not a good symbol.

Demons didn't shrink; wing demons didn't appear. It meant that demons must have already worked out a new tactic to deal with humans.

The atmosphere in Base C also seemed to be a bit intense. This time, Zhang Tie found too many security guards were placed here. One more battle fortress was founded 7 km away in the north of the base. Additionally, the barbed wires and patrolling troops outside the base increased.

At this moment, there were over 3000 airships in the airship base of Volv City. Like an airship exhibition attended by countries across Waii Sub-Continent, airships were taking off and landing within dozens of square kilometers. When Zhang Tie came here for the first time, he was amazed by what he saw. Now, he had been accustomed to that.

Artists and poets might find something in war which could arouse their inspiration and passion; however, for a person who indeed participated in the progress of the war, all of his illusions and romantic factors would be broken into pieces by the cruelty of war in an extremely short period. In this case, he only thought about how to survive himself and how to kill enemies.

People came and went in Base C. Almost nobody else would like to ramble in the rain. They all trotted or drove their vehicles fast on the road. Those airships landing in the base made the ground servicemen busy. They started to provide various supplies for airships. By contrast, those crew members in the landing airships would pour into the strip clubs and brothels around the base.

Although Zhang Tie was walking, his speed almost caught the others' trotting speed. Nobody could recognize him on the way. During the past one month, Zhang Tie's name didn't appear on the 'Holy War News' anymore. He didn't even update his military exploits on the Military Exploits Rankings in Crystal Battle Fortress. In this case, he gradually faded out of the public's vision.

When he arrived at Lan Yunxi' flagship airship, he found a greater part of chief commanders of fleets of Jinyun Country had arrived there. Among those whose lowest military rank was lieutenant colonel, Zhang Tie's military rank as sergeant first class became a bit eye-catching. However, Zhang Tie was an exception as he wore the unique uniform of air cavalry. He was also qualified to attend the summit of the fleets.

All the attendants were young elites from the six big clans of Jinyun Country. These people paid more attention to the military exploits rankings than their military ranks. Therefore, nobody refused Zhang Tie to attend the conference.

Many of them were those who had lost the bet with Zhang Tie. After watching Zhang Tie's powerful performance in the sky, they all became silent. They were very polite to Zhang Tie now.

Those who had come here were discussing at the conference table in a low voice. Zhang Tie's seat was in the middle of the right side of the conference table. The moment he sat down had a guy with the military rank of lieutenant colonel drawn closer to him, "Have you found that something is not right in the theater of operations?"

Zhang Tie nodded with a solemn look.

The one who talked with Zhang Tie was Wang Cheng, an apprentice of Wang Clan, one of the six top clans in Jinyun Country and a chief commander of the No. 7 fleet of the airship troop. He was an easy-going guy. After meeting Zhang Tie for a few times here, he had become familiar with Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie came to Base C last time, this chief and some young commission officers drank over night in the commission officers club. That night, those guys wanted to make Zhang Tie drunk; however, they had not imagined that Zhang Tie could move all the alcohol from his mouth to the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron. As a result, over 10 people could not defeat Zhang Tie,

even in turns.

After that, Zhang Tie was better known as alcoholic than Selnes Eagle among the airship troop of Jinyun Country. He was almost like a king at the table.

Wang Cheng's concern was verified soon. After a few minutes, when all the commission officers arrived, Lan Yunxi, in major's military uniform appeared with an overwhelming qi.

When she entered, all the commission officers on both sides of the conference table stood up, including Zhang Tie.

Lan Yunxi just glanced over their looks. When she caught sight of Zhang Tie, she watched him for 0.3 seconds longer, which satisfied Zhang Tie's vanity to a certain degree. She then nodded as everybody sat down.

"The latest news, the airship troop of Francia Federation has been annihilated by demons yesterday..."

Soon after that, the conference room froze at once.

After being quiet for about half a minute, someone asked in a hoarse voice, "Erm...is it real?"

"The alliance command has already dispatched some demon hunting squads to check the spot. Based on the analysis result, the airship troop of Francia Federation was annihilated by demons in less than 20 minutes!" Lan Yunxi replied calmly.

"That's impossible! Although the performance of the airships of Francia Federation's airship troop was a bit worse than that of fury-level airships, that's a fleet of over 500 large-scale battle airships. How could demons annihilate such a fleet in 20 minutes?" a commission officer shouted.

"That's real. The possibilities are just judged by our experiences!" Lan Yunxi watched that commission officer with a wise look, "Before we say impossible, we'd better ask ourselves our reference. Whether our reference is too powerful to be unshakable, or

whether it's made according to our habit or willingness. In this conference, we're not talking about whether it's possible or impossible. Because it's unnecessary for us to do that. The priority is to clarify how did demons make it and how should we deal with them."

Zhang Tie was also considering about Lan Yunxi's words while lowering his head. Zhang Tie had to admit that Lan Yunxi, as a commander was more excellent than him in many aspects. This was also why she could have these people follow her orders. Zhang Tie learned many things from Lan Yunxi.

Zhang Tie was not good at analyzing and judging such an overall situation. After being silent for a few seconds, when the others were frowning and thinking about Lan Yunxi's words, Zhang Tie opened his mouth. Actually, among all these at present, Zhang Tie knew wing demons best.

According to Zhang Tie's judgment, it must be wing demons who annihilated human airship troop in such a short period.

"When you're thinking about how demons made it, I hope you know that in the last few days, I found that the number of wing demons had decreased by over 90%. That is very abnormal. After combining with the accident of Francia Federation's airship troop, I think demons might have changed their tactic. How did they make it? I think the main corps of demons might have changed the deployment of wing demons troops!"

Zhang Tie's words shocked everyone as they all focused on Zhang Tie.

"In the past, wing demons always attended the battle by a group of two or three, or 8-10 at most. They just strayed and sought for opportunities in the air like wild wolves. But now, I think they have started to throw in wing demons collectively. If they wanted to annihilate a fleet of over 500 battle airships in 20 minutes, they had to put in at least 1000 wing demons at once. With the help of

weather, when the human airship troop didn't have the gliders to make early warning, those wing demons raided into the matrix of the airship troop while being covered by clouds or terrains before successfully annihilating the fleet in such a short period!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie found a bit admiration and encouragement in Lan Yunxi's eyes. At the sight of Lan Yunxi's eyes, he immediately knew that Lan Yunxi knew the truth of this event.

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, many people started to discuss about that. After a hot discussion, they all agreed with Zhang Tie's opinion—demons indeed have changed the deployment of wing demons.

"This is serious for each people in Selnes Theater of Operations. If demons have started to put in wing demons collectively, it means that the main corps of demons have already found humans' shortcomings in the defense line of Selnes Theater of Operations."

"Air supremacy is humans' powerful umbrella in the Selnes defense line. Under the protection of this umbrella, the human ground troops could fight demon corps; however, if they lost this umbrella, the human ground troops would not stand too long in front of the overwhelming demon corps. "

"The air supremacy of the human defense line relies on its powerful airship troop. However, the human airship troop has a shortcoming in Selnes Theater of Operations, which doesn't expose itself until the opponent changed the tactic of their wing demons."

"Sometimes, wars are supported by a lot of strange math principles and relativity."

"It is the principle of probability which exposes the shortcoming of human airship troop."

"When wing demons appear in Selnes Theater of Operations sparsely, all the airship troops probably meet wing demons in the

air. Comparatively, it will be less possible for large-scale airship troops to be annihilated by wing demons. Because the human airship troops will outnumber wing demons. Humans will firmly take the air supremacy of Selnes defense line."

"This is the confrontation between two nets in the air."

"If demons put in wing demons collectively, the above situation would change. The human airship troop might not easily meet wing demons in the air anymore. Because wing demons' moving space and time is limited; once they meet in the air, the strength comparison between humans and demons will reverse at once. As a result, the human airship troop probably will be annihilated."

"Wing demons could gain relative air supremacy at a certain time and place. Through this relative air supremacy, the advantage of human airship troop would be weakened step by step."

"Demons could put in wing demons collectively without any limit. Being restricted by the flight principles of airships, commanding and communication level as well as other objective conditions, the human airship troops could not make this. Even if they barely made it, they would not have any effect. "

"If tens of thousands of airships moved in the sky at the same time, suppose they were in the most dense array, they would occupy at least dozens of square km. Unless demons were blind, such an airship troop's move would not have any effect at all. Additionally, demons could attack humans by chance. Given the power of Three-eye Association in this theater of operations, I'm afraid that the moment such a move order was delivered to the airship troops would the demons know about that."

"After confronting with human allied forces in Selnes Theater of Operations for months, when the rainy season arrived this year, the demon corps finally found the shortcoming of human defense line through constant skirmishes with the allied human forces. They then started to tear open the air umbrella of humans in

Selnes Theater of Operations."

"The demons' net became a saber and started to forcefully make a hole on the cover of the umbrella..."

With the explanation of Lan Yunxi and the others' discussion, Zhang Tie, who listened aside became hopeless.

"Don't demons have any shortcoming?"

"No, demons are sparing a chance for us to heavily destroy their ground troop. They have to suffer a loss by changing the tactic of their wing demon troop..." when the others felt gloomy, Lan Yunxi's firm voice drifted in Zhang Tie's ears...

Chapter 581: Dilemma and Hope

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

"When demons change the tactics of the wing demon troops, their air defense in the front lines to the north of the Selnes Theatre of Operations would weaken. Although spare wing demons were unable to annihilate the human airship troop, they could also provide the necessary early warning for demons as the defensive line off the demons against human airship troop. To date, the demons have started to gather the wing demons collectively. This means they would leave a lot of loopholes in the north defense line. As long as we seized this chance, the human airship troop might give a heavy blow to the ground troops of demon corps!" Lan Yunxi's gleaming eyes roused the others' morale once again. As a result, the conference room gradually warmed up.

"However, we need to confirm the precise position of demonized puppets corps on the ground. We should forget about attacking the main forces of demons, as demons are smart, even though wing demons changed their tactics, they would at least keep sufficient wing demons as their guards in the air above the encampment of their main forces. Therefore, our target is still the demonized puppet corps. Given their limited air forces, the demons could only choose between the main forces and the demonized puppets corps." The chief of staff of fleets who sat on the left side of Lan Yunxi added.

"As the population of demonized puppets is not limitless. If we can annihilate the demonized puppet corps, we can also give a heavy blow to demons. When we kill a lot of demonized puppets, the demons' control force in their occupied zone and Selnes front line would have loopholes for sure. By then, our ground troop would have a greater chance to win. By doing this, we're peeling off the armor of the main force of demons." A commissioned officer on Lan Yunxi's right side said after being silent for a few

seconds.

"However, the priority is to confirm the encampment of the demonized puppets before making a move. Meanwhile, we need to dodge from wing demon troop. We have to move very fast. We need to accomplish our evacuation before the wing demon troop makes any response. Otherwise, once being hampered by the wing demon troop, we might suffer a loss even if we could make it back. If so, we might even suffer more than the Francia Federation's airship troop.

"Such a move is very dangerous. Jinyun Country should not resist demons alone. We'd better touch the alliance command before moving out. With other airship troops' coordination, our danger would be reduced to the lowest level."

The commission officers discussed fervently.

"However, our airship troop needs to solve the problem of early warning before this. Especially when the subordinate fleets and greater brigades move alone, other gliders could not take off from the airships in bad weather. Even if we have Selnes Eagle, Zhang Tie could still not take care of each fleet. If we can't solve this problem, once those subordinate fleets and greater brigades encounter greater troops of wing demons when en route, they might repeat the outcome of the Francia Federation's airship troop."

"Before working out a feasible solution, I propose that our airship troop cancel the independent movement of subordinate fleets and greater brigades." A colonel suggested Lan Yunxi.

"I agree. This is what I want to say." Lan Yunxi nodded. "As the wing demons' tactics changed, our airship troop should also change its tactics. Now I will announce the new movement rules of the subordinate fleets and greater brigades of Jinyun Country's airship troop..."

...

After over one hour, everybody left the conference room with a gloomy mood. They all saw a hope of reversing the current situation. Therefore, they were not hopeless.

Zhang Tie left in the end. Seeing Zhang Tie staying, the other guys who bet with him before hurriedly left the conference room. Given the special relationship between Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi, plus that they only met for a few times in the same airship troop over the past one month, it was really a marvel to hear no scandal between Zhang Tie and Lan Yunxi.

Sometimes, even Zhang Tie could not understand why. 'Is it because that Lan Yunxi and I have a great gap in all aspects or because Lan Yunxi exhibits a very powerful image in front of others so that nobody would believe in that Lan Yunxi could act in another way in front of me?'

After refusing Lan Yunxi's "Breaking Sun Sutra" for twice, whenever they stayed together, Lan Yunxi would gaze at him with a hateful look, making him very depressed.

The moment the door of the conference room was closed, as the last person's footstep grew quieter in the distance, Zhang Tie hurriedly raised his hands when he saw Lan Yunxi changing her eye lights once again.

"Well, I surrender. Please don't look at me in this way. It makes me look like an unfaithful lover. Give me some more time, please. I will get the secret knowledge on cultivation for sure!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Lan Yunxi wanted to lose her temper once again. However, she didn't. After taking a deep breath, she said, "You mean that in the demon hunters markets?"

"How did you know that?" Zhang Tie watched Lan Yunxi with his eyes widely opened.

"Nonsense, your status is so special. Additionally, you move together with the airship troop, won't I pay attention to you?"

"Heh...heh...how about my moral standing? Besides demon hunters markets, I've not been to any brothels in the over the past month. I would always keep it for you even if I was forced to have internal injuries. You can tell me if you want it." Zhang Tie molested Lan Yunxi with a big smile.

If it was before, Zhang Tie's shameless words would definitely make Lan Yunxi blush. This was also one of Zhang Tie's interests. However, Lan Yunxi just released out a slow sigh this time.

"You cannot find any sultras in the demon hunters markets."

"I know."

Lan Yunxi then bit her lips. After being silent for a short while, she plucked her courage. "Do you know that I will not marry a man below knight?"

When she said this, Lan Yunxi blushed.

Zhang Tie watched her vacantly while being moved greatly inside.

Lan Yunxi thought Zhang Tie was scared. Therefore, she added in a tender voice, "Commoners might have satisfied when they reach above LV 10. Such kind of people could be talents and elites in many places. However, it's different for those beside me in Huaiyuan Palace. To be knight is only their basic condition. If your secret knowledge is below count, your development potential would also be restricted in the future even if you're a knight. Am I clear?"

"Don't worry. I will definitely promote to knight with a secret knowledge above count." Zhang Tie promised decisively.

"There's no secret knowledge on cultivation above count in Waii Sub-Continent. Do you think you can find one here? How can you make me reassured?" Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie with a slightly disappointed look. "Do you want to start cultivation when you come back to the eastern continent? Do you know that the clans

and sects in eastern continent treasure secret knowledge more than they do here? You might find many secret knowledge below count, however, those above the level of count are also very precious. In the sects of the eastern continent, you need chances to touch such secret knowledge after strict tests. How many years can you spare for that?"

"I've told you I will promote to a knight with a secret knowledge above count, I will definitely make it. Additionally, I'm confident that it will not take me too much time. I have my own fortunes and methods. You can believe in me!" Zhang Tie drew Lan Yunxi's hand.

After watching Zhang Tie for a short while seriously, Lan Yunxi slowly nodded. She didn't know how Zhang Tie could be so confident. However, Zhang Tie's decisive and frank look told her that he was not kidding.

"Well, I believe in you. I hope you not to play jokes with...with your future!"

Zhang Tie then reached his hand onto Lan Yunxi's waist while twisting like a snake. Lan Yunxi faintly moved before sliding his hand off.

"I have to go to the alliance command of Mocco City..."

"Do you come back at night?"

"What for?" Lan Yunxi became alert.

"As we have three days' rest, I want to talk about my dream with you. Although the holy war is critical, we should not give up our dreams!" Zhang Tie said officially.

"What's your dream? I've not heard about that before?"

"It's so-so. I dream to contribute my trivial strength to human's reproduction. As the commander of my airship troop and a righteous and kind human, you should support my dream whatever, right?"

After being silent for three seconds, Lan Yunxi understood Zhang Tie's words. In a split second, she was driven mad, 'You asshole. You're becoming more excessive. How dare you pose such a request towards me?' She then threw a paper file towards Zhang Tie's head, "Roll out of here..."

...

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie left the airship. Standing in the drizzle, Zhang Tie watched that airship taking off and flying towards the direction of Mocco City.

After putting on his raincoat, Zhang Tie left Base C.

After one hour, it was completely dark when Zhang Tie appeared in the Demon Hunters Bar in Volv City...

Good luck to me this time!

Zhang Tie muttered as he entered the gate which was as thick as that of the vault safe in bank.

Chapter 582: Killing Intent in Illegal Demon Hunters Market

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

The illegal demon hunters market in Volv City was in a lane behind the Demon Hunters Bar. Compared to the demon hunters market in Mocco City, this one was a bit smaller. However, the items in this market could match those in the market in Mocco City.

As it was raining, the ground paved with rubble became wet from the water dropping from the sunshade. The stones at the foot of the wall were also covered with a layer of thin moss. Under the green light of the fluorescent lamps, people's shadows were elongated in the moist lane. The lane was crowded with a lot of guys in overclothes. Their voices had changed, either hoarse or shrill. Some were even talking in ventriloquy, while their voices were produced in their stomach, making it more difficult to distinguish.

On a rainy night, some guys in masks wandered in such a serene lane like ghosts. At the sight of this, someone might be frightened a lot. Therefore, the atmosphere in the lane was a bit weird.

Zhang Tie was also walking in the lane in a suit of black overclothes and a mask as he watched the items being displayed on the windows on both sides of the lane.

After reaching LV 9, Zhang Tie started to understand why it was just a beginning of cultivation at LV 9 as was told by Zhao Yuan, his master. Besides a lot of invisible surge points that needed to be ignited after LV 9, a lot of fighting skills could be learned only after LV 9.

Take movement skills as an example. Before LV 9, Zhang Tie was only qualified to learn leaping skill, which could greatly increase one's leaping ability by releasing force through the spine. Before

mastering it, Zhang Tie could use his instinct to leap 4 m high. However, after mastering it, he could leap 6-7 m high easily.

When Zhang Tie came to this demon hunters market, he witnessed the biggest trade. It was a movement skill called "Storm Movement". Its price was 650,000 gold coins. This really stunned Zhang Tie. When he was attracted by this book, he asked about its details and learned that its effect could not be exerted until over 70 surging points on one's feet were ignited. Therefore, Zhang Tie gave it up.

Many high-level fighting skills required the cultivator to light some surging points. After obtaining the secret knowledge on how to light surging points, for many people, whether the fighting skills that they cultivate could coordinate with the surging points that they have lit determined their personal strength.

Generally, the more surging points that were ignited, the greater potential would be released. As a result, the more fighting skills could be cultivated and applied. Therefore, on the road of cultivation, the more powerful you were, the more powerful you would be. Although each step forward was very difficult, after each step, you would see a different world.

When Zhang Tie was looking at the merchandise in the lane, he suddenly felt his finger slightly numb through the ring of awareness. Zhang Tie was immediately shocked.

When the effect of the ring of awareness was triggered, it indicated that someone was staring at him with a malicious look for over 20 seconds.

Zhang Tie didn't know who was following him. However, the warning from the ring of awareness made him careful. Although he pretended that he hadn't noticed, when he watched those weapons on a roadside booth, he rapidly glanced over those people behind him through his eye corners.

He saw over 30 people behind him in the lane using his dark

vision. Each of them was wearing a suit of black overclothes and a mask. They were all going about their own business. Some were in a group of 2 or 3, some were independent. It seemed that nobody was noticing him at all. Zhang Tie could not identify who was staring him from behind.

'Is it a coincidence or someone is going to rip me off after knowing my status?'

Zhang Tie rapidly racked his mind. In Selnes Theatre of Operations, demon hunters came from different countries and regions. Therefore, even if the relationship between demon hunters was very complex sometimes. Zhang Tie had also heard about demon hunters stabbing each other with sabers in the wild. Even in some cities, some demon hunters who thought they were powerful had also done illegal things. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not sure what that person behind him was thinking about.

Seeing Zhang Tie stopping and watching those weapons in front of his booth, the demon hunter who sold his weapons became excited at once, "Our weapons are of top quality in Selnes Theatre of Operations. They all carry rune effects. Even it is the simplest rune effect, it is much more powerful than those common weapons. Take this longsword, for instance, the rune effect it carried is sharpness. Additionally, it is made of high-quality alloy. It's a rare treasure that we obtained on the move!"

The owner held a 1 m-long sharp long sword and exhibited it in front of Zhang Tie. It was indeed a very nice merchandise. It was classic and majestic. Together with its sheath, it didn't have too many decorations, however, it felt very stable and sharp.

Being interested in it, Zhang Tie looked it over. it was very heavy. Although it seemed to be only over 20 kg, it weighed at least 70 kg, which was proper for Zhang Tie. It was indeed made of a special material.

"How much?" Zhang Tie asked the owner.

"1,200 gold coins. Don't bargain!"

If it was a common elite sword with no rune effect, it was at most worth 200 gold coins. However, it carried with a rune effect. Additionally, its quality was higher than that of a common elite sword in all aspects. Therefore, its price rose from three digits to four digits.

"1,000 gold coins. I will take it away!" Zhang Tie gave a counter-offer.

After watching Zhang Tie for a few seconds, the owner replied, "Fine, I will make a contribution to the holy war. That's a deal, 1,000 gold coins!"

Zhang Tie took out of a gold check of 1,000 gold coins and gave it to the owner. The owner took it and checked it carefully before nodding towards Zhang Tie.

Although this price meant nothing for Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie knew it was not cheap as with it he could buy two Faerie Dragon super sports cars. 'My dad could not afford such a rune weapon without eighty or ninety years' salary.'

Taking the long sword, Zhang Tie directly hung it under his overclothes. After that, he continued to wander in the lane. The ring of awareness didn't send a warning anymore. However, Zhang Tie didn't recover his composure.

The raindrops fell on the sunshade above the lane, causing cracking sounds. Wind and drizzle leaked through the gap on the sunshade, making Zhang Tie feel cold.

The coldness didn't come from wind or rain, but from a looming killing intent in the wind and rain. If not for the ring of awareness, Zhang Tie might not be able to identify the killing intent inside the coldness.

Zhang Tie calmed down.

There were hundreds of people in the illegal market. Before the

fight, Zhang Tie didn't know who among these people were threatening him. Although he was wearing a mask and a suit of overclothes, his frame would remain unchanged. For one or a group of powerhouses or killers, as long as they could keep his frame in mind, they could recognize him even he was in a mask and a suit of overclothes.

Zhang Tie thought that someone had already noticed his trace since he rambled in the illegal demon hunters markets over the past one month. Therefore, the opponent just waited there for his arrival.

Those who lurked among demon hunters were all powerhouses. They could better hide in the crowd. Additionally, they could easily escape after the assassination.

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie felt that the illegal demon hunters market was filled with killing intent, causing him to tense up.

After failing to assassinate him with alchemist's bomb, especially knowing that he could kill LV 10 wing demons, the opponents would dispatch powerhouses above LV 11 for sure this time. Zhang Tie wouldn't find it strange even if they were great battle masters.

Although Zhang Tie looked relaxed, he was working out counter-measures anxiously. However, at this moment, a sound drifted into his ears from a booth in front of him.

"Alas, are you kidding me? It's just a "Robust Ox Skill". Don't waste my time. You can only cheat those guys below LV 6 with this. However, who would like to block his own way of cultivation only for improving one level. Buddy, this item was a bit valuable before the holy war; however, now even the average members of regular demon corps is LV 9, who will buy it..."

"Erm, if you want it, I will give you a discount, how about 10,000 gold coins?"

"Forget about that. This is a trap for those below LV 10. Anyone

who cultivates it will have a bad fortune."

"If it's complete, it's an emperor-level secret knowledge. Even if you don't cultivate it, you can also collect it!" the owner urged.

"Antiques are valuable in a flourishing age while gold is valuable in a chaotic age. Who'd like to collect and study this? In such a chaotic age, gold is the best!"

Saying that the man shook his head and left the booth.

As nobody was sure that he wanted "Robust Ox Skill" for sure, Zhang Tie could confirm that what happened in front of him wasn't a cheat or trap.

It was indeed a strange occurrence. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the extremely rustic secret knowledge "Robust Ox Skill", the incomplete "King Roc Sutra" which he had been striving for could appear together with the killing intent at the same time.

Chapter 583: Getting the Robust Ox Skill

Zhang Tie looked around and found that those people who wanted to assassinate him were very careful. He drew in a deep breath before walking in front of the booth at a medium-sized pace frequency.

Where he saw an item which looked similar to the 'Breaking Sun Sutra' of Lan Yunxi. It was a metal with beautiful patterns. The center of that piece of metal was a piece of black crystal which was circled by some Chinese characters "大力神牛功", which meant "Robust Ox Skill".

Having not imagined that the item that he had been seeking for over a month was right in front of him; thankfully, nobody liked to buy it. Zhang Tie's hand under his cloak started to quiver...

Beside that 'Robust Ox Skill' was a diamond-shaped crystal which was wrapped by the metal. At the sight of that item, Zhang Tie had known that it was a secret knowledge for sure. All the secret knowledge above LV 9 were as mysterious as this. Unless deliberate destruction, such a secret knowledge would remain unchanged for thousands of years.

Besides the two secret knowledge were some vials of medicament and medicinal powders.

Zhang Tie ignored the 'Robust Ox Skill'; instead, he directly took up another secret knowledge on its side and asked the owner.

"What's this?"

The owner also wore a black cloak and a mask.

"This is the secret knowledge 'Meteor Shower Sword'..."

"Meteor Shower Swordsmanship?"

"Right. This fighting skill comes from the eastern continent. You can cultivate it when you reach LV 10."

"Is there any requirements on surging points?"

"No. Additionally, you could trigger it using various battle qi. This sword's power will increase along with your level and realm. Although it could be cultivated by people at LV 10, it could exert a bigger effect when you reach the knight. That's its strength. It's told that some sword sages in the eastern continent immersed in such a swordsmanship for their whole lives. This swordsmanship is very profound and extensive."

The booth owner introduced the benefits of that swordsmanship to Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie seemed to be interested in it as he took it up and looked at it.

"Can I read it?"

"10 seconds available!"

Under the supervision of the owner, Zhang Tie injected a wisp of spiritual energy into the crystal when the golden Chinese characters "天雨流星剑", which meant "Meteor Shower Swordsmanship" appeared in his mind. After that, the golden characters gradually faded away as a long, classic Chinese sword appeared. At this moment, the owner had already reached out his hand and stopped Zhang Tie.

"How much?"

"200,000 gold coins!"

"Too expensive. Give me a discount!"

"This amount of money would be shared by a squad. Each of us could only get a small amount of it. Do you think it easy to get such a secret knowledge? If not risk our lives, we cannot get it!" the owner pretended to be pitiful.

"That's too expensive!" Zhang Tie shook his head as he pretended to leave.

"Fine, you say a price..." as it was hard to see such a rich

customer, how could the owner let Zhang Tie go so easily.

Zhang Tie stopped, "190,000 gold coins then. Hmm, plus this as a gift. I like to collect these items. It's about 10% off..."

Zhang Tie pointed at the 'Robust Ox Skill' which had not been sold yet and said in a calm voice.

The owner became hesitated for a short while as he seemed to calculate behind the mask. He then asked Zhang Tie, "Will you pay me cash?"

"Of course!"

"Which bank's gold check?"

"Golden Roc Bank!"

"Fine, 190,000 gold coins then. You can take the two items away!"

Zhang Tie directly took out 19 gold checks of Golden Roc Bank, the par value of each one was 10,000 gold coins and gave them to the owner. The owner counted and authenticated the gold checks adroitly before nodding towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie also nodded. Being extremely thrilled inside, he put the two secret knowledge inside his cloak; at the same time, he teleported them into Castle of Black Iron.

After the trade, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh inside at once.

"Who had imagined that I could obtain the incomplete version of an emperor-level secret knowledge so easily in an illegal market. I might be the only one who could recover 'Robust Ox Skill' to 'King Roc Sutra' in the world. In the process of recovery, even if I was in the trouble-reappearance situation, I might also die hundreds of times in order to light each surging point. This is the price of cultivating emperor-level secret knowledge."

"As to the 'Meteor Shower Swordsmanship', I can cultivate it when I'm free. If I'm busy, I will gift it to those junior sister apprentices in Hidden Dragon Island."

After obtaining the most important secret knowledge, Zhang Tie's concern was finally solved. His next step was to deal with the killing intent in the illegal market.

Zhang Tie kept wandering in the lane. At the same time, he paid attention to his surroundings. Zhang Tie felt the killing intent beside him was becoming icier. It seemed that they were going to launch an attack.

"What should I do?"

Each of the passers-by might be a killer. Zhang Tie became intense. If the enemy was going to launch a thunderbolt sneak attack towards him, he might suffer a great loss.

A raindrop fell from the sunshade onto Zhang Tie's face through its crevice.

Zhang Tie became slightly stunned as he raised his head. At the same time, a thought flashed across his mind, "F*ck, why would this father wait here for death? Even If they knew how I came here, I don't think they will know how I left."

Zhang Tie then burst out laughing, which startled those in the surroundings. In the next second, Zhang Tie sprung up from the ground as a sword qi shot out of his hand. After making a big hole on the steel sunshade, he jumped out of the hole immediately and disappeared in a split second.

As a result, the heavy rain was blown inside through the big hole, exposing the gloomy sky. All the demon hunters became stunned.

"What the hell! Is he a motherf*cking lunatic? How could he leave in such way? F*ck..." a demon hunter swore loudly after his clothes were splashed wet.

Under the mask, some became silent as they only felt a bit strange; while some turned ghastly pale.

The terrifying killing intent in the illegal market was solved by Zhang Tie in such an odd and abrupt way.

...

After one hour, Zhang Tie, being wet all over, returned to Base C. The moment he returned to Base C had he caught sight of Wang Cheng coming out of the building of the commission officers club along with some young commission officers of the airship troop. After staying in the sky for so many days, the moment they landed, had these commission officers relaxed themselves in the club by drinking, chatting and playing cards with friends.

Although there were some beautiful female waiters in the club, none of these young elites would waste time on them as they didn't want to be labeled as lascivious. Zhang Tie really admired those Chinese elites on this aspect.

At the sight of Zhang Tie who looked like a drowned rat, they were all amazed.

"Zhang Tie? What are you doing?"

"I have been angry lately, so I'm just running in the rain to cool down myself!" Zhang Tie joked.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Wang Cheng and the other commission officers burst out laughing at the same time. They didn't realize that Zhang Tie had just escaped from a dangerous situation just now.

After escaping out, Zhang Tie didn't report to the military of Volv City. Because it was useless. As long as those killers in the illegal market were not idiots, they would never expose their traces at all after Zhang Tie escaped successfully. They could only wander in the market and leave that demon hunters market with the others.

Those who could freely access to the demon hunters bar and the illegal market in Volv City would have no problem with their ID certificates. Three-eye Association was good at hiding their lackeys in human organizations. There was only one result—they could not catch anybody after great efforts. This might attract the

attention of demon hunting squads in Selnes Theater of Operations. If those demon hunting squads knew that it was caused by Zhang Tie, they would find him trouble. Those b*stards of Three-eye Association didn't mind setting him up by aggravating the complicated situation.

Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't tell them about what happened to him.

A mature man could hold many things in mind. Even if he had experienced great troubles, he would still look calm.

Only resentful men and small cynical figures would complain about their unfairness and wounds now and then.

The best way to deal with demons and Three-eye Association was to crack them down by powerful strength mercilessly.

After greeting Wang Cheng and the others, Zhang Tie returned to the Idiots. After taking a hot shower and changing to a suit of clean and comfortable clothes, he took out of his 'Robust Ox Skill' in the Captain's Room and started to immerse in the cultivation road after LV 9 according to the secret knowledge...

The emperor-level secret knowledge, although being incomplete, also shocked Zhang Tie greatly. It opened the gate of another world to Zhang Tie...

Chapter 584: Planting Golden Seed Rune in the Shrine

Through the experience in the illegal market, Zhang Tie knew that he had already become the most hated person in the eyes of Three-eye Association and demons. Therefore, he did not dare to become relaxed. After taking the incomplete 'King Roc Sutra', he started his cultivation during the rest of the airship troop.

Although the 'Robust Ox Skill' was the incomplete 'King Roc Sutra', it contained two aspects that Zhang Tie wanted the most to learn since the beginning: how to manifest those invisible surging points through his cultivation; how to light those invisible surging points.

The first step of cultivation was to manifest a golden rune——King Roc Seed Rune in his shrine according to the secret ritual procedure that combined spiritual energy with the battle qi in the 'King Roc Sutra'.

That was not an average rune, but a special seed being cultivated by Zhang Tie's powerful spiritual energy and battle qi. After visualizing that King Roc Seed Rune, he needed to visualize another 7-layer gold egg to wrap the King Roc Seed Rune like wrapping yolk.

This process did not sound complicated; however, it was just a beginning. After visualizing that gold egg, he needed to manifest 987 different classic runes, each of which looked as light as feather on special locations of the eggshell. Those runes had to cover the entire gold egg. By then, he would just accomplish the first step of cultivating the 'King Roc Sutra'——to plant gold seed in the shrine.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie didn't think that it was complicated. He thought he could accomplish it with his powerful spiritual energy very fast. However, when he started to manifest the King Roc Seed Rune in the shrine, Zhang Tie's face turned pale.

While sensing the mysterious awareness, the Shrine surging point seemed to become as vast as a palace. The King Roc Seed Rune was like a black hole that could engulf everything in this palace. Zhang Tie seemed to have a big fight each day during the past four days as he constantly mixed the spiritual energy in his mind and the battle qi in his body into that King Roc Seed Rune. Each time, Zhang Tie felt his strength was dried up.

On the evening of June 15th, after his strength was dried up once again, the King Roc Seed Rune in the Shrine surging point finally manifested itself while radiating golden light.

The moment the King Roc Seed Rune was planted, before Zhang Tie took a breath, had he found that the Shrine surging point and the 34 surging points on his spine started to rock like an earthquake. As a result, his body started to quiver all over. After vibrating 7 times consecutively, he finally recovered his composure.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie became startled.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, you've accomplished the manifestation of King Roc Seed Rune. You could treat the rock as the welcome ceremony of the King Roc Seed Rune to you!" Heller's voice drifted into Zhang Tie's mind.

"Will other cultivation methods have the same effect?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"The surging points will vibrate 7 times. This is the feature of the emperor-level secret knowledge's seed rune when it manifests in the Shrine. As to the other seed runes, when the seed rune was manifested in the Shrine, surging points of throne-level secret knowledge would vibrate 6 times; surging points of the duke-level secret knowledge would vibrate 5 times. Similarly, the surging points of the lowest baron-level secret knowledge would vibrate one time."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie remembered that Lan

Yunxi had talked about this when she explained how to divide levels of secret knowledge on cultivation to him. He remembered that when he asked her how to distinguish it when someone fabricated high-end secret knowledge with low-end secret knowledge, Lan Yunxi replied with a smile and said that it was impossible. When the seed rune was manifested, the level of secret knowledge would be clearly distinguished.

Zhang Tie finally understood it.

"Heller, what's wrong with this seed rune? Why did it take me so long to manifest? I remember that Lan Yunxi said this step only took 1-2 days in 'Breaking Sun Sutra'. Additionally, it really consumed too much energy. It took me so long time to accomplish it although my spiritual energy and battle qi was many times more than that of commoners. If others want to manifest this King Roc Seed Rune, it will take them several months!"

"Right, Castle Lord, your speed is really fast. It's already many times faster than that of commoners!"

"What's the reason?"

"Of course, the foundation of a skyscraper and that of common buildings consume different materials in construction, neither the construction time are the same. A baby elephant and a baby rat require different nutrients. Am I clear?" Heller explained to Zhang Tie very patiently, "Even if it was the simplest first step, how could that of an emperor-level secret knowledge be as same as that of other secret knowledge?"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie finally understood it. He then thought about another shocking question.

"987 runes need to be manifested on the golden egg through visualization. Will it take me 4-5 days to manifest each rune?"

If it took him the same efforts as he spent on the seed rune to manifest about 1000 runes, Zhang Tie would cry as it would take

him 10 years to accomplish this step. That was too frightening!

Thankfully, after hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie became relieved at once.

"The runes on the gold egg would consume lesser spiritual energy and battle qi. Based on your ability, you could manifest about 10 runes in one day!"

"According to you, it will take me about 100 days to plant the gold seed in the Shrine of 'King Roc Sutra' right?"

For Zhang Tie who had been used to enjoy the benefit of fast cultivation, he felt 3 months was too long for him to accomplish the first step of 'King Roc Sutra'.

"For the emperor-level secret knowledge, if you can complete the foundation in 100 days, it's already very fast. It will take others above 1 year to complete this!"

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. When he thought about those people who could only promote one level after hard efforts with this secret knowledge, he felt an inner balance at once. No matter what, he was already a lucky dog. If others knew that he was qualified to cultivate a complete emperor-level secret knowledge, they would drown him with saliva at once. Numerous people were dreaming for this opportunity at any cost. However, he was complaining about the long term which was required to lay the foundation.

"Fine, 100 days. It's just a bit longer than 3 months. The road of cultivation really needs to be paved one step by another!"

"Hope you can think in this way; When you could light those surging points, those leakless fruits on the small tree would work. Benefited from that, you would promote to LV 10 very fast!"

"When you reach LV 10, you need to seek for the correct route through constant attempts in the trouble-reappearance situation!"

"This is the only method!"

"Heller, I feel that you know the complete King Roc Sutra." Zhang Tie suddenly aroused his question.

Heller became silent for a few seconds...

"I truly know something. I have knowledge on some contents of the 'King Roc Sutra', however, being different than what you think, I know that this road of cultivation is the best for you. I know what the 'King Roc Sutra' might bring to you in the future; however, I don't know the concrete cultivation method of King Roc Sutra!"

"Aww, what will 'King Roc Sutra' bring me in the future?"

"Power and freedom!"

Although Heller's reply was obscure, Zhang Tie's heart still raced. Because this was Heller's comment. After being familiar with Heller for so long, Zhang Tie had not heard him describing someone or something with power and freedom.

Therefore, if Heller said power, it must be power; if Heller said freedom, it must be freedom.

Zhang Tie started to dream about the bright future.

On June 16th, after 4 days of rest, the airship troop of Jinyun Country left Base C in Volv City once again and headed for the northern frontline.

During the past 4 days, an airship troop of over 100 airships lost contact with the outside world. Although it was not confirmed, everyone knew that this airship troop must have been annihilated.

Before setting off, Zhang Tie attended another conference hosted by Lan Yunxi. In the conference, Lan Yunxi drew a circle in the northwest of an amplified flight chart in Selnes Theater of Operations using her baton.

"According to intelligence, there is always a corps of over 300,000 demonized puppets in the region Misty Moon Woods. As this

region is covered with dense woods and valleys, we couldn't find the demonized puppets corps. Our mission is to find that demonized puppets corps while dodging from the disturbance of wing demons and give them a fierce blow. Closely after that, the ground elite troop will enter the Misty Moon Woods and turn this region in a defense line so as to restrict demons' power for a long time. This is a very important move. Our performance will determine this move. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" everyone replied in unison.

More people moved their eyes on Zhang Tie. In the entire airship troop of Jinyun Country, the one who could probably find the location of that demonized puppets corps in the shortest period must be Zhang Tie.

Such a mission was delivered to the airship troop of Jinyun Country probably because the big figures appreciated Zhang Tie's excellent talent in the air. All the attendants at present reached an agreement inside.

"I will find the location of those demonized puppets corps!" facing their looks, Zhang Tie replied calmly.

Lan Yunxi threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie, "Be careful!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "I will!"

...

Chapter 585: Misty Moon Woods

As it was raining, the glider suffered a heavy resistance in the sky. Zhang Tie could obviously feel that the glider slowed down. Additionally, it was harder for him to find an ascending thermal air flow. Zhang Tie could only use the elevating force provided by the main wing of the glider to offset the influence of rain drops and the downward cold air.

Unless Zhang Tie drove the glider away from this region, he could not violate physical rules to keep his glider hovering in this region without any driving power.

Actually, it was already a marvel for Zhang Tie to stay above the Misty Moon Woods for over 7 hours in such a weather. The other glider drivers could not even fly off their gliders in such a weather. Even if they could fly off, they could only stay for a short period in the sky. However, Zhang Tie almost stayed an entire daytime in the sky with that WindTalker.

In the past 7 hours, Zhang Tie unavoidably declined from 15,000 m to 1,000 m or so. Additionally, it was very difficult for him to elevate again.

It was not heavily raining. However, the mist above the Misty Moon Woods became denser. Sitting on the glider, Zhang Tie inclined his head and watched the mist below the glider. Feeling like flying above the cloud sea of the stratosphere, Zhang Tie could see nothing.

In order to prevent rain from coming in, the protective cover above the cockpit was closed. The rain drops soon slid off the protective cover. However, due to the difference in temperature, the protective cover was always covered with a layer of fine mist. As a result, the visibility in the cockpit became poorer.

In only a few minutes, the glider had declined another 100 m. Using his instinct, Zhang Tie caught two sparse topographic

elevating air flows to slightly elevate the glider. However, in the irresistible weather, the glider gradually declined like being pressed by an invisible hand.

"Sh*t!" Zhang Tie swore inside.

It was the 5th day since Zhang Tie arrived at the Misty Moon Woods. In this period, even though Zhang Tie had checked all over the Misty Moon Woods once, he still could not find the hiding place of those demonized puppets corps.

The name Misty Moon Woods had two reasons: this place was covered with dense fog all the year round; there were vacant woods below. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't have any achievement.

As long as human scouts dispatched by the allied human forces entered this place, they would disappear. As a result, they could only lay hope to air reconnaissance.

In a good weather, such a method might work; however, when in rainy days, this method's effect would undoubtedly be sharply reduced.

It was already a big test for people to execute tasks with gliders in such a bad weather, not to mention that the heavy rain made the fog denser, causing a poorer visibility.

Besides Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi also dispatched some airships to coordinate him for the reconnaissance; however, they made no achievements, either.

The longer the airship troop of Jinyun Country stayed here, the more possible it would be for them to get exposed to wing demons. Everyone knew it clearly.

It was a misty sea below. At the sight of a hillside in front of him, Zhang Tie considered two seconds before gritting his teeth and diving towards that hillside while pressing down his rudder.

As he didn't have any clue, plus the bad weather today, it was even more difficult for him to return to the base. Therefore, Zhang

Tie made a decision and prepared to land the glider on this hillside. He planned to take a look down there. If the weather became better tomorrow, he would fly off based on the terrain of the hillside.

The glider declined rapidly by hovering in the sky. Under Zhang Tie's manipulation, the glider became more flexible. Additionally, even if it was hovering there, its head was still facing sharply downward. Even if it was those trump-card glider drivers, very few of them would dare to descend in this way. In only half a minute, the glider had already been close to the ground.

When the glider's head was going to touch the ground, with the faint elevating air flow on the hillside, Zhang Tie raised the head of the glider rapidly. With a slight shock, the body of the glider leveled up at once. After rushing dozens of meters ahead, Zhang Tie instantly stretched his feet out of the bottom of the cockpit. After running a few meters on the grassland had he stopped the glider steadily.

After putting down the glider, Zhang Tie opened the protective cover of the cockpit and jumped out of it. In the rain, he closed the protective cover once again. After that, he carried that glider and ran towards the woods on the hillside.

The glider which weighed less than one ton was almost like a weapon in Zhang Tie's hand. Carrying the glider, Zhang Tie ran over there without leaving any trace on the ground.

After entering the woods, Zhang Tie found a covert bush. After briefly cleaning it, Zhang Tie hid the glider in the bush. After that, he took out his dagger and chopped off some twigs to cover it.

After hiding it in such a way, a person being dozen meters away could not find such a glider at all, unless he came here and moved away the twigs.

Additionally, nobody could imagine that there was a glider in the wild.

After doing this, Zhang Tie's clothes were almost wet all over. He took the six javelins from the armrack outside the cockpit and carried them on his back. After that, he arranged two trace systems around the glider before leaving this place rapidly.

Twenty minutes later, the rain grew heavier while it became colder.

Zhang Tie found a mountain cave in the valley over 10 km away from the glider. After a brief investigation, he found nobody in this cave. He then drilled into the cave.

The mouth of this cave was not big; thankfully, the cave was deep and a bit twisting. There were some trees below the mouth of the cave while some withered leaves and twigs were lying down there, some of which were not wet; Zhang Tie collected some dry twigs and leaves and set a fire at a mysterious location in the cave.

The entire cave warmed up at once.

After having a pee behind a big tree at the mouth of the cave, Zhang Tie returned to the cave. He then drank two mouths of all-purpose medicament to supplement his energy. After that, he took out a piece of dried meat from Castle of Black Iron and baked it over the fire. As he gradually warmed up, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh.

When the alluring aroma drifted from the piece of dried meat, the rain water in his clothes started to steam. After eating the food, he got some water from Castle of Black Iron and drank it. Gradually, his clothes were dried. Zhang Tie then sat behind a huge rock at the mouth of the mountain cave and started to stare blankly at the rain scene in the valley.

Many familiar faces appeared in Zhang Tie's mind. After several months, Zhang Tie started to miss them, especially Linda, Fiona and Beverly. The moment he thought of his babies who were going to be delivered by the three women had he have an exotic and complex feeling.

Honestly, Zhang Tie had not been ready to be a father until now. However, he also knew that when he was ready to be a father, the relationship between him and the three women might not remain the same as of now.

The greatest effect of the babies was to turn the status of the three woman as his women and lovers into his wives. After such a relationship was set, it would remain unchanged no matter how far and long it was.

Sometimes people could not just live for themselves. You'd better treasure someone when it was necessary. Do not let those who deserve your cherish be the passers-by in your life; instead, they should be the scene, benefactor in your life and a part of your life. When you could see them everywhere in your life, your life would be fulfilled.

This was what his mother told him when Zhang Tie entered the No. 7 National Male Middle School in Blackhot City. Zhang Tie always kept it in mind.

I wonder when could I go to the eastern continent, how old the three little guys would be when I see them and whether they could call me dad or not. Plus three more grandsons, mom could open a kindergarten now...

When he thought of his mom being surrounded and pushed by many little kids to run, Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

After staying there for a short while, Zhang Tie shook his head to clean those romantic scenes from his mind. After that, he took out a map and found his location on it. He then frowned.

This reconnaissance region was not selected casually. Zhang Tie selected it after several days of reconnaissance as he thought it probably hid the demonized puppets corps. The bad weather and the dense fog greatly weakened the effect of reconnaissance. Watching the map, Zhang Tie made marks on the grids of the map. He prepared to take a look at those places on the map where he

marked when the rain became lighter.

The target that could not be noticed from the sky would be very remarkable on the ground. Even If there was indeed the demonized puppets corps in these places, Zhang Tie didn't believe that he could find hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets.

Zhang Tie started to cultivate in the mountain cave as he waited for the rain to become lighter.

It kept raining over night...

Chapter 586: Locking the Target

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

When it was raining overnight, Zhang Tie kept cultivating until midnight in the mountain cave. Finally, he visualized and manifested the last layer of the shell of that 7-layer gold egg with his spiritual energy and battle qi. This indicated that he had accomplished the second step of planting the gold seed rune of "King Roc Sutra". What he needed to do then was to visualize and manifest 987 special runes on the shell of the golden egg.

Zhang Tie found that the number of surge points in his body and the special runes that he needed to visualize were both 987. He knew that there must be some mysterious connection between the two aspects although he didn't know why.

If Zhang Tie couldn't understand something, he would drop it. Like the moon always being round, somethings weren't worth consideration. What is rational is actual and what is actual is rational. Therefore, Zhang Tie would not concern himself with it at all.

Compared to these illusory concerns, those concerns that he needed to face and those which could influence the fate of himself and his relatives and friends counted most.

After one night, the spiritual energy and battle qi that he had consumed had completely recovered the next morning after Zhang Tie drank some mouths\fuls of all-purpose medicament.

If not necessary, Zhang Tie would not exhibit the special ability that was gifted by the Castle of Black Iron in such a shocking way. Therefore, even if he could put away the glider in the Castle of Black Iron, he would not do that at the risk of exposing the secret of Castle of Black Iron.

At this moment, Zhang Tie could only use the Castle of Black Iron as a portable wallet or kettle so that he could take out some

gold checks or transfer two mouthfuls of spring water or all-purpose medicament into his mouth. It was no longer necessary for him to disguise as a damn priest like what he did in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Neither would he do that.

Some pits on the stones outside the mountain cave were filled with rainwater after one night's heavy rain. Zhang Tie found two water willows outside the mountain cave. After fetching two water willow twigs, he added some salt in one pit and mix it with the rainwater using the water willow twigs. After that, he started to clean his teeth.

After doing this, he ate two pieces of dried pies and put on a camouflage raincoat. After that, he cleaned all the traces in the mountain cave and left.

It was sunny today. Soon after he left the mountain cave he saw a fiery sun rising up.

Zhang Tie quickly ran through the woods and sought for those dubious regions that he marked on the map.

...

At noon, Zhang Tie stopped on one side of a river which passed through the Misty Moon Woods. Because of the heavy rain, the water level had risen too much today. Squatting by the riverside, Zhang Tie watched a corpse with a gloomy look which was flushed onto the rubble of the river rapids by the surging river.

That male corpse wore a set of shabby commoner's clothes. Given its skin, it hadn't stayed in the water too long as it was not bloated yet. However, the corpse was a bit terrifying because its half head and neck were gone as if having been gnawed by some animal. After being soaked in water, the exposed wounds made Zhang Tie uncomfortable.

As it was sunny today, the corpse started to release a stench.

Zhang Tie checked those wounds carefully while enduring the

disgusting stink.

Besides wild animals, demonized puppets could also cause similar wounds. However, as the teeth structure of demonized puppets was different than that of wild beasts, they would cause different wounds. After being gnawed by humans, grinding marks were usually seen. In contrast, after being gnawed by wild beasts, there were always marks caused by penetrative and forceful dragging of sharp teeth on the wounds.

After observing it carefully, Zhang Tie made a conclusion—the wounds of this corpse were not caused by wild beasts but demonized puppets.

After making such a conclusion, Zhang Tie was excited. After looking at the upper reach of the river, he ran towards the upper reach along the riverside. On the way, he saw odd-looking rocks and towering trees everywhere. There were also many cliffs that could not be easily passed by commoners. Thankfully, Zhang Tie was agile and passed by them all the way along the riverside.

After 2 hours, Zhang Tie had already walked over 70 km towards the upper reach of the river. However, he found no target. Therefore, Zhang Tie frowned. If hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets were hiding here, they would definitely leave some clues.

When he was doubting his judgment, he heard a sound "Duo...duo...". Raising his head, he found a that woodpecker was knocking at the trunk of a big tree.

At the sight of the bird, a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. He heavily patted his forehead, 'Idiot, you forgot that you're a powerful animal controller. You're in the woods. How could you be troubled by such a small problem.'

Zhang Tie then connected his spiritual energy with that All-spirits Tower in his mind while sending a message towards that woodpecker. The woodpecker immediately stopped its movement

as he turned around and watched Zhang Tie who was standing under the tree.

Zhang Tie stretched out a hand. The woodpecker then flew off the tree while flapping its wings and lightly landed on his hand. At the same time, it uttered, "Gulugulu". It seemed that it was curious as to why Zhang Tie could communicate with it.

Woodpecker was a common LV 0 living being. Coincidentally, there was one Great Wild Seal on the first floor of the All-spirits Tower which could work on LV 0 living being. That was a "Rest" seal that Zhang Tie produced at the beginning. It could not match seals in the "Defense" sect on controlling living being. It was mainly used to protect and drive creatures away, instead of controlling them. However, seals in "Rest" sect also had a benefit, namely, as long as this seal was applied on the creature, it would not suffer any harm from the others at the same level in a very long time. Additionally, animal controllers could control this animal in a short period with it.

With this "Rest" seal, Zhang Tie could control the woodpecker for 12 hours. Although it was not as powerful as the seals in "Controlling" sect which could allow the animal to be loyal to the controller for the rest of its life, Zhang Tie thought 12 hours were enough for him.

Additionally, it was wasteful if he didn't use the great wild seal on the first floor of All-spirits Tower at this moment.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he fondled the head of the woodpecker and applied the "Rest" seal into its body. Closely after that, Zhang Tie felt that he had established a close relationship with the woodpecker.

"Take me to the most populated place you've seen!" Zhang Tie sent an order to that woodpecker. After that, he raised his arm, sending that woodpecker flying in the air. After hovering above Zhang Tie's head for two circles, it flew towards a direction.

Zhang Tie hurriedly followed after. After each distance, the woodpecker would rest on the twig and look back at Zhang Tie. When Zhang Tie drew closer, it kept flying forward.

The woodpecker, whose nickname was woods' doctor, had a very wide range of movement. If this woodpecker had indeed met a lot of people, Zhang Tie believed in that it could take him there sooner or later.

After flying through the dense woods one hour later, the woodpecker reached above a misty valley and kept hovering there. Zhang Tie realized that it must have seen a lot of people here. Additionally, something terrifying must be hiding here.

"You can go now, you're free..." Zhang Tie sent another order to the woodpecker. The woodpecker then flew towards another direction while flapping its wings.

Zhang Tie silently lay behind a huge rock and a patch of brushwood while watching this valley.

Even if it was a sunny day, the valley was still covered with a dense fog. Additionally, many places in the valley were covered by the towering, flourish trees on both sides of the hillside.

Zhang Tie took out the map and checked it carefully. He found this place was rightly in the dubious region of Misty Moon Woods that he marked on the map. He had passed here by glider several days ago. However, he could see nothing at all from the sky.

Due to the dense fog, even if it was on the ground, his visible distance was also limited to 100 m. Those outside 100 m were all buried in the dense fog.

"Is the demonized puppets corps hiding here?"

When this doubt flashed across his mind, Zhang Tie changed his face. At this moment, a gust of wind blew over, causing the dense fog rolling in the valley. Zhang Tie then smelt a faint bloody smell in the wind.

Zhang Tie immediately took two javelins from his back as he silently fumbled towards the source of the bloody smell.

There was a huge mountain cave leading to the hinterland of the mountain in a hidden place below the valley. The bloody smell came from that mountain cave, where Zhang Tie saw a squad of patrolling demonized puppets...

'There you are!' Zhang Tie became thrilled while some questions came to his mind, 'Why would those demonized puppets hide here? What the hell are they doing there...'

Zhang Tie lay about 100 m away from that mountain cave.

Suddenly, a turmoil drifted from the entrance of the mountain cave. With wails and cries, some people were taken out. After that, Zhang Tie heard someone sneer, "Do you want to escape? Do you think you can escape?"

"Please, let us go, we dare not do that anymore!"

"Now that you don't want to work, just be the food of sacred worms, eat them..." the man said mercilessly.

A lot of demonized puppets instantly charged at those people while uttering weird sounds. Closely after that, Zhang Tie heard disgusting sounds and miserable shrieks, causing goosebumps all over his body.

Chapter 587: The Reappearance of the Hell

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

Zhang Tie lay there without moving for 5-6 hours. He waited until it was completely dark then darted towards the entrance of the mountain cave.

In the dark, he could better use his dark vision. By contrast, as demonized puppets had almost the same vision as commoners, their vision would be greatly weakened in the dark. Therefore, Zhang Tie would have a chance to sneak into the mountain cave.

When the tragedy happened in the daytime, Zhang Tie also thought about saving those people, however, he couldn't make it. In that case, he would expose himself for sure if he killed those lackeys of demonized puppets. If so, he might lose his own life.

Zhang Tie applied a hiding skill and a rapid movement skill to himself. Under the blessing of the two rune effects, Zhang Tie moved like a waft of smoke in the dark. He flashed by over 100 m in a blink and reached less than 15 m away from the entrance of the mountain cave.

Zhang Tie hid in the crown of a big tree. After that, he picked up a small stone and threw it towards one side. The stone fell in the brushwood dozens of meters away, causing some sounds.

The demonized puppets at the entrance were very alert. The moment they heard the sound from over there, all the demonized puppets watched over there. With the blurry, low roars of the head of those demonized puppets, a squad of demonized puppets ran towards the source of the sound.

Seizing this chance, Zhang Tie instantly slid off the tree and sneaked into the mountain cave along the shadowy places near the entrance of the mountain cave.

These demonized puppets had poor fighting strength which couldn't defeat Zhang Tie. However, demonized puppets were

controlled by puppet worms. As long as a demonized puppet was killed by Zhang Tie, the parent worm of the demonized puppets would sense it for sure and respond.

On the battlefield, demonized puppets were almost the best sentries. Demon corps being surrounded by demonized puppets corps had no history of being raided by human corps in the 2nd Holy War. Of course, Zhang Tie would not like to disturb the sentries.

After hearing that miserable shrieks of humans in the daytime, Zhang Tie was a bit shocked. He hadn't imagined that humans could cooperate with demons at this moment. Besides demonized puppets corps, it seemed that many humans were hiding inside this cave. Zhang Tie had to figure it out. After seeing those people in the daytime, Zhang Tie felt that these demonized puppets corps were here for some special purpose. There was a negligence about the intelligence of this place from the human alliance command.

The moment he entered the cave, Zhang Tie felt like vomiting. The stink was like that in the slaughterhouse and the cesspool which had not been cleaned for dozens of years. Even the most disgusting smell that you could imagine could not match this.

Bearing his discomfort, Zhang Tie rapidly sneaked into the cave while dodging the places where might expose himself.

This cave was a natural huge karst cave. The deeper he entered, the broader it would be in the underground space. He found many newly-excavated traces in the cave. This made Zhang Tie more suspicious——what are the demons excavating here?

In the pitch-dark cave, in each distance, there would be a fluorescent lamp or a natural rough fluorescent stone on both sides of the cave, which provided dim light in the dark cave.

Near these fluorescent lamps and rough fluorescent stones were always squads of patrolling demonized puppets. Wherever he passed by these places he would find a chance to rapidly pass by

them or temporarily distract them by using the same trick that he had used at the entrance of the cave just now before passing by quickly.

As demonized puppets had low intelligence, this trick never failed.

On the way, what shocked Zhang Tie were those piles of stinky human bones. The deeper he entered the cave, the more bones would he see. One time, Zhang Tie saw tens of thousands of human bones fill a pit which was about half the size of a football field in the underground cave. The pit sent out a heavy stink while numerous mice with bloody eyes were accessing the bones and gnawing the rotten meat on the bones. Some of them burrowed in the bones and skulls to suck essence in the marrow.

When the mice ate, they made sounds "Ka...ka...ka...". Like numerous people walking on the sand road, it caused goosebumps all over Zhang Tie's body.

The scene was like the reappearance of hell.

After experiencing numerous cruel scenes, Zhang Tie, who thought he had been very powerful inside, turned pale abruptly the moment he saw this. At the same time, he felt like vomiting.

Zhang Tie preferred to have not seen such a scene. The miserable terror and nausea could never be described in language.

Zhang Tie then sped up and left the terrifying scene behind.

Recalling the scene that he saw in the daytime, Zhang Tie immediately understood that those bones and skulls were left by the demons.

Meanwhile, Zhang Tie understood why hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets could not be found after entering the Misty Moon Woods. Because those b*stards were hiding underground. When they were hungry, they would eat those human captives.

A fury flame burned in Zhang Tie's mind. It was not a holy war

for humans at all. It was just a choice that humans had to make when they were pushed at the extremely cruel situation—to be demons' food or to survive. If they wanted to survive, they could only fight. They could only crush demons into pieces, burn them into ashes, bury them in the soil and stomp on it. That's the holy war of humans!

Although Zhang Tie couldn't wait to chop off the heads of all the demon b*stards in front of him, he became calmer inside. Those demons must have their reasons for being here.

Zhang Tie continued deep into the cave.

After entering about 4-5 km, Zhang Tie felt the underground temperature started to gradually rise. Finally, at the exit of that cave, Zhang Tie saw a vast underground space.

Zhang Tie then slipped out of that exit like a shadow. Closely after that, he found a relatively higher position near the exit and hid behind a pile of stalactites.

In front of Zhang Tie was an underground space dozens of square kilometers. Some fiery lava rivers slowly flew across the underground space. In a place 7-8 km away, Zhang Tie saw lava flowing off from hundreds of meters high.

Due to the relationship between these lava rivers and that lava waterfall, this underground space was shrouded in a dim red light like apocalypse dusk.

A huge military camp was erected in the middle of this underground space. The surroundings of this underground space were like a huge underground construction site. Zhang Tie saw hundreds of thousands of people in shabby clothes busy working like diligent ants and constantly excavating and digging something. At the same time, those grim demonized puppets with bloody eyes were patrolling everywhere in squads and monitoring those people's work. Some of them were even swearing loudly in human language as they constantly whipped those laborers with

knouts ferociously.

Not far from Zhang Tie, a skinny man was carrying a rock which weighed about dozens of kg as he stumbled and trembled. Suddenly, a steel whip flew from afar like how a poisonous snake spat out its tongue and struck heavily on that man's shoulder.

The man uttered a miserable shriek as the rock slid off his hand and fell to the ground.

When the second whip struck on him, the man instantly charged at the stone like crazily and wanted to lift it up once again.

As new wounds were caused on his back, he felt extremely painful. His hands started to tremble, causing the stone fall down once again.

"Crap..." that man who waved the steel whip swore.

"No...no...I'm not crap. I can, I can continue to work..." the man shouted loudly as he struggled to lift up the rock once again.

However, the 3rd whip directly broke his wrist. This time, the man became despaired to lift the stone.

"Please...please give me one chance...give me once chance..." the man exclaimed.

"Don't worry. You're still useful!" the guy who held the steel whip sneered as he waved his hands. Some demonized puppets with bloody eyes instantly rushed towards that man and dragged him away by catching his feet...

"Ah...no,...no..." shrill shrieks sounded.

Under the gaze of the onlookers, that man was dragged to a nearby place. Closely after that more and more demonized puppets ran over here and surrounded that man. They then started to gnaw his flesh and drink his blood like how a herd of wild beasts caught a prey. The miserable shrieks were instantly covered by the sounds that the demonized puppets gnawed the man's flesh and bones.

At the sight of this scene, all the onlookers couldn't stand to quiver all over. Some had already been completely numb about that. They just lowered their heads and continued to work while suffering the steel whips...

...

Right then, a person stealthily climbed to the front of Zhang Tie while keeping his body close to the ground. Feeling something, he raised his head and showed a swarthy face. The moment he saw Zhang Tie's eyes, he revealed a terrified look. He immediately opened his mouth. Before he uttered any voice, his mouth had been covered by Zhang Tie's hand. Zhang Tie then dragged him to the back of the stalactites.

"Shut up if you want to survive..." Zhang Tie whispered to him.

Chapter 588: Demons' Scheme

Zhang Tie soon knew a lot of information from that person. His name was Rawls, a member of Titanic Duchy. After the demonized puppet corps occupied the Titanic Duchy, they captured him. Together with many people, he was taken here by a demonized puppet corps and became the slave laborer and food of the demonized puppets.

After being captured by demons, these humans suffered a miserable treatment. They had to work hard over 10 hours a day. Those emaciated or wounded people who couldn't work anymore were immediately eaten by demonized puppets.

"What is your main job here?" Zhang Tie posed his greatest concern.

"Our captives are mainly used to break through the underground tunnels over here. There are two tunnels here, one towards the north, the other towards the south. The tunnel towards the north had been broken through; it links the demons' occupied zone. The tunnel towards south had also been broken through dozens of kilometers!" Rawls answered.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he immediately understood the mission of this demonized puppets corps here.

Because of the advantage of human airship troop in the sky and the threat of alchemist's bombs, demons planned to break through an underground tunnel towards Selnes Plain. As long as the demon corps appeared in the back of the Selnes defense line of humans, the entire human defense line would collapse at once.

This was not the only method that demons used in Selnes Theater of Operations; however, it was the most worthwhile method. For demons, they only needed to put in a demonized puppets corps and some human captives here so as to implement this plan. This was not a big cost for demons; however, as long as it

succeeded, it would help them a lot.

"How many demonized puppets are here?"

"About 300,000."

"How about the number of human captives?"

"About 100,000. Every once in a while, they would transport here some more human captives from the north tunnel as the supply of food and labor work for demons."

The moment he heard Rawls' words had Zhang Tie known that the alliance command's judgement about Misty Moon Woods was not precise. Those hiding in the Misty Moon Woods were not only over 300,000 demonized puppets, but also the constant supply of human captives being transported here from the demons' occupied zone. The underground space where Zhang Tie was in had become an underground interchange station for demons to implement this plan.

"This information is very important. I have to notice the alliance command about this. We have to stop demons from implementing this plan."

"Who are those people who cooperate with demonized puppets?"

Speaking of those people, Rawls revealed a hateful look, "They are lackeys of Three-eye Association. After demons occupied Titanic Duchy, the lackeys of Three-eye Association started to cooperate with demons to manage the demons' occupied zone. Under the ruling of these lackeys of Three-eye Association, some people had sworn to be loyal to Three-eye Association in order to survive themselves!"

"What's the current situation of the demons' occupied zone?"

"It's very complex. Demons are exerting out very brutal rule in the demons' occupied zone. Meanwhile, they have started to divide humans into different classes in the demons' occupied zone. Those who don't follow their orders will be converted into demonized

puppets; some of them are deteriorated into demons' slaves and live a very miserable life. All the human clans that are affiliated with Three-eye Association in the demons' occupied zone became the agents of demons in that region and treat themselves as nobles. All the people who would like to be loyal to Three-eye Association would gain a certain social status; additionally, their lives and right of property would be guaranteed. They could also have many human slaves and demonized puppets as their subordinates!"

Zhang Tie was really shocked by this information. He thought that the demons in their occupied zone would burn everything into ashes like what they did to humans in the 2nd holy war; he had not imagined that the demons became smarter this time as they started to collapse humans from the inside and implement a new ruling strategy. With such a ruling strategy, demons' occupied zone would constantly provide supports for demons' corps. In the future, humans might even fight each other on the battlefield.

This holy war might sustain over 100 years. This preparation of demons indicated that they were going to fight demons for a long time.

"Do you have food?" Seeing Zhang Tie thinking about something, Rawls forcefully swallowed his saliva as he watched Zhang Tie with a craving look.

Zhang Tie then pass his two pieces of dried rations and kettle to him, "What do those human captives eat here?"

The moment he saw the dried rations and the kettle had Rawls grabbed it and started to engulf it. At the same time, he replied Zhang Tie with a blurry voice, "There are fiery mushroom and ferns underground...we...eat them...and some...insects and mice...but we can rarely find them now... those demons force...us...to eat humans...some people couldn't stand it...and directly committed suicide in the lava...this happens everyday...I've not eaten human flesh...I want to escape...my wife and kids are here...I have to find a way for them to escape..."

Zhang Tie became silent as he sighed mournfully for those human captives inside. Since they came here, these human captives had been doomed to die here. Few of them could bear such a sheer terror.

"Are... human troops going...going to save us?" Rawls asked Zhang Tie as he kept eating the dried rations.

Watching Rawls' miserable and hopeful look, Zhang Tie felt bashful to tell him that he was alone here.

After realizing Zhang Tie's meaning of being silent, Rawls stopped his movements at once as he stared at Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded look, "Are...are you alone?"

"Yes, I'm alone here!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

Rawls faintly opened his mouth as the hope in his look faded away at once. 2/3 of his dried rations were still left. After forcefully swallowing his saliva twice, he carefully wrapped them with paper.

"I want...want to find a way to leave out of here...and take my wife and kids away!" he told Zhang Tie.

"You cannot. There are demonized puppets squads patrolling in many key locations from here to the entrance. It's possible if you have the strength and responsive speed of LV 9 fighters. If you just fumble towards the entrance in this way, you could only be the food of those demonized puppets. Even It took me some time to enter here."

Zhang Tie felt he would be unable to take Rawls away from this mountain cave without arousing the attention of those demonized puppets. As long as those demonized puppets patrolling in the cave found them, a great number of demonized puppets would enter the cave and besiege them. In that case, Zhang Tie could not ensure Rawls' safety.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Rawls threw himself onto the ground like he lost all his strength at once.

"Do you have family members here?"

"Yes. My wife and a daughter..." Rawls started to sob in a low voice as he seized his hair with hands, "I cannot watch them eating human flesh...I cannot stand watching them being eaten by others...fewer fiery mushroom and ferns could be found underground now...in this case...they...they..."

Rawls couldn't utter any word as Zhang Tie's heart raced. At this moment, he only wanted to find the location of this demonized puppets corps, he had already accomplished his mission. If so, he could leave at any time.

However, watching the hopeless look of this man in front of him as a husband and a father and thinking of those human bones and the hell-like situation of those human captives, Zhang Tie started to feel mournful about them.

Perhaps he would also soon be a father; therefore, Zhang Tie had a deep comprehension on the role and responsibilities of men. If a father could not change the hell-like situation facing his wife and kid, he would be driven mad by the hopelessness.

Zhang Tie gritted his teeth, "Damn, whatever..."

Zhang Tie put his hand on Rawls' shoulder as he whispered, "Where are you wife and daughter? Can you bring them here?"

Rawls raised his head and watched Zhang Tie with a confused look, "What do you want?"

"I might take you out of here!"

"Really?" Rawls almost sprung up from the ground. Zhang Tie hurriedly pressed him down as he put his finger on his mouth to stop him. After that, Zhang Tie looked at those demonized puppets and the lackeys of Three-eye Association in the distance, "Thankfully, they didn't find us."

"I can take you to another place. It's a bit special. After entering it, you might not come out of it!"

"Ah? Did you find another hidden underground space here?" Rawls asked with an amazing look as his eyes glittered again.

"Almost like that!" Zhang Tie replied briefly, "That place is like this underground space, but its larger than this one. It's relatively close. However, you can have sufficient food and a good living environment there. What's more, demons cannot reach there. Would you like to go there?"

"I would...I would..." Rawls hurriedly nodded, "As long as we don't become wild beasts or become the food of those wild beasts and demons, we can do everything for you."

"Can you bring your family members here?"

"I can..." Rawls gritted his teeth...

...

After a few minutes, Rawls lowered his body and fumbled towards the dark in the distance. Zhang Tie then waited in a hidden place for them...

...

After 2 hours, Rawls came back with over 30 people, instead of 2...

Chapter 589: Asylum

Before Rawls returned, Zhang Tie made a dialogue with Heller.

Zhang Tie: Is it okay?

Heller: You're the owner and ruler of Castle of Black Iron, you have the authority to make any decision.

Zhang Tie: How many people could Castle of Black Iron hold?

Heller: Based on the food storage and productivity of Castle of Black Iron, Castle of Black Iron can now hold at most 26,000 people. If 26,000 people entered Castle of Black Iron, half a year later, if those people joined in the production and wasteland reclamation, Castle of Black Iron could hold another 78,000 people. Similarly, if the land area of Castle of Black Iron didn't change, it could at most hold and survive 1,200,000 people in the future.

Zhang Tie: If...I mean, if there are truly so many people in Castle of Black Iron one day, can you manage them?

Heller: In the space of Castle of Black Iron, the existence of all the substances and lives would be restricted by the rules of Castle of Black Iron. Their lives would be completely determined by your willingness. Even 12 billion people are like 12 billion yeasts in my eyes if I want to manage them, not to mention 1.2 million.

Zhang Tie: Can they cause any harm to the small tree?

Heller: I can set a rule in Castle of Black Iron. Without your consent, all of them will be stopped 100 m away from the small tree. Additionally, we can slightly change the terrain in Castle of Black Iron. Thankfully, the basic energy storage in Castle of Black Iron could support such an innovation...

Zhang Tie: Do you think...I'm a bit selfish by doing this? After they enter, I will not allow them to leave out of there for a long time...

Heller: No, Castle Lord, I feel your deed is very lofty. For them, Castle of Black Iron is their paradise. Additionally, you will not forbid them here forever. One day, if your fighting strength reaches a degree, trust me, there will be no problem even if you let them leave or they know that you have such an ability.

Zhang Tie: Is there going to be such a day?

Heller: It's possible. Only you could answer this.

Zhang Tie: if there are indeed so many people, how will I bring them in?

Heller: Castle Lord has been LV 9, as your ability gradually improves and the holy war between humans and demons starts, the space transfer function of Castle of Black Iron will be further open to you. If you want to take those people in, Castle Lord could authorize me with the ability to open the space asylum function of Castle of Black Iron!

Zhang Tie: Space asylum?

Heller: Yes, after having such an ability, it would be very easy for you to take people or living beings in Castle of Black Iron. As long as Castle Lord could lock them with your spiritual energy, you can take them in like carrying an item by touching their bodies directly or indirectly...

Zhang Tie: It's that easy?

Heller: Yes, so easy.

Zhang Tie: It depends on you.

Heller: No problem. Castle of Black Iron should have some more aboriginals now. They could help us develop Castle of Black Iron.

...

After the dialogue with Heller, Zhang Tie patiently waited for Rawls. Meanwhile, he silently observed those demonized puppets in the huge underground space and the situation in his

surroundings.

Zhang Tie felt that Rawls was not faithless man. However, Zhang Tie had to be careful in this place in case of being betrayed.

It was very risky for him to do this. Zhang Tie didn't know whether he was too kind-hearted. He only knew that he would gain tranquility by doing this. Perhaps, it was a usual mental illness of people like him who grew up like small figures——sympathy would always affect his decision.

Thankfully, nothing happened in the 2 hours. By then, it was time for those human captives to sleep. Many of them gradually stopped working.

Perhaps, even demons knew that humans could not keep working like machines. Nobody could keep working a couple of days without any necessary rest, no matter how strong they were. For the sake of their working efficiency, they had to take necessary rest in the late night.

Zhang Tie found those demonized puppets and lackeys of Three-eye Association who waved their kurbashes became relatively less alert. Especially those lackeys of Three-eye Association, many of them had already left the working place of human captives and walked towards the camp of demonized puppets in the distance.

At this moment, Zhang Tie saw a group of people climbing towards him rapidly under the leadership of Rawls.

Over 30 people were following Rawls.

...

Rawls watched Zhang Tie in a bashful look while those who followed him here were watching Zhang Tie with thrilled looks. Among the 30-odd people, over 20 of them were male. The age of those females ranged from 40-50 years old to about 10 years old. They all looked swarthy and were in shabby clothes. Zhang Tie could only identify their gender through their physical traits.

Their current miserable looks were all caused by the hell-like situation here. Even the 50-odd woman could move so swiftly on the ground, which shocked Zhang Tie greatly.

After arriving here, a little girl of 13-14 years old with short-cut hair hid behind Rawls' back and watched Zhang Tie with frightful, widely opened eyes.

"These people are together with us. They don't want to eat human flesh, either. Therefore, they cannot survive here for sure..." Rawls explained to Zhang Tie with an embarrassed look.

Zhang Tie raised his hand to stop Rawls as he watched those people.

"You have to know that although that place is hidden, once I take you in, you will not come out easily..."

"Will we be starved there?" a 50-60 odd man asked.

"No, you won't!"

"How large is that place?"

"Very large, much larger than here!"

"That's okay. As long as you don't force us to eat human flesh or be eaten by humans, it will be better than here. After all, if we stay here, we will die sooner or later. Maybe we can survive by choosing this way. As you come in from outside, you will always have more methods to escape out of here than us!"

Zhang Tie looked around, "Do you also think so?"

Everyone nodded.

"Fine. Come closer, hand in hand. Stand closer to me in a circle. Before taking you out of here, I need to hold a special blessing rite for you!" Zhang Tie told them in a very solemn look.

Those people did according to Zhang Tie's words without any doubts. Hand in hand, they moved closer to Zhang Tie as they really thought that Zhang Tie was going to hold a blessing rite for

them.

Zhang Tie put his hand on Rawls' shoulder, "How many people would not like to eat human flesh?"

"Too many. For the sake of management of human captives and destroying their unity, demons would let those who were succumbed to eat human flesh wear some human teeth over their neck. The more teeth they had over their neck, the more loyal they were to demons. These people might be promoted to supervisors of human captives and lackeys of Three-eye Association. They might do less labor work. Although those demonized puppets had low intelligence, they would not eat such people!"

Zhang Tie then watched their necks and found none of them wore teeth.

"Do you mean all the people who didn't wear teeth would not like to eat human flesh under the threat of demons?"

"Yes, many of us don't like to do this." Rawls answered, "For those wild beasts who start to eat human flesh, the teeth over their necks are their amulets!"

"Are new human captives always be transported in through the secret tunnel?"

"Yes, many times a day or many days a time. People here die everyday. Some new human captives would be transported in everyday."

"Do you mean that even those lackeys of Three-eye Association and demonized puppets could not keep everyone's look in mind, right?"

"Yes. Additionally, human captives were moving when they work. Nobody could remember all of their looks."

"If so, put off your clothes and lend it to me. After a while, I will give you a new set of clothes!" Zhang Tie told to Rawls as he glanced at his frame.

Rawls became hesitated for a short while before putting off his shabby clothes.

After taking his clothes using one hand, Zhang Tie smiled towards Rawls, "The rite is going to start. Close your eyes, please. Don't open them until someone asks you to open your eyes. Good luck!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie used his spiritual energy while the 30 people were teleported into Castle of Black Iron in a split second.

Knowing that all of them have entered Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie felt relaxed and became very satisfied.

Zhang Tie directly put off his clothes. After that, he fetched some dust from the ground and applied them to his hair and face, making himself look like those who had been teleported into Castle of Black Iron. Although Rawls' clothes were shabby and smelly, Zhang Tie didn't care about that. He rolled on the ground for a short while to make him more similar to them.

When rolling on the ground, he changed his black hair into brown, along with the color of his skin and eyes. Only after over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie had completely turned into another person.

After that, Zhang Tie lowered his body and sneaked towards where Rawls and the others came from...

...

In Castle of Black Iron...

"Okay, you can open your eyes..."

Heller's voice sounded as they opened their eyes. Closely after that, they were shocked by what they saw...

The man standing in front of them was as handsome as Apollo. Behind this man was a vigorous world. Although it was evening here, due to the tender and bright light radiated by the colorful clouds in the sky, they could still see clearly the green plants

everywhere. Furthermore, they could smell the fresh air which carried the flavor of flowers and fruits.

"Am...am I dreaming...?"

"Ah? Where're we?" Rawls was completely stunned by all the strange things.

"This is your new home!" Heller watched them kindly.

The old man who talked with Zhang Tie just now trembled as he knelt down on the ground at once. At the same time, he deeply lowered his head and gathered some mud with his hand and took a deep sniff. Closely after that, he highly raised his hand while his eye sockets were filled with tears.

"Ah, what fertile and fragrant soil...I'm not dreaming. But it's real...it's real..."

Everyone then knelt down...

"God, it must be God who has heard our prayers and saved us out of the hell..." someone shouted loudly out of excitement, "This must be the God's domain. It must be. We're saved..."

"Are...are you God?" a petite girl beside Rawls asked as she raised her head.

"I'm not God; I'm God's steward..." Heller smiled.

At this moment, all of them realized that the human fighter was not here.

"That man is the God, God saved us...God saved us..."

Everyone started to scream out of excitement...

Chapter 590: Exposed

In the deep and dark underground cave, after working hard for a day and eating something casually, almost all the human captives fell asleep in hunger and fatigue.

They were sleeping in those dim mountain caves of the underground space. Some of the caves were pitch dark. According to the miserable practices and lessons of human captives, In the dark environment, people had the best sleeping effect and recovery of the body energy at the fastest speed. Those who liked to sleep in bright places could not survive long in such an environment. They had long become bones. Even their bones could not be found.

Because of this, all the human captives would choose to rest in quieter and more hidden places.

Additionally, Zhang Tie found that those human captives who opposed to eat human flesh didn't sleep together with those who had eaten human flesh. They were sleeping in different caves. In this way, they might feel a bit safer.

Coincidentally, it was convenient for Zhang Tie to move.

In shabby clothes and messy hair, Zhang Tie was like the other human captives. Even If someone saw him, they would not doubt his status as a human captive.

When the entire underground space became quiet and even those demonized puppets started to take rest in batches, Zhang Tie fumbled in the dark and checked each mountain cave to seek for those human captives who didn't wear human teeth.

There were so many mountain caves. Some caves held over 10 people, some held over dozens of people, while some held hundreds of people.

Like a ghost in the dark, Zhang Tie ran very fast in a mountain cave. Any person being touched by his hand would be teleported

into Castle of Black Iron. It only took Zhang Tie less than 10 seconds to transfer over 100 people of a mountain cave into Castle of Black Iron.

Some people didn't fall asleep. Zhang Tie was founded by those people twice when he flashed in the mountain cave. Those people sat up and wanted to exclaim; however, before they exclaimed, they had already been teleported into Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie didn't know how many people could he save. He was just doing his best. He even didn't need to ask whether those people would like to be teleported in Castle of Black Iron or not. Because he had no time, neither would he waste time on that. In these mountain caves, besides death, these people would not face the second possible result. The only problem was how long could they stand here, one month, two months or three months...

If some of them were the extreme masochist and would like to be mistreated to death by demons, they only needed to jump into the Pool of Chaos.

However, such an idiot didn't exist at all. Therefore, he didn't need to ask whether they would like to leave out of here or not.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had determined his mind to save as more people as possible.

Time was precious.

The rune effect of rapid moving skill had long faded away. In the next 2 hours, Zhang Tie applied two rapid moving runes to himself so as to maintain the highest swiftness and speed.

During the 2 hours, Zhang Tie didn't even know how many people had he saved and how many mountain caves had he entered. He estimated that he saved at least 10,000 people. Zhang Tie knew that the more people he saved, the more possible would he expose his move to the demons and the lackeys of Three-eye Association.

Finally, after teleporting over 60 people from a mountain cave to Castle of Black Iron, the moment Zhang Tie was going to leave the cave had he seen a guy in better clothes standing at the entrance of the cave with a dumbfounded look and a kurbash in hand...

That guy was a lackey of Three-eye Association. Zhang Tie didn't know whether he was here to check or for what; it seemed that he had already found that all the humans inside the cave had disappeared. Before he made any sound, Zhang Tie had already made a preemptive move.

Zhang Tie dragged that person into the cave, causing him unable to resist. Being held by Zhang Tie's pliers-like grip, that man's face turned red as he started to struggle.

"I ask, you answer, okay?" Zhang Tie then gradually loosened his grip.

"You...you cannot escape out of here...you'd better let me go...if you dare hurt me...the holy clan will kill you..."

That guy seemed having not figured out what was happening; or perhaps he mistook Zhang Tie's status due to the shabby clothes. Therefore, he threatened Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't speak. That guy thought that Zhang Tie was scared by his words. As similar events had happened many times. None of the human captives had succeeded. Therefore, he started to get fearless about Zhang Tie.

As Zhang Tie moved fast in the dark, he didn't know Zhang Tie's real fighting strength. Additionally, his fighting level was not high, he was short-sighted. Therefore, he could only treat Zhang Tie as a guy who had some fighting strength among those human captives. Those human captives were at most LV 6 or LV 7, who could not make any big trouble.

"Where are Feli and the other girls...where are they...if you tell me about that...if you wish to cooperate with me...after catching

them...I will count that as your meritorious deed...I can recommend you to the big figures of the holy clan...you can be a slave supervisor like me...you can also have Feli and some female captives serve you..."

Zhang Tie remembered that there were indeed some women in this mountain cave. However, he didn't see their looks clearly. This guy might want to do something dirty to those women.

Realizing that this guy still thought that he could control the situation, Zhang Tie slightly intensified his grip, causing him unable to utter any voice. After that, he took out a dagger and ferociously stabbed into the guy's thighs seven or eight times like stabbing a bag. Each time, he'd have the blade fully enter the flesh, then drew it out, then in, then out, then in... each time, he'd stab in a different place...

Zhang Tie's cruel movement caused the guy to widely open his eyes like a dead fish. While being pressed by Zhang Tie, he could not move. After being stabbed many times, he started to cramp like shrimps in an iron span while the veins on his neck and his forehead bulged.

Only after 10 more seconds, soybean sized sweat beads rolled off his forehead; meanwhile, his face turned completely pale.

Zhang Tie just watched him icily without a wink, "What's the highest level of the demonized puppets in this demonized puppets corps?"

After asking this question, Zhang Tie slightly loosened his grip, allowing him to utter a sound.

"Who...who are you?"

This guy had realized that Zhang Tie might not be a human captive. Because none of the human captives here were allowed to carry a dagger. Facing Zhang Tie's dead qi, he felt a strange fear. Pitifully, he was not smart enough.

When Zhang Tie pinched his neck once again, he stabbed in his thighs another three times rapidly, almost causing him to pass out.

"What's the highest level of the demonized puppets here in the demonized puppets corps?" Zhang Tie repeated before slightly losing his grip.

"LV 12..."

That guy finally realized that Zhang Tie didn't want to hear craps.

"What about the army chief?"

"LV 16...LV 16...the army chief of this demonized puppets corps is...is a LV 16...battle spirit..."

It was within Zhang Tie's expectation that the army chief of this demonized puppets corps was not a knight. As cannon fodder, demonized puppets corps's chief commission officer always had a relatively lower level compared to that of demon corps. After all, knights were not as cheap as white cabbages. Knights could not be matched to any troop for free. Given that the demonized puppets corps was actually controlled by the parent worm of puppet worms, the main mission of the army chief of the demonized puppets corps was to communicate with the parent worm.

"Is the army chief a human or a demon? What's his name?"

"He's human, called Koz...the eldest son of the head of Senel Clan of Titanic Duchy...This demonized puppets corps is also controlled by Senel Clan..."

"What's the background of the Senel Clan of Titanic Duchy?"

"The heads of this clan had served as the protectorship of the duchy for consecutive generations..."

"Does Senel Clan belong to Three-eye Association?"

"Yes..."

"Besides Koz, who else of Senel Clan is here?"

"Koz's sons are all here..."

"What's the highest level of his sons?"

"Also LV 12..."

Although oozing sweat due to sharp pain, that guy still replied very fast as he was afraid of being stabbed again by Zhang Tie. He was trembling inside...

"Where's the parent worm?"

"Only army chief Koz knows that!"

"Is he in the camp?"

"He had returned to Titanic Duchy two days ago..."

Zhang Tie started to think about it...

"Can...can you stop my bleeding?" that guy watched Zhang Tie with an imploring look.

"No need!" Zhang Tie glanced at him before stabbing in his heart.

When Zhang Tie was thinking about whether to take a look at the camp of demonized puppets and find a chance to find the parent worm and kill it, a sharp whistle sounded abruptly from afar...

"Someone escaped..." a person screamed in the distance.

After glancing at the whistle in front of the chest of this dead guy, Zhang Tie realized that his deed had exposed...

Chapter 591: A Living Hell

Zhang Tie instantly threw this dead guy into the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron. By doing this, he could make this event more mysterious and himself safer.

With the sharp whistle and exclamations, more and more people woke up. Zhang Tie hurriedly ran out of the mountain cave.

"Everyone, come out...everyone, come out..."

Some slave supervisors shouted loudly outside the mountain caves. When many human captives were awakened and ran out of the mountain caves, Zhang Tie sneaked into the crowd and followed them towards the gathering center in a flurried way.

As they had been doing labor work underground for a long time, most of the human captives looked swarthy and unidentified. When Zhang Tie entered the crowd, besides some human captives around him who glanced at him, none of the others paid attention to him.

As human captives died and arrived everyday, they had long been used to strange looks. Additionally, everyone was forced to do high-intensity labor work everyday. In the rest time, they would go to find food. As a result, most of these human captives only knew a few people besides them.

The entire underground space was in chaos. Although human captives usually escaped, they always faced a very miserable outcome. However, it was the first time for all of them to assemble because someone escaped.

Zhang Tie was then followed to the open underground space by supervisors with the other captives like ducks in a chaotic way.

On one side of the open land was the boiling lava river. Zhang Tie, in the crowd, found more and more supervisors running towards here.

"What's wrong?" a 20-odd human captive asked Zhang Tie with a flurried look.

Zhang Tie glanced at him and found that this guy was a bit emaciated. However, he didn't wear any human teeth. Although those who didn't wear human teeth didn't sleep together with those who wore human teeth, when in assembly and work, all of them would stay together. This was how demons and slave supervisors managed these human captives. Looking at those who wore human teeth beside him, Zhang Tie shook his head.

"I don't know!"

"I'm Huwen, what's your name?" that guy asked in a low voice.

"I'm Peter..." Zhang Tie replied.

"Shut up, quiet..." a slave supervisor waved his kurbash and shouted loudly in front of the human captives as he whipped towards those in front of the crowd, causing miserable shrieks at once. In a split second, the crowd became quiet, including Zhang Tie, who just watched carefully.

Human captives were constantly driven out of mountain caves and dim places and started to assemble in an open land. Those slave supervisors scolded ferociously as they whipped those human captives constantly.

Human captives were forced to form loose and chaotic square matrices in a group of about 5000 people. Each square matrix was overseen by 10 slave supervisors. Those slave supervisors constantly whipped those human captives so as to keep them obedient and quiet.

At the beginning, there were some voices among those matrices; however, when squads of armored demonized puppets with grim and bloody eyes appeared, those human captives became quiet at once.

Everyone knew that those demonized puppets ate humans.

Therefore, at the sight of these undying, stinky and bloody demonized puppets, most of the common human captives felt as fearsome as chicks at the sight of skunks.

When demonized puppets surrounded Zhang Tie's square matrix, Huwen and some guys beside Zhang Tie started to tremble. Zhang Tie also pretended to be afraid when he was actually observing the surrounding situation.

Soon after the squads of demonized puppets arrived, Zhang Tie saw some commission officers in brilliant and advanced armors in front of the square matrices.

These commission officers were not demonized puppets; instead, they were pure humans; or, precisely, they were just b*stards of Three-eye Association.

At the sight of these people, a slave supervisor of each square matrix ran towards them at once. Like how a dog saw its owner, they bowed and whispered to those commission officers.

Due to the distance, Zhang Tie couldn't hear clearly what they were talking about. Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie found those commission officers had dispersed and came to the front of square matrices with those slave supervisors.

The one who came to Zhang Tie's square matrix was a man who looked very sinister with a hooknose and deep socket.

That man's eyes were shooting bloody and brutal lights. He casually pointed at a human captive in the front. After knowing his intention, two strong slave supervisors instantly rushed towards that man and dragged him out of the square matrix and took him in front of that commission officer.

"When you slept, some human captives escaped. Do you know where they are?"

The human captive became frightened so much that he stammered.

"I...I don't know."

"You don't know?" that man revealed a sneer as he waved his hand, "If so, you're useless!"

The two slave supervisors immediately dragged that captive's hands and walked towards the lava river over 20 m away. The human captive started to wail and struggle, "Please...I really don't know about that...I've fallen asleep...I don't know anything about it..."

However, his cries didn't stop the two slave supervisors. Compared to the four powerful hands, his struggle became useless.

In a wink, that human captive had been dragged to the side of the lava river and thrown into it by the two slave supervisors.

With a groundbreaking shrill shriek, that person just flapped twice in the fiery lava before sinking into it. Besides some bubbles and a lower flame on the lava river, nothing else was left.

The same scene happened to other human square matrices at the same time. In a wink, dozens of people had been thrown into the lava river.

All the left human captives looked pale as they trembled.

Including Zhang Tie, but not because of fear, but fury. Lowering his head, he tightly gritted his teeth as he clenched his fists tightly, causing the veins on the back of his hands swell.

That 'hooknose' sneered as he pointed at another human captive. The two slave supervisors immediately caught that captive and dragged him out of the square.

"I don't know...I don't know..."

This time, the hooknose didn't even ask him. He waved his hand once again while the second human captive was thrown into the lava river.

The 3rd one...the 4th one...

With constant shrill cries from each square matrix, many human captives being pointed at were so scared that they even had an incontinence.

When the 5th human captive was dragged out, the 60-year old man spat towards that hooknose forcefully, "Peh...you Senel Clan will not have a good result...sooner or later...you will be crushed into pieces by the human army...all of you will be thrown into the lava river one after another too...to embrace the burning stake in the hell forever..."

"Wait!" the hooknose wiped off the saliva from his face as he stopped the two slave supervisors, "Drag him over here!"

The 60-year old man was dragged in front of that hooknose. The old man still wanted to swear; however, the hooknose had already drawn out a long sword from his waist and stabbed into his mouth. With one agitation, the old man's teeth, tongue and the entire mouth had been completely hurt. He could not even utter a word anymore.

The hooknose drew out his long sword and chopped off the old man's limbs, causing his limbs to fall on the ground.

"Stop his bleeding. Keep him alive and awake." the hooknose said mercilessly.

The two slave supervisors immediately took out medicine powders. One of them tore open the old man's clothes and started to stop his bleeding; the other filled in the old man's bloody mouth with a vial of medicament.

The old man, who had been in coma woke up once again. The old man didn't succumb to the hooknose; instead, he glared at him while his facial muscles trembled. It seemed that he was still swearing at him.

The hooknose fetched four demonized puppets by waving his

hands as he pointed at the old man's limbs, "This is your food today!"

The four demonized puppets got his meaning as they immediately picked up the old man's limbs and started to gnaw them in front of him.

The old man trembled and directly closed his eyes.

"Open his eyelids, I want him to look at it..." the hooknose's merciless voice sounded.

The two slave supervisors opened the old man's eyelids brutally and had him watch his limbs being gnawed by demonized puppets one piece after another.

"From today on, let him stay here. I want everybody to see him. Cut off a piece of flesh from him everyday. I will keep him alive and have him watch how he was eaten by holy worms one piece after another. I want to let him know the look of the hell. Am I clear?" the hooknose told those slave supervisors.

"Clear!"

"Humans are doomed to be destroyed. The holy clan will establish wholly-new orders for sure and have humans back under the ruling of the holy clan. Our Senel Clan is doomed to become the human nobles and rulers since we mastered the Senel Holy Worm Corps. Like what happened before the Catastrophe, we will stomp you one generation after another. You and your posterity only have two choices—to succumb, or to taste hell alive." the hooknose shouted loudly as he pointed at that old man, "Those people cannot escape out of here. They must be hiding in some hidden underground tunnels or space that they discovered when doing labor work. If anyone among you knows the whereabouts of those people or could provide useful clues, I will promote him to be the leader of these slave supervisors!"

The human captives were still silent.

The hooknose waved his hand once again as another human captive was dragged out with shrill cries.

...

After killing over 100 human captives, those b*stards still obtained no clue yet. At this moment, the commission officers of Senel Clan then gathered together once again. After a short negotiation, they had the rest human captives return.

However, those human captives being released didn't go back to sleep; instead, they were forced to check all the tunnels and caves that they had excavated in order to find those who had escaped...

In the opinion of those commission officers of Senel Clan, those slave captives must have found some hidden tunnels or space when they worked. They must have covered it silently. After preparing for a long time, they finally escaped.

In such an underground space of complex terrain, it was normal to see those hidden natural tunnels, ground cracks and underground space.

Like others, Zhang Tie was also forced to do labor works...

After leaving the open land beside the lava river, Zhang Tie threw a deep glance at that old man who was being watched by some demonized puppets. Lying on the ground, facing towards the sky, he seemed having died. However, Zhang Tie knew that those slave supervisors and b*stards of Senel Clan would keep him alive.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood what a person would be when he was driven extremely furious.

He was not furious anymore; instead, he became as calm as an ice-capped volcano. Meanwhile, a name deeply impressed in Zhang Tie's mind——Senel Clan!

Zhang Tie never had such a strong will to destroy something until now...

Chapter 592: Endurance

With a crispy sound "Pah..." on Huwen's back, Huwen uttered a shrill cry. At the same time, a bloody mark appeared on his back even being covered by his shabby clothes.

The rock almost fell from Huwen's hands. Zhang Tie, on his side, hurriedly stretched out one hand and took it steadily.

"You b*tches, don't dream about killing time. Hurry up. Clean out this region..." the slave supervisor swore loudly while standing on a piece of rock, "If not find those escaping b*tches for me, all of you have to keep working here till death..."

Zhang Tie turned around and threw a glance at that slave supervisor. The slave supervisor instantly slashed Zhang Tie while glaring at him, "Brat, if you look at me one more time, I will dig out your eyes..."

Zhang Tie trembled. However, that whip was nothing serious for Zhang Tie at all. Over the past one month, Zhang Tie had eaten three more iron-body fruits after being hammered constantly by the crew members of the Idiots. Now, Zhang Tie felt that his strike-resistance ability had intensified a lot.

Zhang Tie could stand being whipped when in Heavens Cold City, not to mention now. The penalty which was unbearable for others was just like being patted by flyswatter for Zhang Tie.

It was not the right moment to argue with these scumbags. Zhang Tie didn't speak as he just lowered his head and continued to pretend to forcefully carry that 50 kg's rock and dropped it off that slope over there like the others.

"Thanks..." Huwen drew in a cold breath.

The two people walked to that slope and dropped it off there. Huwen threw a glance at that slave supervisor in the distance and that guy didn't pay attention to them; therefore, he stealthily took

out of a kettle from his clothes and passed it to Zhang Tie, "Drink some, it's already over 10 hours, but you've not even drunk a bit..."

"Thanks, I don't need it..."

"Ah, you're really strong..." Huwen threw an admiring look at Zhang Tie as he rapidly opened his kettle and had a small mouth of water. After seeing some human captives, who wore human teeth, walking towards them, he hurriedly hid his kettle and continued to walk towards that pile of rocks in the distance with Zhang Tie.

Those human captives who wore human teeth walked towards here with some smaller rocks. Although they were also doing labor work, they could have some special treatment. Sometimes, they could even take a rest. Additionally, those slave supervisors would rarely slash them.

"Stay away from these people..." Huwen whispered to Zhang Tie when those guys who wore human teeth passed by, "They have started to eat human flesh and become wild beasts. As long as they could survive, they would do anything. Once these people become slave supervisors, they will treat us more acrimoniously than demons..."

Zhang Tie nodded. As long as some people succumbed to evil, they would be the accomplices and thugs of evil. They would further show the dark side of their personalities. Demons and b*stards of Three-eye Association had been used to classify human captives and make them fight each other so as to weaken their own fighting strength.

Under the intensified ruling of slave supervisors, human captives had been working over 10 hours. However, they still didn't find any hidden underground tunnel or ground crack. Zhang Tie found that all the demonized puppets had rushed into those dark caves to seek for those missing human captives.

Zhang Tie knew that they could never find those missing people in the underground space. This was a good news for Zhang Tie. At

least it meant that nobody had found what he did.

As demonized puppets left in large groups, the camp of demonized puppets became relatively vacant. Before leaving here, Zhang Tie had determined to give those b*stards of Senel Clan a surprise.

...

Fiery mushroom looked like an average mushroom on the ground. Being red all over, the fiery mushroom was like a little scarlet umbrella. In this underground space, especially those wet and backlit places such as the gaps between rocks, as long as the conditions fit, they would sprout from underground in 1-2 days.

Previously, there were too many fiery mushrooms in the underground space; now they gradually disappeared. The most important reason was that human captives would pick up all the fiery mushroom regardless of their size. Even those fiery mushroom which was not ripe yet had been picked up, causing them to lose the ability to reproduce anymore.

One hour later, after moving a piece of rock, Zhang Tie saw a red canopy in the soil.

Before Zhang Tie moved, Huwen and the other human captives on one side had already charged at those fiery mushroom and foisted them into their mouths. Huwen also crammed one in his mouth and started to chew it hurriedly. By the way, he passed one to Zhang Tie.

"Hurry, eat it..."

Watching them engulfing the fiery mushroom, Zhang Tie also put one in his mouth after a second. It tasted as bitter and cold as unripe bagasse.

"You b*stards, keep doing your work..." seeing the chaos over here, a slave supervisor instantly rushed towards them with a kurbash and slashed them crazily.

...

After another 7-8 hours when above 80% of human captives didn't even have the strength to walk no matter how crazily they were slashed by slave supervisors, the bitter labor work finally came to an end.

Although many human captives escaped, which infuriated those people of Senel Clan, in order to keep the rest human captives alive, they had to let them take a rest after gaining no achievement.

Zhang Tie then returned to a mountain cave with over 40 human captives including Huwen. Lying on the ground, they could only pant.

The others didn't care about having one more person inside the cave. It seemed that the population here always changed.

Zhang Tie felt these mountain caves were like underground cells in Blackhot City. The air in the cave was polluted and smelt weird. Some red lights of lava river were reflected on top of the inside of the cave, causing a little brightness in the cave.

After resting for a while, some people who had recovered some physical strength struggled to fumble out of the mountain cave to seek for food. Some of them took out some weird, dried food from their clothes and started to eat them.

Watching a person on his side forcefully chewing a mouse's tail, Zhang Tie almost vomited.

After resting for a while, Huwen also left the mountain cave. He then fetched a bottle of water from a water source outside the cave.

Huwen also went out to find some food. When he came back, given his look, Zhang Tie knew that he had gained nothing. Thankfully, he had eaten some fiery mushroom several hours ago and didn't feel hungry now.

Zhang Tie felt the fiery mushroom which tasted like bagasse started to ferment and expand in his stomach, making him feel full. However, he didn't get too many nutrients.

"Peter, do you think there's indeed a secret tunnel or ground crack here?" Huwen asked Zhang Tie.

"Maybe!" Zhang Tie replied briefly, "No matter what, they had left out of here!"

"If we find any clue, never expose it..." Huwen whispered.

Zhang Tie nodded as he stared at him.

"We could find a few fiery mushroom and edible things here. I wonder whether we can survive tomorrow!" Huwen said in a pessimistic mood.

"You don't believe that you could survive on?"

"Unless being demons' lackeys and wild beasts who eat human flesh, nobody else could leave here." Huwen urged as he took out of a small piece of black-brown thing to Zhang Tie, "I prepared it for myself. As I've got one, you can take this one!"

"What's this?"

"An arrow-poison mushroom. I found it several days ago by chance. It contains extremely toxic muscarinic substance and a hemolytic toxoid. As long as you eat a small piece of it, you will die in a few minutes. Additionally, after you die, your corpse will also contain the extremely toxic substance. Those beasts will not eat your corpse. Therefore, you could remain complete after death. When you have to die, take one bit of this, and you will suffer less pain."

"How do you know that?" Zhang Tie asked Huwen out of curiosity.

"I was a botanist..." Huwen revealed a bitter smile.

Zhang Tie took that dried thing and rubbed it into pieces in front of Huwen before blowing them off...

"You..." Huwen glared at Zhang Tie.

"I promise, you will not have to use this, neither will I!"

"How?" Huwen watched Zhang Tie like watching aliens.

"Do you believe in miracle?"

"Miracle had died since we were taken in here!"

"Perhaps, when you open your eyes after you fall asleep, you will see a miracle; you should never lose your hope and dream!"

"Sleep, save some strength for tomorrow..." Huwen let out a sigh as he huddled up on the ground.

Zhang Tie also laid there. After swallowing some all-purpose medicament and water from Castle of Black Iron, he silently closed his eyes to recover his physical strength and spiritual energy. Meanwhile, he filled those god's runes in his mind so as to maintain his optimal state. He then just waited for most of them to fall asleep...

Chapter 593: The Pledge

Zhang kept his eyes closed and maintained his spiritual energy; meanwhile, he paid attention to the situation inside and outside the entire mountain cave.

Two hours later, both the inside and outside of the mountain cave became quite as the snoring sounds filled the mountain cave. At this moment, Zhang Tie opened his eyes.

Huwen had been in a sound sleep on Zhang Tie's side. He didn't sleep well last night. After being woken up in the midnight and doing another one day's heavy work, he had been extremely fatigued. Unless someone shouted loudly in front of him, he would not wake up, like the others in the cave.

Besides snoring sounds, there was another special sound, "Gulugulu" from those hungry guys' stomachs. Without getting sufficient food, they could only have one method to prevent hunger by drinking a lot of water before sleeping.

After slightly touching Huwen's shoulder, Zhang Tie had teleported him into Castle of Black Iron. After that, Zhang Tie stood up and flashed around the inside of the cave, teleporting all the others into Castle of Black Iron.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie sneaked out of the mountain cave.

There were some more caves where human captives slept in closer to Zhang Tie's cave. With his dark vision, all the mountain caves were as bright as daytime.

Senel Clan didn't expect that the same event could happen on the second day; additionally, after one day's hard work, all the human captives had been in a sound sleep. Even those slave supervisors had become relaxed after one day's busy work. Therefore, it was much easier for Zhang Tie to teleport all the human captives into Castle of Black Iron.

When in work, Zhang Tie had been familiar with the situation and terrain of this underground space. He knew the caves of those human captives who insisted on not eating human flesh. Therefore, after applying a rapid moving skill and hiding skill, Zhang Tie swiftly moved among those dark caves and spaces like a ghost and teleported human captives into Castle of Black Iron one after another in the fastest speed.

Senel Clan treated this underground space as a huge prison where they adopted very cruel and extensive management measures. In the opinion of those Senel Clan members, as long as they blocked the exits on two ends of the underground space, they would prevent those human captives from escaping. Therefore, after ending one day's labor work, the Senel Clan's surveillance on this human captives center loosened. This was then more convenient for Zhang Tie's move.

Those members of Senel Clan might never imagine that there was a person like Zhang Tie who could teleport human captives on his side into an independent time-space.

Additionally, as those demonized puppets who were mainly responsible for managing this place had low intelligence, the number of slave supervisors was also very limited, those people of Senel Clan could not register a holistic management over this place. Furthermore, those demonized puppets were good at destruction and killing while those slave supervisors were only excelled at slashing human captives and licking the boots of those commission officers.

Even Zhang Tie didn't know how many people had he teleported in Castle of Black Iron. He only remembered some guys who got up and peed when he instantly moved them into Castle of Black Iron before they made any response.

He even met some guys wearing teeth over their neck. Before those guys exclaimed, they had also been teleported into Castle of Black Iron. As to whether these people could survive or be beaten

to death by other humans in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie wouldn't care about that. Zhang Tie had witnessed thousands of people die, he didn't feel pitiful about seeing some more.

Zhang Tie knew that this was his last time to save people. Therefore, he worked very hard at a faster speed. After losing his rapid moving effect for consecutive three times, Zhang Tie applied the rapid moving skill to himself for the fourth time; however, at this moment, he found no more people who didn't wear teeth over neck anymore.

After running for such a long time, even though he constantly supplemented his physical strength with all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie still felt a bit fatigued.

"Heller, how many people do we have in Castle of Black Iron?"

"21679!" Heller replied with a pleasant sound, "Castle Lord, if you're free, you can take a look inside. It has never been so boisterous inside. Those people think they are taken into the paradise by the God from the hell!"

"Not until I leave out of here. And, how about those guys who wore human teeth?"

"The moment they entered have they been beaten to death. The others thought these people were gifted by the God for them to revenge!"

After hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie became speechless. However, after sending those guys wearing human teeth into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie found that if he could touch his enemy, he could also control the enemy's fate by teleporting him into Castle of Black Iron.

"Can I teleport my enemy inside Castle of Black Iron by touching them?" Zhang Tie asked with full desires. If Heller replied yes, Zhang Tie would feel that he had one more trump card. The moment Zhang Tie thought that he could teleport a powerhouse

like Master Abyan into Castle of Black Iron and have him under his control only by touching him had he been thrilled all over.

"Yes!"

After hearing Heller's answer, Zhang Tie almost sprung up, "Is there any limit?"

"Of course there is. I thought you could understand the secret when you teleport them in, it seems that you haven't. You mainly teleport those people in through the special link between your special energy and the arch door of Castle of Black Iron. The person that you teleport in Castle or Black Iron is actually being covered by a special energy field formed by your spiritual energy, which was featured by your unique energy fluctuation frequency. It was like an access certificate to that arch door. Am I clear?"

"Clear!"

"Actually, it's a transient holistic coverage to that person. In order to reach this effect, you have to light more surging points than that of the person you want to teleport in. Those who have lit more surging points than you will have a higher frequency of spiritual energy. Therefore, you cannot form a holistic coverage towards those people, which means that you cannot teleport them into Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie became stunned, "You mean I cannot teleport those who have a higher level than me into Castle of Black Iron and have them under control inside?"

"Yes. If you meet those who have a higher level than you, you could only deal with them based on your fighting skills. Castle of Black Iron would not give you any favor. Actually, when you reach LV 10, you will know that real powerhouses could rarely touch each other when in the fight. If the opponent had determined to kill you, you could barely touch them. Of course, you could not teleport them into Castle of Black Iron and crack down them inside."

"But my spiritual energy is greater than theirs. Doesn't this work?"

"The size of spiritual energy is different from its frequency level. One refers to quantity while the other refers to quality. You might feel the faint change in your spiritual energy each time you lit a surging point. In that change, even if the total quantity of your spiritual energy didn't increase, you could still feel your spiritual energy grow a lot. That is both a growth in the frequency and quality of spiritual energy."

"What if they are not my enemies? Can I take those with a higher level in Castle of Black Iron?"

"The only condition for those whose spiritual energy frequency is higher than yours is that they are completely relaxed physically and spiritually and believe in you very much!"

"Do you have any method for the old man?" Zhang Tie knew that Heller would understand what he referred to.

"Sorry. That old man's limbs have been chopped off. Additionally, he had watched his limbs being eaten by demonized puppets; he had been collapsed both physically and spiritually. He might die in any second. It's out of my ability to save him!"

When Zhang Tie asked Heller about this, he had already left the place where the human captives slept and came to the open land on the side of the lava river which gathered all the human captives about 20 hours ago. Thankfully, nobody paid attention to this place at this moment. Nobody could imagine that any human captive dared to check or save this old man at the risk of their lives.

The fiery light of the lava river brightened up the riverside. Right there, an old man losing his limbs was lying on the ground, facing the top of the underground space miserably and lonely. At this moment, he even had lost his ability to commit suicide. Those slave supervisors didn't worry that he would escape or commit

suicide. Lying there, he was sensing the arrival of death in the most anguished manner.

Watching the old man, Zhang Tie's heart raced. He instantly checked his artery and found it was still faintly pulsing. Therefore, Zhang Tie hugged the old man and left rapidly.

Zhang Tie moved the old man back to a dark place. The old man was still breathing faintly. However, his mouth had been completely destroyed. His face looked extremely terrifying. Some ants were gnawing the old man's flesh through wounds.

After driving away those ants, Zhang Tie put his hand on the old man's chest and directly injected all-purpose medicament and some clear spring water into his stomach from Castle of Black Iron, allowing the effect of all-purpose medicament and water to gradually spread over his body.

One minute later, the old man slowly opened his eyes. Watching Zhang Tie, he slightly moved his mouth. However, he could not utter one word, except for some weird voice. With a vacant look, the old man dropped off tears.

From the old man's eyes, Zhang Tie got two messages: he appreciated Zhang Tie; he wanted Zhang Tie to end his pains right away as he felt pretty painful both physically and spiritually in each second.

"I took those missing people away. Now, I've already taken away all the human captives who don't eat human flesh in the entire underground space. They are in a safe place which the demons could never find. What other requirements and wishes do you have?" Zhang Tie whispered to the old man.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the old man's eyes started to glitter as the voice in his throat grew louder. Zhang Tie moved his ear closer to the old man's mouth for a while before figuring out what did the old man repeat in hoarse, obscure and trembling voice.

"...survive on..."

"...survive on..."

"...survive on..."

"Do you want I and everybody to survive on?"

The old man revealed a reassured look as he nodded hardly.

Watching the old man nodding, Zhang Tie dropped off his tears at once. At this moment, this respectful old man's biggest wish was to make all those who escaped away survive on.

Zhang Tie's tears fell on the old man's face, causing the old man's face twist painfully once again. He stared at Zhang Tie with a beseeching look and hoped Zhang Tie to end his pain.

"I promise you we will survive on no matter what."

After saying that, Zhang Tie closed his eyes as he moved his hand on the old man's chest. However, Zhang Tie's hand started to quiver as he felt difficult to release his battle qi.

At this moment, the old man uttered some voice. Although Zhang Tie closed his eyes, he had understood the old man's meaning at once.

"Please..."

"Please..."

"Please..."

This was the last imploration of the old man.

...

Zhang Tie finally gritted his teeth and broke the old man's heart vein by faintly releasing his battle qi.

The old man's voice stopped in Zhang Tie's arms. Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he saw a smile of being relieved.

"I swear to destroy the entire Senel Clan and have their dirty

fresh blood with all those who died here...!" Zhang Tie made a solemn pledge towards the old man's body, which remained a bit warmth. After that, Zhang Tie teleported the old man's corpse into Castle of Black Iron and had Heller bury it well.

Zhang Tie mopped off his tears as he stood up. After throwing a furious glance at the camp of demonized puppets corps, Zhang Tie darted towards that camp as fast as a strand of smoke while being covered by the dark and the terrain.

Chapter 594: Demonized Puppets' Camp

The camp of the demonized puppets corps under the control of Senel Clan was not surrounded by too many defensive devices. Besides some stallions which were taken in from outside, the entire camp was covered with dense tents. It felt like a tribal agglomeration zone in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

There was a brazier at a few meters in the camp. Some crude fluorescent stones were erecting sparsely. Additionally, there was a lava lake near the camp. Being affected by the three light sources, the region of the camp near the lava lake was a bit brighter; by contrast, the part being far away from the lava lake became dim.

In the dark, patrolling demonized puppets passed by one squad after another.

In this planet, even sun would rise in the east and set in the west. Therefore, although demonized puppets could constantly fight in special conditions, they also needed to take a rest. Precisely, the puppet worms in the heads of demonized puppets also needed to take a rest.

Demonized puppets also slept in tents. Those dense tents were like bleak tombs and woods in a ghost city in the dark, which revealed a stink everywhere.

The stink was from the demonized puppets' mouths when they breathed. When a place was crowded with demonized puppets, the air of that place would make people suffocate.

Therefore, the moment Zhang Tie drew closer to the camp of the demonized puppets corps, Zhang Tie felt like entering a closed room which was filled with rotten flesh. He almost vomited.

However, as a fighter instead of being a dude, Zhang Tie had to bear it.

Those tents and dark covered Zhang Tie well. Zhang Tie

gradually drew closer to the center of the camp after dodging from squads of demonized puppets many times as fast as light.

Those b*stards of Senel Clan lived in the central region of the camp, where the parent worm of puppet worms of the hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets should stay in. If the army chief of this demonized puppets corps was here, Zhang Tie would never risk his life to find trouble here. However, according to the human captives and what he observed yesterday, that powerhouse Koze of Senel Clan might not be here. Therefore, Zhang Tie wanted to have a try.

Zhang Tie was indeed risking his life. Even if this army chief was not here, there were still many powerhouses among the demonized puppets corps, who were more powerful than Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie might lose his life due to any mistake.

However, Zhang Tie was decisive. He would not leave out of here so easily. Before leaving out of here, he wanted to do something. That 'hooknose' of Senel Clan had to die today. Given that guy's qi, Zhang Tie estimated that he was about LV 10. "If I could get the chance, I might kill him easily." Zhang Tie had a crazier thought, "If possible, I can find that parent worm and kill it. If so, the entire demonized puppets corps will collapse."

Zhang Tie felt it valuable to risk his life due to the above two reasons.

...

At this moment, the door of a tent in front of him was opened from the inside, exposing some fluorescent light from the inside; meanwhile, someone walked out of the tent.

The moment Zhang Tie saw that person had he hidden himself in the shadow of a tent.

The person came out of the tent and undid his trousers. After finishing his pee, he quivered his crotch a few seconds. He then

muttered and walked back towards his tent.

When the person opened the tent, Zhang Tie instantly flashed out of the dark and struck that person with a binding chain before that person made any response. That person became stiff at once. Zhang Tie then rushed in front of him and rapidly dragged that person into the tent before closing the door curtain of the tent.

There was a fluorescent lamp inside the tent. Therefore, that person could see clearly Zhang Tie's look. Meanwhile, his eyes were full of fear.

Given his look, Zhang Tie was totally a human captive in the lowest class. However, Zhang Tie's strength was so great that that person could only move his eyes. Because of such a sharp contrast, that person became extremely fearful.

Zhang Tie glanced over his tent rapidly and found nothing else but a kurbash, a dagger, clothes and bedding. Therefore, Zhang Tie estimated that this guy was a small head of slave supervisors.

Zhang Tie instantly seized the guy's neck as he relieved the binding chain.

"I ask and you answer. If you want to die, you can have a try. If you understand my words, blink your eyes." Zhang Tie said grimly.

That person rapidly blinked his eyes.

"Where's Koze?"

"The army chief...is still not back yet!" that guy hurriedly replied as he felt the grip slightly loosened over his neck.

After hearing this reply, Zhang Tie became reassured, "It seems that they have not paid special attention to the recent event."

"What's the name of that 'hooknose', who chopped off the limbs of the old man a day ago?"

"Cambo, that person is called Cambo, Senel Cambo!" the slave supervisor forcefully uttered.

"What's the relationship between him and Cambo?"

"He's the 3rd son of Koze!"

"Where does he live?"

"I don't know...I only know that many powerhouses of Senel Clan are living in the tents near the center of the camp. As I am not qualified to be there, I don't know where Cambo lives!"

"Where's the parent worm of puppet worms?"

"I...I don't know."

"Where's the warehouse of the camp?"

"Near the center of the camp!"

Zhang Tie tossed a lot of questions in a line. When he couldn't get any more useful information from that person, Zhang Tie slightly strengthened his force and broke that guy's neck, causing a cracking sound. Closely after that, he threw the corpse into the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron in case of exposing his own trace.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie listened to the outside carefully and found nobody was in the neighborhood. Therefore, he left the tent rapidly and headed for the center of the camp stealthily.

The entire demonized puppets corps might have never considered that any person could slide into their camp; neither have they imagined that what threat could those human captives pose to them. Therefore, their defensive facilities were not very strict. All this was just a matter of routine. In such a case, it only took Zhang Tie a few minutes to reach the center of the camp.

In the center of the camp, there was indeed a bigger tent surrounded by two rows of smaller tents. Those tents were remarkably more advanced in regulations. Zhang Tie observed it in the dark and found there were dozens of tents at least over there. It was very difficult for him to find that guy called Cambo

among so many tents. It would be too dangerous if he met any real powerhouse.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie focused on the warehouse which was piled up with a lot of materials over 200 m away from the biggest tent in the center of the camp. He then worked out a method.

The warehouse was evidently matched with more guards than other places. Zhang Tie found two teams of demonized puppets were patrolling around the warehouse constantly. Before doing something to the materials, he had to kill those demonized puppets. As long as what happened here was founded by others, all the powerhouses of Senel Clan near the center of the camp would come here.

After counting the population of those demonized puppets and observing the terrain near the warehouse, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth and chose to hide in a shadow a bit far away from the center of the camp; meanwhile, he filled all the binding chains in his mind sea using his spiritual energy.

Where Zhang Tie hid was the closest place to the patrolling route of those demonized puppets. It was over 30 m away from the demonized puppets' patrolling route.

Each team contained 11 patrolling demonized puppets. It would take two teams of demonized puppets less than 2 minutes to pass the same region. Zhang Tie counted time silently. When one team passed by where he hid, Zhang Tie instantly rushed forward at the fastest speed.

The distance of over 30 m instantly narrowed to 20 m. When Zhang Tie reached 15 m away from those demonized puppets, a head of those demonized puppets had found Zhang Tie as it twisted its grim head towards where Zhang Tie came from at once.

When it turned around its head, Zhang Tie moved another 7-8 m ahead. When that demonized puppet narrowed his eyes and

wanted to roar, Zhang Tie had pushed ahead another few meters.

Right then.

The moment the team of demonized puppets was within the attacking range of binding chains had Zhang Tie released 11 binding chains and struck them.

Those demonized puppets became stiff at once...

Chapter 595: Killing Cambo

If possible, Zhang Tie really hoped to kill all these grim and disgusting demonized puppets. However, if he did that, the parent worm of those puppet worms would feel someone breaking in at once. If so, he would not continue his plan.

Therefore, after fixing those demonized puppets with binding chains, Zhang Tie knocked them down quickly; instead of killing them. After that, he filled his mind sea with binding chains by constantly driving his spiritual energy towards the god's rune of binding skills in his mind sea at the speed of one binding chain per second.

After hearing the footsteps of the other team of demonized puppets, Zhang Tie supplemented his binding chains once again. Like what he did previously, before the team of demonized puppets made any response, they had been frozen by the 11 binding chains.

Zhang Tie then dragged the 22 demonized puppets into a hidden place which was close to the warehouse before rushing into the warehouse.

After freezing another two demonized puppets in the warehouse using the same method, Zhang Tie finally occupied the entire warehouse.

Among all the military materials, kerosene was the necessity for both demons and humans. In that warehouse, Zhang Tie had found where the kerosene was placed only by a sniff.

The kerosene was put in about 1000 1-m high tin buckets, which were piled like a hill. The moment he saw those kerosene buckets had Zhang Tie taken out a dagger and stabbed hundreds of times in each of them.

The moment he stabbed in those tin buckets had the kerosene gurgled out of them.

When those buckets were leaking kerosene, Zhang Tie lifted a kerosene bucket which weighed hundreds of kg as he opened its lid and started to run in the warehouse, spreading kerosene everywhere.

In this warehouse, besides kerosene, there were some other materials such as food, timbers, weapons and military uniforms. Zhang Tie poured kerosene over all of them. After using up two buckets of kerosene, he used another two...

Until after pouring 10 buckets did Zhang Tie run outside of the warehouse.

"B*stards of Senel Clan, are you ready for the bonfire?" watching those tents in the center of the camp, Zhang Tie sneered as he triggered his lighter and threw it on the kerosene line.

As the flame of the kerosene line spread towards far, Zhang Tie hid in the dark once again.

...

2 minutes later, with a huge explosion, a fiery flame higher than 50 m rose from the place where the kerosene buckets were placed, which choked the entire camp.

"What's the matter?" a roar sounded from a tent in the center of the camp. At the same time, a member of Senel Clan rushed out of the tent.

At the sight of the flame over the warehouse, he instantly darted towards there.

Only after a few seconds, when he arrived there, the entire warehouse had started to burn. That person roared, "Have people put out the fire, hurry...". Soon after sending the order, that person released a punch, which instantly broke a pile of burning crates into pieces over 30 m away. After that, the flame outside the crates became smaller.

In a blink of an eye, other powerhouses arrived. Seeing such a big

fire, the entire camp became chaotic. Many people started to put out the fire.

There were so many fire sources in the warehouse. Fiery flames grew bigger and higher. Even those fireproof items had started to burn; especially those burning kerosene at the corner of the warehouse. It was so hot over there. Although being dozens of meters away, people could already not draw close to that place. All the tents closer to that place had been burned.

At this moment, those demonized puppets being frozen by binding chains had been burned into ashes. When they died, all the other demonized puppets across the camp uttered crazy shrieks.

After feeling the abnormal behavior of those demonized puppets, a middle-aged man who was putting out the fire was shocked at once as he seemingly realized something.

"Rouben, take a division of demonized puppets in line 1 m away from the camp and prevent those pariahs from making troubles here!"

"Yes, sir!" a strong powerhouse of Senel Clan left right away.

"Hughs, go to inspect the camp; maintain the order over there."

"Yes, sir!" another powerhouse of Senel Clan left with two hands.

"Bartee, safeguard the main tent with the other powerhouses of demonized puppets above LV 9. Send the warning right away if there's something wrong!"

"Yes, sir!"

"All the others put out the fire here as soon as possible with me..."

...

Hiding in the dark, Zhang Tie was shocked by this man's decisions in such a short period. Zhang Tie didn't know who was he; but he was sure that that person was a big figure as he could

command this demonized puppets corps and have those elites of Senel Clan follow his order.

Zhang Tie found that person's purple battle qi was rolling like waves when he sent the order. Any punch of him could put out a flame or break any burning item into pieces more than 30 m away. That was an unrivaled fighting strength. It was estimated that he was at least at the level of master Abyan. In front of such a person, Zhang Tie could not stand more than 10 seconds.

However, besides this person, there were some more people whose level was between 12 and 13, which was far greater than that of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie knew that, he could never beat them face to face.

Being limited to level, a LV 9 guy was not qualified to be proud in front of a corps, no matter how talented he was and how many wonderful experiences he had.

Through this point, Zhang Tie knew better about the power of Senel Clan. This clan might be more powerful than Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City.

Zhang Tie focused on the hooknosed guy called Cambo among those powerhouses and those people's shadows under the reflection of the high rising flames since the beginning. When those people of Senel Clan drilled out of their tents, Zhang Tie had already kept Cambo's tent in mind.

In that chaos, Zhang Tie sneaked in the tent of that guy called Cambo and waited for him to come back silently.

At this moment, the most dangerous place was the safest place.

Nobody could imagine that the fire-raiser was not in the camp, or breaking in the main tent which contained so many secrets or leading those human captives to rebel, but hiding in a tent near the center of the camp.

...

With the efforts of so many powerhouses in Senel Clan and tens of thousands of demonized puppets, the fiery fire was finally put out in 40 minutes. As a result, over 70% of materials in the warehouse had been burned into ashes. Additionally, hundreds of demonized puppets were burned to death.

After putting out the fiery fire, all the powerhouses of Senel Clan gathered in the main tent. Everyone felt that this fire was a bit weird.

"Rouben, what about the situation on your side? Have those pariahs dared stir up trouble here?"

"No, none of those pariahs dared to watch what happened here. After working for the whole day, many of them might be snoring like pigs. They don't know what happened at all!" Rouben sneered as he shook his head.

"What about you, Houghs?"

"Everything is normal in the camp. Besides those demonized puppets who became restless at the beginning, nothing special happened. "Houghs replied calmly with two swords on his back, "But dozens of demonized puppets who were responsible for safeguarding the warehouse have been burned to death. It's a bit weird."

"Nobody else entered the main tent. Everything is normal here." The guy called Bartee looked very grim. When he talked, a killing qi could be sensed.

After hearing these words, the middle-aged man frowned at once.

"Scala, do you think this event is related to those missing pariahs?" Cambo looked at the empty main seat in the main tent as a light flashed across his eyes. That position belonged to his father. Now, the one who was qualified to sit beside it was his elder brother, Scala. "In the future, that seat must belong to me." Cambo thought.

Scala also noticed the desiring look of Cambo as his mouth corners twitched once, "We can not reach such a conclusion now..." Scala denied Cambo's presumption right away while Cambo's hooknose looked a bit grim, "But I also feel what happened these couple of days are a bit weird. As the army chief is not here, we need to strengthen the patrolling force of the camp. Tomorrow, we have to have those pariahs find out that secret underground tunnel or ground crack. Additionally, the lost materials should be supplemented through the tunnel from the north as soon as possible."

After saying that, Scala watched Cambo, "Cambo, now that you feel the two events are related to each other, you're responsible for the investigation of the two cases since tomorrow. When the army chief comes back, you can report to him!"

"Yes, sir!"

"If there's nothing else, adjourn. Remember to do your own jobs well!"

When everybody left, Scala sneered towards their backs.

Rouben was complaining about his overreaction.

Houghs was tossing a problem.

Bartee was also mocking him for his overreaction.

Cambo wanted to make it more complex.

None of the four people were loyal to him. "So what? Don't they know that they have to depend on fist instead of mouth if they want to have a right of say in Senel Clan? As long as my level is higher than them, they are determined to be under my rule and follow my order for the rest of their lives."

"If you have a hard punch, you don't need to be clever. This is an ancestral proverb of Senel Clan. Have they forgotten about that? Additionally, are they really cleverer than me?"

...

After leaving the main tent, those members of Senel Clan exchanged a glance with each other before returning to their own tents.

Cambo looked grim as Scala was more tricky than he could imagine. If he did well what Scala ordered him to do, Scala would have a good reputation for using a good person. If not, Cambo would be regarded as incompetent and whimsical. What waited for him was nothing but mocks.

To be honest. What Cambo said just now was indeed intending to find trouble to Scala. However, he truly thought the two events might be linked to each other. Although no abnormal situation was found, it didn't mean there was no abnormal situation. It would be unreasonable if the fire was completely owed to be an accident. Because there were truly many doubtful points.

"Scala's performance was too calm just now. Why?"

Cambo was raving his mind; suddenly his heart raced. "Did Scala think that the fire-raiser was one of those in the main tent?"

"This...this is really possible..."

When he was filled with plots and tricks, Cambo came to the front of his tent. After opening it, he walked in...

Right then, a series of punches struck him with terrifying battle qi as destructive as a pile of hot blades. He had no time to dodge away anymore. Even though he was already LV 10, he had no time to make any response in front of such a sudden attack, especially when the punch had already touched his body.

In a split second, Zhang Tie had launched 7 punches on Cambo's throat, chest, heart and lower abdomen as fast as lightning bolts. Although the punches were silent, the first punch had already made a LV 10 strong fighter lose his ability to move and exclaim.

Cambo laid on the ground as soft as a pool of mud. However, he

didn't die. With his eyes widely opened, he watched this figure who looked like a pariah.

"Peh..." Zhang Tie squatted as he took up Cambo's sword from his back. After that, he stood up and drew the long sword out of the sheath.

"Did you use this sword to chop off that old man's limbs that day?"

Cambo could not utter any word. Opening his mouth, it seemed that he wanted to say "wait"...

Zhang Tie waved his sword, causing Cambo's head roll off his neck with an opened mouth. After catching this head and throwing his storage bag into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie disappeared in the dark once again...

Chapter 596: Animosity and Return

Two days later, all the powerhouses of Senel Clan were gathering on the bank of an underground lava river silently. The atmosphere was extremely depressive.

A tall and strong man in faintly grey hair and a suit of dusky golden armor was standing there and watching the head, which had run out of its fresh blood silently.

As this man didn't speak, all the others felt a great fear.

The man also had a very cruel and grim hooknose, which was as same as that of the head on the ground. However, the only difference was that one head was alive while the other was already dead. The dead head maintained an amazing look as it was faintly opening its mouth, seemingly wanting to say something.

"Can anyone tell me what happened?" the man turned around and watched the other members of Senel Clan with a calm look, "Why Cambo's head is here, but yours are still on your neck?"

Everyone felt a killing qi from his words. Rouben and the other guys then threw their glances at Scala. They were very jealous and admiring about the position of army chief assigned by Scala yesterday; however, now, they all felt lucky as they let out a deep sigh inside——thankfully, I'm not in that position.

Scala walked one step out of the crowd with a solemn look, "Cambo was assassinated in his tent. We found that he was assassinated yesterday; then we found his head here. I think dad has the right to see Cambo's miserable look after being assassinated, therefore, I let them protect the crime scene."

"Before Cambo was assassinated, the warehouse of the camp was on fire, causing a great loss. One day before he was assassinated, thousands of pariahs escaped away. After Cambo was assassinated, we found another 10,000 people were missing. All the missing

pariahs insisted on not eating human flesh. Another two slave supervisors are also missing. We've searched each corner and nook; however, nobody found their hiding place. We could not find any underground tunnel or secret underground space."

"As the agency army chief and Cambo's elder brother, I will shoulder the responsibility!"

After saying this, Scala lowered his head bashfully.

"You've not figured out what happened until now?" Koz asked icily.

"Yes!" Scala forced a word, "I just..."

Koz didn't speak. Before Scala accomplished his words, Koz had already punched onto his chest. Scala uttered a muffled harrumph as his chest armor had been broken into pieces completely. After being sent 20 m away, he started to spit out blood forcefully. Whereas, he still struggled to pick himself up from the ground and walked back.

Before Rouben and the other members of Senel Clan said anything, Koz had already slapped them, causing all of them spit out blood at the same time. Meanwhile, they were all sent flying backward.

After falling on the ground, they didn't even dare to utter a voice. After picking themselves up from the ground, they continued to walk back silently while lowering their heads.

Koz gazed at them with killing qi, "You are my most excellent sons. The one who will rule the Senel Clan in the future must be one of you. I only want to tell you, although jackals are ferocious, they won't kill their family members. The future of Senel Clan won't be limited in Titanic Douchy either, am I clear?"

They exchanged glances with each other before nodding at the same time.

Koz closed his eyes and opened them after a few seconds, "Gather

all the pariahs here, select one out of ten, regardless of age, and chop off their heads for Cambo's death!"

If this order was implemented, it meant that at least 10,000 people would be killed. However, someone executed it right away.

Koz then moved his eyes onto that head on the bank of the lava river with a dense sadness. "That person who killed Cambo must have some reason to take his head here. It seems like a sacrifice."

"What happened during the period I left the corps?"

"Cambo...Cambo...threw some pariahs into the lava river. Additionally, he chopped off a pariah's limbs to feed demonized puppets!" Scala panted.

"What?" Koz widely opened his eyes as if he wanted to eat people.

"I...I was also doubting that...maybe a powerful scout of the allied human forces have already found this place...the person who killed Cambo might be an outsider. When Cambo killed those pariahs, that human scout might be hiding among those pariahs. Additionally, given Cambo's wounds, it seemed being caused by a powerful battle qi..."

"Contact our moles in the allied human forces. If some human really had found this place, let me know who's that..." Koz gritted his teeth as his battle qi started to roll in spite of himself, "He dared kill my son, I will chop him into pieces."

...

Soon after that, the underground space was filled with human heads while a dense bloody smell started to suffuse the entire underground space...

...

Actually, Zhang Tie returned to the airship troop of Jinyun Country a bit later. Although he had already left that underground space in Misty Moon Woods yesterday, he came back today.

It was still heavily raining yesterday. In such a weather, Zhang Tie's glider could not fly off with the help of ascending airflow. When it became sunny today, Zhang Tie seized a strong ascending airflow nearby the hillside where he hid his glider and flew off.

After flying for several hours, Zhang Tie finally found the airship troop of Jinyun Country which was hovering in an airspace.

When they saw Zhang Tie's glider once again, many people in the airships cheered up. This time, Zhang Tie disappeared for 4 days, which made people worried about him.

Zhang Tie found Lan Yunxi's flagship airship. After flying around it for two circles, Zhang Tie sent a request to land on it. After that, Lan Yunxi's flagship airship adjusted its direction and speed along the wind direction. Meanwhile, a huge tuck net was released out of the bottom of the huge airship like catching fish.

Glider drivers described this process as falling into a tuck net.

This was indeed falling into a tuck net. No runway could be made for gliders on the airship. Therefore, the gliders could only return to the airship in this way. When they flew against the wind, they could slow down their gliders for the convenience of being captured by the huge tuck net.

If the glider driver was not excelled at driving, they might encounter various events when falling into the tuck net, such as crashing onto the airship, breaking the tuck net or directly dropping off the air due to a sudden deceleration. Therefore, to successfully fall into a tuck net became an important standard to test an excellent glider driver's driving skill.

However, although other glider drivers felt very nervous when they finished this process, it was as easy as drinking water for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie drove the glider into that tuck net rapidly and softly. Soon after the two crew members of the airship fixed the glider

with cable wires and hooks, Zhang Tie had already climbed out of the glider. At the same time, he erected his thumb towards the two crew members in goggles. After that, he climbed up by the net.

After returning to the airship, Zhang Tie directly headed for the airship command module where Lan Yunxi was in.

Lan Yunxi was discussing at a chart table with the other commission officers. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi let out a deep sigh remarkably.

"It's nice to see you back!"

Watching Lan Yunxi's relaxed look, Zhang Tie felt warm inside as he also responded with a smile. Soon after that, he changed his face, "I've got a major information to report to General Lan".

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, other commission officers and other people in the command module exchanged glances with each other before leaving the command module silently. When the last person left, he even closed the door.

According to the requirement on keeping confidentiality in the army, if Zhang Tie was going to report major information to Lan Yunxi alone, the others are not qualified to listen to it. Therefore, they had to leave out of here in this case.

Seeing Zhang Tie's solemn look, Lan Yunxi's face turned solemn too.

"Have you found the trace of the demonized puppets corps?"

After hearing Lan Yunxi's question, Zhang Tie didn't speak; instead, he directly came to Lan Yunxi's side and pointed at a location on the map with his finger.

"They are here."

Watching that location, Lan Yunxi frowned, "I've already dispatched airships over here these days; however, we have no any discovery."

"That demonized puppets corps is not above ground; they are in an underground space. An entrance to the underground space is here."

"Ah? Underground?" Lan Yunxi revealed an amazing look, "What are they doing there?"

Zhang Tie drew two lines on the south and the north of that point, "They plan to break through an underground tunnel so as to pass Selnes Human defense line. Starting from this point, the northern part of this tunnel had been linked with the Titanic Douchy while its southern part had been broken through dozens of kilometers. Once this tunnel passed human's defense line in Selnes..."

Zhang Tie didn't need to say the rest words as Lan Yunxi had realized the outcome. She drew in a deep breath as her face turned extremely solemn at once.

"Have you entered that tunnel?"

"Yes!" Zhang Tie then told Lan Yunxi what he had learned about in that underground space. Of course, he didn't mention that he had saved over 20,000 human captives out of that underground space. In the holy war, nobody would be interested in studying why 20,000-30,000 human captives of hundreds of thousands of human captives in total disappeared after being driven into the underground space.

"I have to report this event to the alliance command. The move plan of Jinyun Country's airship troop should also be altered..." Lan Yunxi said with an absolute certainty. After that, she went to a voice conducting pipe and sent an order, "This is Lan Yunxi, notice all the main commission officers, this move is canceled. All the airships returned to the base. Flagship airship heads for Mocco City..."

After sending the order, Lan Yunxi walked back and glanced over Zhang Tie seriously. After being silent for a few seconds, she said,

"Next time...you'd better not enter that dangerous place alone, okay?"

Zhang Tie instantly put his hand on Lan Yunxi's waist, "You're concerning about me?"

Lan Yunxi's face blushed as she instantly looked aside.

Zhang Tie moved her head back as he forcefully kissed her lips.

...

The war in Selnes Theater of Operations continued. After accomplishing the reconnaissance of Misty Moon Woods, Zhang Tie returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress with the airship troop of Jinyun Country. They had a few days of holiday once again. They had to take a rest after executing a high-intensity task in the air over 10 days. No airship troop could stand long-time flight.

Zhang Tie didn't need to concern about how human alliance command would deal with that demonized puppets corps of Senel Clan which was hiding in the underground space. It was out of his ability. Someone would naturally work out how to deal with such a huge demonized puppets corps and their plot to pass the Selnes human defense line. Some human troops would fight that demonized puppets corps and prevent demons' plot for sure. Zhang Tie only needed to do his best when necessary. As a LV 9 guy, Zhang Tie didn't need to consider too much about that.

What shocked Zhang Tie most during this reconnaissance task were the cruelty of the Three-eye Association and the miserable fate of those human captives.

Therefore, Zhang Tie started to cultivate crazily. He wanted to accomplish the gold seed planting process of "King Roc Sutra" as soon as possible.

When in cultivation, Zhang Tie even forgot about time. He entered a mechanical circulation of battle and rest—task—cultivation—task—cultivation...

Chapter 597: Breaking Through the Bottleneck (I)

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

In the following months, although Zhang Tie didn't participate in the battles in the Misty Moon Woods, he had heard about the allied human forces' method and the progress of the warfare over there.

What Zhang Tie hadn't imagined was that the measure adopted by allied human forces to deal with demons' plot would be so simple. They dispatched a corps of fewer than 100,000 people into the Misty Moon Woods. The corps was the well-known Jungle's Leopard Corps from Barl, the country of the jungle.

This corps was the most powerful corps-level jungle combat troop in Selnes Theater of Operations. They could play a great role in the Misty Moon Woods.

It was said that this corps could fight for over 1 year in the jungle without any supplies.

Zhang Tie even started to doubt that the task might be specially prepared by the human alliance command for this jungle leopard corps.

Although the jungle leopard corps entered the Misty Moon Woods, they didn't enter the underground space. Only one female entered the underground space. She was a voodoo pharmacist, the rarest advanced profession among pharmacists.

It was so rare that Zhang Tie even didn't hear about it before. They excelled at refining various poisons and killing people in various secret methods as the darkest existence among pharmacists. If common pharmacists could serve as doctors part-time, voodoo pharmacists were totally aiming at destroying lives.

After the voodoo pharmacist left the underground space, that

demonized puppets corps of Senel Clan had to leave the underground space too.

Because the only water source of the underground space had been contaminated by the severe poison released by the voodoo pharmacist. There were also various fatal poisons in those closed underground tunnels which had been excavated by human captives. Even demonized puppets could not stand that, not to mention human captives.

In the words of the "Holy War News", that voodoo pharmacist turned the entire underground space into a "huge poisonous vat", including those underground tunnels which were excavated by the demonized puppets corps. In the next decade, demons would not organize the same thing again.

The underground space was in a special environment. Even the largest water source was an underground lake. Additionally, the air flow condition was poor over there. Although there were great differences between the underground space and that above ground on many aspects, it was really great to destroy the demons' plot with only one person's strength.

Compared to what meritorious deed Zhang Tie had made, this was also a very exciting and inspiring achievement. Therefore, the human alliance command delivered the second order of commendation to her and rewarded the voodoo pharmacist with the honor "Selnes Snake".

Although commoners disliked snakes, voodoo pharmacists really regarded any honor with word snake as a reward.

Additionally, besides being very mysterious, that voodoo pharmacist was a woman called Tirsyris.

A woman obtained an honor in Selnes Theater of Operations and aborted the plot of a demonized puppets corps. This aroused shock across the theater of operations at once. Many people started to match her contributions with that of Zhang Tie.

With one more hero, the others' confidence rocketed once again. They seemed to be seeing the twilight of victory. However, for Zhang Tie, the tough battle had just begun.

Since June, with the arrival of the long-term rainy forest of summer in Selnes, Zhang Tie's responsibilities became heavier. In July, August and September, the times that Zhang Tie executed tasks by glider and the period that he lasted in the air refreshed the entire Selnes Theatre of Operations.

In the same period, the confrontations and battles between wing demon troops and human airship troops grew fiercer across the Selnes Theater of Operations.

During the three months, human airship troops lost over 1400 airships, whereas, human airship troops also broke through demons' air defense line many times and seized the opportunity to make a large-scale air strike towards the northern regions under the rule of demons, which caused a severe blow to some demonized puppets corps.

In July, under a delicate plan, Lan Yunxi's airship troop abruptly entered the airspace of the collapsed Titanic Duchy and raided Erie, a major city in the south of Titanic Douchy under the rule of demons. As a result, the entire city was destroyed along with a large batch of military materials being stored in Erie by the demons' corps in the frontline. Additionally, a demonized puppets corps in Erie suffered casualties numbering at least 200,000.

Since the confrontation between allied human forces and demons in Selnes Theatre of Operations, this was a rare overwhelming triumph of human airship troop and the first time for a human troop to destroy a city under the rule of demons. The successful air strike being named "Double-Arc Move" by Lan Yunxi also made her one of the most brilliant generals across the Selnes Theatre of Operations.

Both parties had made triumphs in the air and on the ground in

the three months.

Zhang Tie mainly executed his tasks in the sky. Over the past three months, Zhang Tie found the wing demons became more difficult to deal with. He was gradually losing his advantage in fighting wing demons by glider in the sky.

Now, he could rarely meet a wing demon in the sky or directly met a troop of wing demons. After killing a common wing demon, he would soon become the target of LV 11 wing demons in the troop of wing demons and be chased by them.

Zhang Tie met the latter situation once. It was very risky. In order to dodge from that LV 11 wing demon, he directly dove into a big river with the glider.

This was because a LV 11 wing demons' fighting strength and speed had made Zhang Tie's javelins ineffective.

That time, Zhang Tie was injured. Additionally, he lost a glider. Thankfully, he returned to the Crystal Battle Fortress. After returning to the Crystal Battle Fortress, Zhang Tie made a serious analysis about this battle and finally reached a conclusion, 'It seems to be tricky in the air from now on.'

Zhang Tie knew that his events and name must have been known by the management of demonized puppets corps. Additionally, wing demons had already worked out the method to deal with him based on his ability——average LV 9 and LV 10 wing demons would descend at the sight of him and escape along the direction of the air flow based on their agility in the air. They could soon dodge his attacks and hunt in this way. However, high-level wing demons, at the sight of him would immediately rush forward to kill him.

In such a situation, although Zhang Tie increased his frequency to execute tasks, he could hunt fewer and fewer wing demons over three months. From the beginning of July to the end of September, Zhang Tie hunted less than 10 wing demons in total. However, he almost lost his life many times in the air.

As the number of wing demons that he could hunt decreased sharply, the fruit of source of wing demons that Zhang Tie had desired for a long time still wasn't ripe. Therefore, his military exploits on the Military Exploits Rankings remained unchanged. At the same time, the military exploits of the other elites from six clans started to rocket, causing a fiercer competition on the Military Exploits Rankings in Crystal Battle Fortress.

This was the upper limit that a LV 9 fighter could reach. Like the border between stratosphere and troposphere, it separated two worlds. Zhang Tie felt that he had already reached the bottleneck. Only those above LV 10 could enter the world above this ceiling.

If he didn't break through this ceiling, Zhang Tie knew that he could hardly change such a situation. He would still be chased by LV 11 wing demons in the sky. Those b*stards of Three-eye Association could still casually arrange some killers in the illegal demon hunters market so that he dared not wander in the market casually. This was an urgent survival crisis caused by a low level of power.

Because of this bottleneck and survival crisis, Zhang Tie started to cultivate harder. As long as he was free, he would enter cultivation. He dared not waste any time.

When Zhang Tie proceeded to the first step of the "King Roc Sutra"—planting a golden seed in the Shrine, he constantly strengthened and consolidated his fighting strength and basic fighting skills in all aspects.

In the three months, Zhang Tie obtained 11 iron-body fruits after being beaten by his crew members crazily. Benefiting from those iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie felt that his bones were growing more compact and harder. Additionally, his muscle fibers were growing stronger and more resilient, which could provide a greater explosive force and bear greater resistance. Even his innards had become more stable while being filled with vigorous and agile vitality. Zhang Tie gradually felt that there was an invisible,

powerful protective film over those organs.

What was more unimaginable was that Zhang Tie's skin had become better as it looked as shiny as jade, which looked very pleasant and noble.

Chapter 598: Breaking Through the Bottleneck (II)

Benefited from the leakless fruits, Zhang Tie had improved greatly on physical strength and the other aspects. In the trouble-reappearance situations, Zhang Tie's iron-blood fist and various fighting skills were further improved.

Before coming to the Selnes Theater of Operations for the second time, Zhang Tie's marks in shadow demon cell were 6,6,10, namely surviving 6 seconds in shadow demon cell, being collapsed 6 times physically and activating shadow demon cell 10 times.

In August, Zhang Tie had made a great progress in fighting data in shadow demon cell when he came to Selnes Theater of Operations for the second time.

7,9,11, the latest marks of Zhang Tie. He could survive over 7 seconds in shadow demon cell, sustain collapse 9 times consecutively in the trouble-reappearance situation and activate shadow demon cell 11 times after several months' hard cultivation.

In October, the rainy season of Selnes Plain had passed when the autumn flavor started to cover this land full of flames and smoke of war.

Autumn was the season of harvest after sprouting and brilliance.

Zhang Tie also made a harvest in this season. Since he obtained 'Robust Ox Skill', the incomplete version of 'King Roc Sutra' on June 11th, he would finally finish planting the golden seed in his Shrine after over 100 days.

On the evening of October 4th, Zhang Tie was sitting on the bed in the Captain's room of the Idiots with his legs crossed.

Since he returned to the base by the Idiots on October 2nd, Zhang Tie had been in the Captain's room. All the crew members knew that Zhang Tie was in cultivation; therefore, nobody disturbed

him.

In the Shrine surging point, that huge golden egg had been covered with dense classic, feather-like runes. There were totally 986 runes over it.

The last rune was like a rotating spiral with a beautiful tail. The moment Zhang Tie completely manifested the last rune on the top of the golden egg using his spiritual energy and battle qi had he felt relaxed all over. After that, before letting out a sigh, Zhang Tie had quivered all over. In Zhang Tie's mind, the Shrine surging point started to rock heavily.

When the Shrine surging point vibrated, the golden egg which was covered with 987 mysterious runes started to float and emit out colorful, brilliant lights, making the entire Shrine surging point as bright as an imperial palace. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie's lower abdomen became as warm as a thermos flask.

Its color changed from red to orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple...

These colorful lights appeared alternatively. They seemed penetrating through the Shrine surging point as they started to brighten everywhere inside Zhang Tie's body. Zhang Tie started to feel that his body became as transparent as glass as his flesh, blood, bones, veins and organs gradually disappeared, causing his body void inside and outside and pretty pure. As the golden egg alternatively changed its color, Zhang Tie's body became a huge, solemn and sacred piece of glaze.

In such a nice feeling and realm, Zhang Tie suddenly heard a groundbreaking chirp. At the same time, the golden egg broke into pieces and emitted out bright colorful lights. After that, 987 runes started to float from the golden egg and converged in the air. Finally, a huge bird completely composed of lights whose look was blurrily manifested in the Shrine.

Although it was virtual, at the sight of the bird, Zhang Tie felt an

indescribable, powerful energy and qi which could destroy the universe. He almost knelt down for that out of worship.

That huge bird composed of lights flapped its wings as a light feather fell off its body and flew out of the Shrine. It finally landed on a place inside Zhang Tie's body...

The huge bird constantly flapped its wings as light features constantly flew out of his Shrine and headed for everywhere inside his body...

In the end, Zhang Tie felt that the inside of his body was covered with the lights feature from that huge bird.

The huge bird chirped loudly for four times...

When it chirped for the first time, Zhang Tie felt his body was as massive as land.

When it chirped for the second time, Zhang Tie felt his body was as dynamic as water.

When it chirped for the third time, Zhang Tie felt as light as wind.

When it chirped for the fourth time, Zhang Tie felt as hot as fire.

After four chirps, Zhang Tie obtained a greater mass, a more agile body, a broader sense of space and a great passion.

Finally, the four elements and feelings mixed with each other and filled Zhang Tie's empty body once again like coloring a painting. Zhang Tie then felt the existence of his blood, flesh, bones and organs and felt his heart beating and blood running once again.

At this moment, the heart beats sounded like a giant hammering a battle drum.

Additionally, the sound of the running blood in Zhang Tie's vessels was also like a jubilant brook.

The sounds of battle drums and running brook resonated in Zhang Tie's body, bringing him a new, strange feeling. How blood

flew over spine was like how brook flew over the mountain ridge. Resonating in his chest, the heart beats were like sonorous and elegant songs in the serene valley. Being combined with his innards, they performed a delicate piece of music.

Livers, heart, spleen, lungs and kidneys; green, red, yellow, white and black; 1,2,3,5,6 (musical notes); wood, fire, soil, gold and water; fury, hatred, complaint, angry and boredom...

Zhang Tie had never had such a feeling before. He seemed having enlightened something. He felt having everything, including the mountains, rivers, stars and universe.

When the true feelings recovered, Zhang Tie finally woke up and opened his eyes.

He was still sitting in the Captain's room of Idiots. However, one night had already passed. He saw the twilight of dawn through the closed window. However, he was spirited like having recuperated several days as he felt flying in the air.

Zhang Tie looked inside his body as he almost dropped off his tears.

At this moment, all the invisible surging points had manifested in his senses clearly. Like clearing off the clouds and seeing the sun, each surging point was an energy core in his body. They spread in Zhang Tie's body like 987 stars. Besides 34 surging points on his spine, all the other 953 surging points had manifested themselves.

At this moment, all the 987 runes of 'King Roc Sutra' that he spent almost 100 days to visualize reappeared. Each rune matched each surging point. The image of runes clearly appeared in the cores of those surging points.

Of the 34 surging points on his spine which had been lit, the 34 runes were as brilliant as flames. Comparatively, the runes in the

953 invisible surging points which had not been lit looked a bit dark.

From then on, the gate from LV 10 to LV 16 opened to Zhang Tie completely.

At the same moment, Zhang Tie indeed felt the power and the terror of the emperor-level secret knowledge. Soon after he finished planting the golden seed in his Shrine had all the invisible surging points in his body been completely manifested. That was too marvelous.

Although Zhang Tie had not cultivated other secret knowledge, he had already heard about the cultivation effects of the other secret knowledge in these couple of months. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, even the Zhang Clan's 'Breaking Sun Sutra' could not manifest invisible surging points until later phase. Some viscount-level or baron-level secret knowledge would cost the cultivator more time to manifest invisible surging points. Some of them even needed the coordination between outside force and medicine to manifest invisible surging points.

However, soon after you planted the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in your Shrine, you would manifest all the invisible surging points. What Zhang Tie needed to do was to light all the invisible surging points one after another and witnessed the nirvana.

"Powerful, that's too powerful. What an emperor-level secret knowledge!"

Perhaps this is the realm of this sutra. The one who cultivated the 'King Roc Sutra' would be like a King Roc. As long as it stretched its wings, it would break through air and clouds. In a split second, it would pass tens of thousands miles as there were only stars in its eyes. No obstacles existed anymore. The road in the front would be clear and the road in the back would turn into dust under the feet.

In the Shrine surging point, the golden egg had completely

disappeared. The one being left in the Shrine was only a brilliant King Roc Seed Rune, which had been a stick of spiritual feature.

Now that it was 'King Roc Sutra', the method to light surging points would not be as stupid as before. That stick of spiritual feather was the key to cultivate 'King Roc Sutra' and light those invisible surging points.

Although Zhang Tie wanted to rush in Castle of Black Iron, burning that stick of spiritual feather with those leakless fruits which were accumulating in Castle of Black Iron for a long time, and promote to LV 10 in the fastest speed, more haste, less speed. Because he had just broken through an important pass after cultivating for many days, he needed to take a rest.

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie got off the bed, opened the door of Captain's Room and walked outside.

At this moment, it was early morning. As it was a holiday break, besides some people on duty and some guards, most of the crew members on the Idiots had not woken up.

It was a nice weather today. Zhang Tie came to the deck of the airship and found the sun had just come out of the horizon, tinting the eastern sky and the entire Selnes Plain into golden color.

"After planting the golden seed in the Shrine, it was all clear in front of his eyes. There were no more mountains in front of his eyes from then on."

A line flashed across Zhang Tie's mind as Zhang Tie felt extremely heroic. He felt very bright in front of his eyes. The sense of depression and frustration that had accumulated in his mind for several months disappeared in a second. Demons? Three-eye Association? F*ck you...

Chapter 599: Beating Training and Promotion

The kitchen of the Idiots opened only when the airship landed on the ground. By then, crew members might have a hot meal in the kitchen. When the Idiots executed tasks in the air, no matter how long would the tasks last, no open fire was allowed across the airship except for the boiler in the engine room which was under strict control. During the process of executing tasks, crew members could only eat dried rations and preserved food.

In such case, whenever the airship landed for supply, the kitchen would always be crowded with people, like today.

However, the situation today was a bit different than before. Although the crew members were eating, they were all focused on old John, the chef of the Idiots who trotted between the kitchen and the dining hall.

Old John was very excited. As long as old John became excited, his nose would turn red. Today, old John's nose was as red as a made-up clown.

Of course, the one who could make this chef of a 5-star hotel so busy was the captain of the Idiots.

As the captain was always busy, he rarely ate in the dining hall. Even though he came here, he would finish the meal and leave rapidly. It was said that old John even complained about that before; today, old John became very excited and diligent.

The one who was more attractive than old John in the dining hall was Zhang Tie. At this moment, Zhang Tie's table had been covered with so many plates. What he ate was more than that of three tough guys in the airship. Additionally, he was still eating. It seemed that he wouldn't feel full.

All the crew members didn't find that their captain had such a

good appetite until now.

"Hurry, give me a way, give me a way..." old John shouted loudly, scaring away some crew members who were queuing up to fill dish far away. Lifting a plate, he trotted all the way in front of Zhang Tie as he lowered his body and served that plate on the table in front of Zhang Tie. After that, he unveiled the cover of the dish and said, "Captain, try this one, golden roasted fish. This is my best dish when I served as a chef in Cyrink Empire. It took me half an hour to cook this dish..."

When the cover was unveiled, everyone in the surroundings smelt an alluring aroma. Many people started to raise their nose to sniff.

When old John was introducing his 'well-known dish' to Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to pick up the golden roasted fish and engulf it. As Zhang Tie's teeth were as hard as steel, he soon ate up the entire dish.

Until he ate up that golden roasted fish did Zhang Tie find old John was staring at him like being wronged.

"What?" Zhang Tie asked with an amazed look.

"Erm...captain, you forgot to paste my sauce on it. Golden roasted fish tastes better with sauce!" old John looked like how an artist watched a bricklayer spoiling the first-class painting.

"Ah? Is that real?" after saying that, Zhang Tie saw a saucer of sauce beside that plate. He then revealed a bashful smile, "I will try. Hope it's not late..."

Zhang Tie replied as he poured that saucer of sauce into his mouth and engulfed them at once. After that, he smacked his lips twice, "Hmm, it really tastes good. Well done!"

Old John widely opened his mouth. This was his first time to see someone eat golden roasted fish in this way. However, he revealed a happy smile, "There's one more dish in the kitchen. Wait for a

second, I will serve it to you..."

After saying that, old John ran jubilantly towards the kitchen.

Zhang Tie didn't know why he had such a good appetite today. Even though he didn't eat food for a couple of days when in cultivation, his appetite was still out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Zhang Tie felt that he could eat at least twice the food of that before.

After planting the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in the Shrine, Zhang Tie felt so hungry. This was indeed out of Zhang Tie's imagination. However, Zhang Tie also knew that great hunger represented a sharply increasing demand for energy and digestive ability. This seemed to be one of the changes that his body had experienced after planting the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in his Shrine.

There were some more changes that Zhang Tie didn't know how to describe. He didn't find these changes at the beginning. After planting the golden seed of 'King Roc Sutra' in Shrine for over 1 hour, he gradually adapted to the changes.

Zhang Tie found his body became lighter.

Zhang Tie thought that he lost his weight at first. He especially weighed himself on a scale; however, his weight remained unchanged. It was still 79 kg. As a result, he found that his fast moving skill was much improved. He could move in a more agile way. Sometimes, Zhang Tie felt being as light as a stick of feather.

Besides being more agile, Zhang Tie found his strength also increased by 10%, which really shocked him.

In legends, when roc was a super magical beast which ate dragons like eating earthworms. It was said that when dragons saw roc, they would be too scared to move. A roc would eat 500 young dragons and a king dragon a day. Additionally, this magical beast was as long as thousands of miles. After flapping its wings once, it

could travel 80,000 miles at a super fast speed. To drive such a huge body, its strength was of course extremely terrifying.

Thinking of his great appetite and those improvements in his body, Zhang Tie realized that these were benefited from 'King Roc Sutra' for sure. As for such an emperor-level secret knowledge which had manifested a great effect since he planted the golden seed in his Shrine, Zhang Tie could say nothing but praise.

Zhang Tie started to become more desiring about the effects after LV 10. Only from the name 'Robust Ox Skill', Zhang Tie had realized that this 'King Roc Sutra' would bring him a great strength for sure in the process of promoting to LV 10, If not, those people would never name this incomplete version of 'King Roc Sutra' as 'Robust Ox Skill', with which, they could only promote to LV 10.

When old John served a fish-flavored shredded pork with Chinese characters, Zhang Tie ate another two bowls of rice and drunk another two bowls of soup. Finally, facing the satisfactory smile of old John, Zhang Tie felt that he was almost full.

...

After eating the breakfast and resting for a short while, Zhang Tie started his beating training.

This beating training had become the most boisterous scene in the airship base of the Crystal Battle Fortress since it started. Whenever Zhang Tie prepared to be beaten, he would instantly be surrounded by a lot of common fighters in the Crystal Battle Fortress and the airship base.

"Ah? Our Selnes Eagle is ready to be beaten once again..."

As someone exclaimed outside the Idiots. Soon after Zhang Tie and those crew members got off the Idiots had they been surrounded by many guys who were rubbing their hands with glittering eyes.

Zhang Tie didn't know why those guys were so positive until the

first mate of the Idiots explained it to him.

"When they have a chance to beat Selnes Eagle, it sounds great! Later on, even if they leave Selnes Theater of Operations, when someone asks them what is the coolest thing that they've done in Selnes Theater of Operations, they will swear that they've beaten Selnes Eagle many times. Additionally, he never dared to fight back. How cool!"

After hearing such a reason, Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. However, Zhang Tie knew that was real. If he was still a small figure in Blackhot City, he would do this too so as to show off back in the home.

However, Zhang Tie didn't mind that. After being familiar with everyone, each beating training was like playing with friends. He didn't have any mental burden at all.

After several months' beating training, Zhang Tie's strike-resistance ability gradually improved. Gradually, Zhang Tie posed new requirements on those people who beat him. They were requested to attack him with clubs and wooden sticks. Those weapons were made of longan wood and ashwood which were not too hard.

Zhang Tie had tried that. On the premise of not using battle qi, when the longan wood and ashwood were broken on his body, it was just close to the attack limit that he could stand without any injuries. This was a sort of protection to himself; by doing this, those guys could fully enjoy themselves. Additionally, he could perceive the best training effect in this way.

"Fine, as you've waited for this chance for several days, you can beat me now!" Zhang Tie stood in the middle of the training center in a training velvet, a pair of military pants and a pair of training leather shoes. The moment he opened his mouth had the others burst out into laughter.

"Zhang Tie, when it's my turn, can I have people take a photo for

us?" a guy kidded with Zhang Tie.

"Of course, but my portraiture right is very expensive. You have to pay 100 gold coins for each photo with me." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, followed by the others soldiers once again.

Zhang Tie then waved his hands towards them as 7 guys in clubs and wooden sticks instantly swarmed up and ferociously struck Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't fight back. In a split second, some clubs were hacked on his body...

At this moment, Lan Yunxi and a man with the rank of major general walked over there. Standing outside the crowd, they were watching the training between Zhang Tie and those fighters.

That man only watched Zhang Tie being beaten several seconds before drawing a mouth of cold breath. Those innocent people thought that Zhang Tie was just dodging from being beaten; however, in the eyes of powerhouses like the major general, Zhang Tie's training pattern really shocked him...

Chapter 600: A New Task

Translator: WQL Editor: EbonyFrost

Zhang Tie was surrounded by 7 people, all of which were average soldiers below LV 6. Although they were not powerhouses, they had very rich fighting experiences. They attacked Zhang Tie's different parts ferociously in different attacking frequencies. As Zhang Tie could not fight back, Zhang Tie had a very limited space to move.

However, in the limited space, Zhang Tie's performance was really shocking in the process of being beaten by clubs and wooden sticks.

Commoners might not figure out Zhang Tie's intention, however, in the eyes of that powerhouse who watched that together with Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie was unconsciously controlling the attacking frequencies by moving his feet. Furthermore, he even chose where to be beaten.

Through Zhang Tie's movements in the limited space, the parts of Zhang Tie's body which would be beaten by those weapons were not determined by those soldiers, but by Zhang Tie.

After a short while, the major general found that a soldier had attacked Zhang Tie 8 times consecutively, each time on a different part like hindneck, left shoulder, right shoulder, lower abdomen, forebreast and arm.

In the end, that person's stick fell on the subscapular position of Zhang Tie's left shoulder.

The same to all the other soldiers.

An average LV 9 fighter could easily realize this when facing a LV 5 or LV 6 soldier's attack. However, Zhang Tie faced 7 soldiers.

That meant that Zhang Tie had to judge 7 opponents' attacking speeds, locations and constantly change his movements so as to

have the disorderly attacks develop according to his own will at each second.

As those soldiers could attack several times a second, actually, Zhang Tie had to deal with over 10 attacks from all directions each second.

Those soldiers who attacked Zhang Tie didn't change. But Zhang Tie changed, causing everything change.

Additionally, Zhang Tie's movements were not from advanced secret knowledge. After watching it carefully, the major found that Zhang Tie had five kinds of footsteps, namely bow step, sliding step, side step, jumping step and quick short step. However, the five basic footsteps became marvelous under Zhang Tie's foot. Even though soldiers who attacked Zhang Tie had not found that Zhang Tie didn't even move his hand through the entire process. However, their attacking frequencies had been regulated and controlled by Zhang Tie's footsteps.

Controlling the opponents' attacking frequencies with changing footsteps?

In such a relaxed state?

Such an ability could only be described as terrifying.

...

"Ah, don't beat my face. Are you jealous about my handsome face..."

...

"Buddy, even though I want you to beat me, you cannot knock that place with your stick, that's my heirloom!"

...

While being beaten, Zhang Tie was still joking with his partners. A lot of onlookers burst out laughter. Some soldiers, when tired, would be replaced by another one at once.

Lan Yunxi realized the difference between Zhang Tie and her while watching him playing jokes with those soldiers while being beaten by them.

She couldn't do this. Nobody in Hidden Dragon Palace could do this, not to mention her. None of the fighters above LV 9 in the Crystal Battle Fortress could do it. However, Zhang Tie made it although having won an honor in Selnes Theatre of Operations.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, he indeed treated these commoners as the same as him. No matter what to do with these people, he would neither feel embarrassed nor feel being humiliated about that. Instead, he could enjoy it.

Although she would not discriminate against these commoners, she knew that she was different from these people. She knew it since she was young. Perhaps no high-level fighter or guy with a bright future who had awakened their ancestral bloodline would feel as same as these commoners, except for Zhang Tie.

This was also the biggest difference between Zhang Tie and all the others.

For the sake of those strange commoners, he even violated clan regulations and suffered in Heavens Cold City.

Here, he was enjoying being a human flesh bag of those commoners.

Idiot!

Lan Yunxi sighed inside. At the sight of Zhang Tie's jubilant look which had not been seen in recent months, Lan Yunxi's looked also turned mild.

Zhang Tie had long noticed Lan Yunxi and the man in a major's military uniform. The moment Zhang Tie glanced at that man's military uniform had he knew that there was trouble.

However, Zhang Tie didn't stop. He kept training until oozing all over. When he felt okay, he finally stopped and walked towards

Lan Yunxi and that man.

Seeing Zhang Tie stop, the other soldiers exchanged glances with each other and knew that Zhang Tie had something to deal with, therefore, they all left.

"Senior sister apprentice Lan!" Zhang Tie came to the front of the two people.

"This is Ford, major general of the alliance command." Lan Yunxi introduced the man to Zhang Tie.

"Nice to meet you." that man reached out of his hand before Zhang Tie gave a salute to him, "I've long heard about the name of Selnes Eagle. Nice to meet you!"

Zhang Tie then shook hands with that man, "Major general, what can I do for you?"

After looking around, major general suggested, "Let's change locations."

"Fine, let's talk about it in my airship."

Zhang Tie then invited the two people into the airship.

...

After making a cup of tea for Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi, and the major general, the crew member left, leaving the three of them in the command module.

Major general watched Zhang Tie for a second before getting straight to the topic.

"There are some new situations about the demons' occupied zone in the north, which made the alliance command very concerned." The major general threw a glance at Zhang Tie. "If we don't confirm it and obtain some information in time, the human's defense line in Selnes might collapse in a very short time."

Lan Yunxi might have already known about this. Therefore, after listening to major general Ford's words, she didn't look too

amazed, instead, she just faintly frowned.

"What's that?" Zhang Tie turned solemn.

"Demons might produce demonized puppets in a large scale in the occupied zone in the north. Many people could not escape out of the collapse zone in time. Therefore, most of them might have been killed and become demonized puppets. Now we're facing 2 or 3 millions of demonized puppets. In the future, we might face 20-30 millions of demonized puppets, even above 30 million. Do you know what that means?"

If we had to face 20-30 millions of demonized puppets, Zhang Tie knew that the Selnes defense line would collapse for sure. Demons only needed to dispatch all of those demonized puppets here. They would beat the allied human forces of 5-6 million people. Now, the most important reason for Selnes human defense line to sustain was that the human forces outnumbered the demonized puppets. As long as this advantage was lost, even though humans had air superiority in a short time, it was still meaningless.

Because airships had to land on the ground sooner or later. Additionally, airships' air-to-ground striking ability was limited.

After being silent for a few seconds, Zhang Tie asked, "Doesn't it take a puppet worm egg of a parent worm a long time to hatch after entering a person's body? How come demons cultivate so many demonized puppets in the occupied zone so fast?"

"It was true in the 2nd holy war. It took demons at least 6 years to occupy a place before obtaining a demonized puppets corps. But it's different now." The Major General watched Zhang Tie with a worrying look. "We got some intelligence. Demons might have already mastered a new ability, with which, they could realize the large-scale production of parent puppet worms. Additionally, they could stimulate humans being infected by parent puppet worms to turn into demonized puppets in a very short period."

As Major General Ford said this, he took out of a photo from his

suitcase and placed it in front of Zhang Tie, "We obtained this photo at a great cost."

Zhang Tie looked over the photo.

That photo was taken in the evening. The photographer was a bit farther from the target. Therefore, the photo looked a bit blurry. However, Zhang Tie recognized a huge pyramid-sized object in the photo. However, it was not a pyramid, because pyramids were made of stones. It looked more like a mountain of flesh, which was covered with dense holes like honeycombs while disgusting mucus flew out of the holes.

There were numerous humans below that object, who were queuing up and moving into that dark huge entrance of that pyramid-sized object like walking dead.

At the sight of this photo, Zhang Tie felt chilly as goosebumps formed all over his back.

...

Table of Contents

[Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 501: The Tribal Axis Plan](#)

[Chapter 502: Leaving the Ice and Snow Wilderness](#)

[Chapter 503: Returning to Kalur](#)

[Chapter 504: A Dramatic Encounter](#)

[Chapter 505: Gain and Loss](#)

[Chapter 506: I'm Back](#)

[Chapter 507: The Current Situation](#)

[Chapter 508: A Surprise](#)

[Chapter 509: A Visit to the Headquarters of the No. 39 Division](#)

[Chapter 510: A Strategic Material](#)

[Chapter 511: Gifts](#)

[Chapter 512: A Sacred Contract](#)

[Chapter 513: Withering Roses](#)

[Chapter 514: God Blessing Brotherhood](#)

[Chapter 515: The Best](#)

[Chapter 516: See You, Blackhot City](#)

[Chapter 517: The Arrival of the Airship](#)

[Chapter 518: Picking up People](#)

[Chapter 519: A Brave Jump](#)

[Chapter 520: Sneaking in Abyan's Castle](#)

[Chapter 521: Killing the Enemy with One Punch](#)

[Chapter 522: The Real Status of Master Abyan](#)

[Chapter 523: The Holy War Broke out](#)

[Chapter 524: Three Years](#)

[Chapter 525: The Price of Being a Pure Human](#)

[Chapter 526: Heller's Humor](#)

[Chapter 527: Humans Catastrophe](#)

[Chapter 528: Shadow Demon's Backroom](#)

[Chapter 529: Men to the North](#)

[Chapter 530: Condemned Prisoners](#)

[Chapter 531: A Miserable Encounter](#)

[Chapter 532: The First Battle](#)

[Chapter 533: Arriving at the Theater of Operations](#)

[Chapter 534: Becoming an Idol](#)

[Chapter 535: Meeting Lan Yunxi Once Again](#)

[Chapter 536: Love Affairs in Battle Field](#)

[Chapter 537: Cultivation in the Airship](#)

[Chapter 538: Family Members \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 539: The Best Wish](#)

[Chapter 540: The Fruit of Plunder](#)

[Chapter 541: Family Members \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 542: The Immortal Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 543: The Origin of Zhang](#)

[Chapter 544: Being Imprisoned](#)

[Chapter 545: Zhang's Osmanthus Tree](#)

[Chapter 546: Coming to Hidden Dragon Island Once Again](#)

[Chapter 547: Encountering an Old Friend](#)

[Chapter 548: My Castle](#)

[Chapter 549: One Night Dance](#)

[Chapter 550: Arrangements](#)

[Chapter 551: The Idiots](#)

[Chapter 552: A Disappeared Empire](#)

[Chapter 553: The Whip of a Fiery Flame](#)

[Chapter 554: The Preliminary Water-Proof Body](#)

[Chapter 555: Military Exploits Rankings](#)

[Chapter 556: Signing the Agreement](#)

[Chapter 557: The Final Preparation](#)

[Chapter 558: Flying Like an Eagle](#)

[Chapter 559: The Wing Demon Buster](#)

[Chapter 560: A Bloody Battle in the Air](#)

[Chapter 561: Selnes Eagle](#)

[Chapter 562: Explanation](#)

[Chapter 563: I am an Air Cavalry](#)

[Chapter 564: The Fruit of Source](#)

[Chapter 565: Great Honors](#)

[Chapter 566: A Sharp Contrast](#)

[Chapter 567: Breaking Sun Sutra](#)

[Chapter 568: The Secret of Surging Points](#)

[Chapter 569: Being Clear](#)

[Chapter 570: The Super Glider](#)

[Chapter 571: Free Flight](#)

[Chapter 572: Beat the Dog's Owner](#)

[Chapter 573: A Lonely Parade](#)

[Chapter 574: The Public Enemy of Mothers](#)

[Chapter 575: Demon Hunters Bar](#)

[Chapter 576: Trade in the Illegal Market](#)

[Chapter 577: Different Responses](#)

[Chapter 578: Who Pursued Whom?](#)

[Chapter 579: War and Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 580: Attack and Defense](#)

[Chapter 581: Dilemma and Hope](#)

[Chapter 582: Killing Intent in Illegal Demon Hunters Market](#)

[Chapter 583: Getting the Robust Ox Skill](#)

[Chapter 584: Planting Golden Seed Rune in the Shrine](#)

[Chapter 585: Misty Moon Woods](#)

[Chapter 586: Locking the Target](#)

[Chapter 587: The Reappearance of the Hell](#)

[Chapter 588: Demons' Scheme](#)

[Chapter 589: Asylum](#)

[Chapter 590: Exposed](#)

[Chapter 591: A Living Hell](#)

[Chapter 592: Endurance](#)

[Chapter 593: The Pledge](#)

[Chapter 594: Demonized Puppets' Camp](#)

[Chapter 595: Killing Cambo](#)

[Chapter 596: Animosity and Return](#)

[Chapter 597: Breaking Through the Bottleneck \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 598: Breaking Through the Bottleneck \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 599: Beating Training and Promotion](#)

[Chapter 600: A New Task](#)